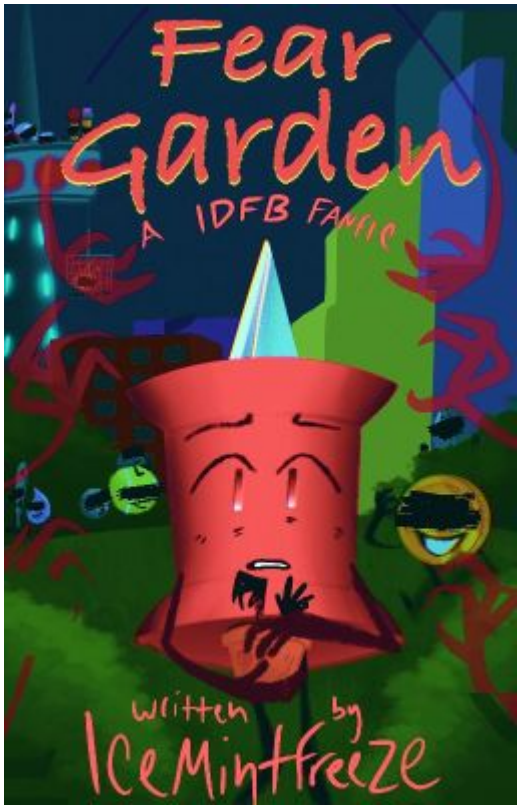
Fear
Garden
A IDFB FANFIC
written by
IceMintfreeze

The Dream

Late into the afternoon, leaves gently fluttered through the air.

Yoyle City. An abandoned place lingering with mystery and nostalgia. Yet, a few objects were vacant in the city, both eliminated (though, they were in the tiny loser chamber. feel pity.) and those who were still competing. They all wandered freely, exploring the city and the wonders behind it, or they stayed and did their daily chores, such as gardening of cleaning up their area of stay. They kept themselves busy each and every day that passed.

The Yoyle Needy stood high in the air, with a cage swaying gently from side to side, Firey sitting inside of it and screaming at the top of his lungs. A strange, yet clever punishment given to him by the Freesmarters.

Typical.

Everything was going as usual as it was, The Freesmarters strolling through the city and soon, heading towards the Yoyle Needy. Fries was occupied tending to his potato garden, while a few others hung around to keep him company. Coiny and Nickel chatted with Fries about the day, and the chilly temperatures it brought, while the scientist duo were fixing u the wall teleporter they brought from the museum. Everyone was busy with their day..

Except one. In the far outskirts of the city, was a luminescent garden overflowing with life and glowing with beauty. Ever since they all arrived there, she found the spot to be perfect for her garden. Years of hard work has brought her such a lively and stunning garden, though, that was not how she felt. The owner of the garden? Pin. She was pacing back and fourth, her arms and hands trembling and her breathing heavy and anxious. The garden used to produce such a soft and soothing feeling to Pin, that would usually help her calm down in moments like these. She wasn't someone who would

get scared easily, no-she was loud and proud. A true leader at heart. But still, leaders do fall apart at times, and need a moment to recollect themselves and fix up their mistakes. But Pin, was falling apart.

A few weeks back, a heathenish nightmare woke her from her peaceful slumber. She was standing in front of her garden, feeling strangely jubilant and powerful, such as a queen preparing for a celebration. The sky was as red as blood, with dark, gloomy clouds drifting slowly through the heavy air. In her hands, was a small, cracked pot, with dirt and a few small seeds inside. Also in the middle of these contents,

stood a hand.

A cold, lifeless hand, with drops of blood on the sides. Wrapped around the wrist was a small tag, which once had a name scribbled onto it, but was soon drenched in blood, with grains of dirt on the top.

Around the garden, there was a dark and heavy fog, though as Pin approached it, it vanished, revealing a garden of pure hands. Hands that have been removed from their owners. Lifeless fingers dangled downwards like a weeping willow's branches, as the bodies of the owners of the hands were placed in multiple areas of the garden. Small tombstones were placed next to the corpses, revealing their names and what their purpose in the garden is. Pin walked through the garden, reading all of the small tombstones.

Flower. Brings a bit of beauty to the garden.

Rocky. A stool.

Match. Helps let the plants grow upright instead of slouched.

She continued making her way through the garden, until she arrived to a small corner, with a hole buried into the dirt. The tombstone beside the open hole gleamed with the dark sunlight that hit it. There, it read the name.

Coiny.

-

Pin's eyes snapped open as she jolted upright from her bed, letting out a startled gasp. Her face was pale and flushed, beads of sweat dripping down her face. Her eyes were bloodshot, and soon they began to fill with tears. She breathed quickly as she looked around the small room.

Darkness stuffed the entire room, the only light coming from from the moon outside. The room was cool, as if the nightly autumn air was giving her a loose hug. The door stood slightly ajar, revealing the darkness of the hallway, where another door could be seen. The slow ticking of a clock was the only thing that broke the silence of the night. She gently got out of bed and left her bedroom, her hands still trembling and cold to the touch. She walked down the hall, and soon was standing in front of a orange colored door. She hesitantly wrapped her hand around the knob and turned it, opening the door gently. As it opened, she took a peek inside, to the object underneath the covers of his bed, letting out loud snores that echoed in the room. It was Coiny.

He was fast asleep, his arms wrapped around one of his pillows. A few wrappers from candy he found in the city lied around the room, as well as a few other pieces of 'treasure' he found. It was odd, seeing such a disheveled mess like this coming from him, but he'll clean it up soon.

Pin stood there for a moment, before slowly shutting the door and letting out a deep sigh of relief.

She trudged back to her bedroom, convincing herself that it was just a crazy dream, and that it wasn't real.

But why couldn't she fall asleep afterwards? Why did the same nightmare reoccur again two weeks later..?

The nightmare continued to rise repeatedly, and every day, it ate away inside Pin's mind. It got so bad, to the point where she couldn't even wake up. - She finally stopped pacing around the garden, as she plopped down on her knees on the soft bed of soil. She took a long breath, and looked around at her garden.

"Okay.." She mumbled. "Whatever.....that dream is, it isn't real. Its just a dream." She looked up. "Its just fake! It's not real. It won't....happen."

She hesitated towards the end of her sentence. Many questions still lingered in her mind. Why hands? Why the bodies? Why not...just. plants?

She sighed and stood up, as she began to walk back towards the city.

"I just hope that I can get sleep tonight.." She whispered under her breath.

Sleep Paralysis

The garden was glowing that night. Pin was standing in it, quietly watering her small succulents and small plants. It was calm, it was peaceful, it felt...nice.

She pulled out her trowel and began to dig into the earth, until her trowel hit something in the ground. She hit against the so called item and tried to dig around it, but nothing seemed to be working. After attempting to dig around it, she grabbed it and attempted to pull it out from the ground. It felt cold and soft, and her hands gripped around it as, with one wave of strength, pulled it clean out of the ground.

She sighed, and looked down to see what it was. ...

It was a **hand**.

Pin let out a shriek as she tossed the hand across the garden, her arms trembling. She looked around the garden and began to notice the corpses, all of them staring at her with their glossy, lifeless eyes. Pin felt her eyes sting with tears as she got up and began to run out of the garden. But as soon as she got into the entrance, she noticed someone, standing with something in their arms.

It was herself.

She was covered in blood and dirt, standing on what seemed to be, Rocky's corpse. She held a pot in her filthy hands, and her eyes were dark and luminance with pure evil.

Pin shook her head and began to run at her, but suddenly stopped in her tracks as the other Pin grabbed her arm and held it tight. Her wrist began to sting as she tried to free herself from this...*imposter*.

She began to call for help, looking around for anyone, just /anyone/

to help and free her. But everyone was dead. The other Pin clenched her hand harder and harder, grinning more and more as she saw Pin's struggles and cries for help.

After a few seconds, the other Pin began to dig her nails into Pin's wrist. She began screaming unpin, suddenly falling to her knees and still attempting to pull away from the grip. The other Pin was smiling, as she suddenly began to fade away into thin air, quietly.

Pin felt the grip subside as she fell down, holding her wrist and grunting in pain. She felts warm droplets of blood trickle down her arm, as she attempted to stop the bleeding.

But as she began to sit up, something grabbed her by the leg.

"WAKE UP!!"

.

Pin shot up, screaming in fear. As she could make out, others surrounded her, attempting to try and calm her down, with expressions of concern and worry painted all over their faces. This only brought Pin more panic as she raised her fist, ready to throw a few punches while she screamed with all of her might.

"GET AWAY FROM ME!"

Her fist flew down quickly with the force of adrenaline and anger, but was stopped by Fries, who grabbed her fist and put her arm down gently. He put a hand on her cheek and turned her to face him and Coiny, his expression stern and serious.

"Relax." He began, his voice stern and calm.

"It's just us."

Pin looked around slowly. Coiny, Needle, Golf Ball and Tennis Ball stood around her bed, all looking back at her. She let out a shaky

sigh before slouching a bit, rubbing her eyes.

"What..happened..?" she murmured sleepily.

Golf Ball jumped down from Tennis Ball's head, and walked beside her, opening a small notepad that was filled with scribbles and jots of notes. She looked down, took a quick glance of notes and looked back up.

"Well, everyone was occupied with their responsibilities before we heard Coiny running out of the building, yelling." She explained.

"He told us you weren't waking up at all, yet you were yelling and crying in your sleep. And in my calculations and my diagnosis, theres a 93% chance that you were in a state of sleep paralysis."

Pin rubbed her head in confusion, before someone took a hold of her hand and examined it.

"Woah, Pin..." Needle examined closely.

Her wrist was red and swollen, cuts visible with clotted blood on the edges. Finger marks were on the area where the hand had a death grip on her. Pin flinched as a wave of pain hit her from her wrist.

"Pin, did you do that?" Fries raised his eyebrow, crossing his arms. Pin shook her head no, concern and fear clearly shown on her face.

"What about you Coiny?" He looked down to the small penny beside the bed.

"Ugh, what?! Are you serious?!" He scoffed and turned his head. "I wouldn't do this! Especially to Pin!"

Fries groaned and rubbed his temples in annoyance, before looking down at Pin's wrist. Needle moved to the side and looked down at Coiny.

"I mean, you were grabbing her and shaking her like a rag doll to wake her up, so if anything she'd feel pain on her shoulders." Needle sarcastically replied.

"W-Well, were not talking about her shoulders right now, were focusing on her wrist Needy!-"

A slap echoed through the walls of the room, Needle looking down at Coiny, infuriated.

"Don't call me Needy!!" She jeered.

Coiny grunted in annoyance as he rubbed his glowing red cheek.
Pin got down and sat on the edge of the bed, letting out a half-hearted sigh.

"Guys, thanks for the help.." she assured.

"But I'm alright now, theres nothing to worry about."

Glances exchanged around the room, as Coiny walked up to her and laid a hand on her wrist. "Are you sure you're gonna be okay?" He mused. "Like GB said, you were screaming at one point, and then you began crying out of nowhere."

Pin opened her mouth to speak, but quickly paused as the memories of the nightmare poured back into her mind. "I..." She stammered. "It was just a dream. But i'll..be fine."

She hesitated at the last part before looking at Coiny, confidence soon filling her eyes. Coiny let out a warm smile as he put an arm around her and gave her a playful punch.

"Now that's the confident team captain I know." He chuckled.

Pin couldn't help but smile and relax on her friends shoulder. Sure, he could be an idiot at times, but god, he could change to a caring and sweet friend in a snap.

She let her eyes close as she sighed out, "It was just a dream."

They stayed that way for a moment, before Pin lifted her head up.

"So Pin," Tennis Ball shyly interrupted before looking down at the notepad. "You don't have to worry about this happening anymore. This happened once, and in my research, sleepy paralysis only

happens once! So you're all good to go!"

Pin smiled.

"Thanks TB." "Now that you're okay, and this is over, me and TB are gonna go to fix up the wall teleporter. We found out a way to let it transport at least four or less people out of the LOL!" She beamed with pride.

"Well, i'm gonna go continue working on the garden. Be sure to take it easy today Pin, and if you need anything, just tell us." He reminded.

A feeling of ecstasy filled Pin from head to toe as she stood up and nodded, a hand on her hip. She waved goodbye as everyone began to leave out of the room, leaving her and Coiny behind.

Coiny gave her a gentle pat on the back, as he chuckled.

"You're always treated like *royalty* Pin. Even if others are annoyed, they still, in a way, obey you." A smirk slowly spread across Pin's face, her eyes darkening a bit.

Boy, it was sure a wonderful feeling.

Being the *center* of attention.

Being treated like *royalty*.

Fight! FIGHT! Wait-

It's been a few days since the sleep paralysis incident. Yet, Pin was craving more and more to the feeling of admiration. Her bones were aching, she wanted so much attention. She wants to be a leader, of everything,

and everyone.

Moments came by every now and then when someone needed a leader, and, obviously, Pin couldn't turn down THAT offer. She'd step in and lead the day off, while she took in all of the admired whispers of her companions behind her. She fucking loved it, it filled her with so much pride, she literally shook.

Dominance was a very powerful feeling, and it should be felt with, responsibility.

Being cautious and self-control is key when it comes to dominance, otherwise, it becomes like a drug; you become extremely addicted to the point where you would do ANYTHING. To get the feeling back. And thats exactly what happened.

She was running out of ways to lead everyone, and because of that, it was driving her mad.

She needed to be a leader, she needed someone to cower below her.

Yes. COWER. She no longer wanted to be admired. She wanted to be admired and FEARED. But how? She walked around Yoyle City, in search for someone to just. Rule over. She continued to wander aimlessly before she heard a voice from the distance:

"I think after we find some berries, we should find a few blankets too Icy. I don't think Pencil is gonna let us sleep inside."

"Aww, really?" The voice sighed.

"I know Icy, but hey, maybe she'll let us stay inside soon! We just have to prove that we can be great alliance members!"

Book and Ice Cube. Pin swiftly went behind a small house before peeking down the sidewalk. She could see the two slowly walking this direction, chatting away.

"Besides yoyleberries, what else did they need?" Book looked down at her small friend. Ice Cube stopped walking before taking out a small piece of paper that was folded neatly. She unfolded it with small crinkles coming from the sheet, and quickly scanned through the list.

"Uhhh..we need berries, some pop, bread, chips, fruit, some rice, pasta, and...chicken!" Ice Cube looked up after reading off the items. Book gave her a kind smile.

"Alright then! We'll get them, and when were on the way back we can get our-"

"HI GIRLS!"

The two shrieked as Pin jumped out, a large grin plastered onto her face. Book relaxed as she let out a sigh.

"O-Oh, its just you...Hi Pin." She dusted herself off.

"Hey girls! Where are you two headed?" Her voice was bright and joyous, as she looked down at Ice Cube, who was sliding behind Book timidly.

"O-Oh, were just doing some errands. We're busy today, haha.." She grinned nervously. Pin nodded before looking down, only to see the sheet of paper in her hands.

"OOH! Whats this?" She snatched the paper away from her hands, as Ice Cube eye's widened.

"Hmm...Berries, Pop, Chips..." She read off with a unenthusiastic tone. She scanned through for a bit more before crumpling the paper into a

small ball and tossing it at Ice Cube's head.

The ball gently bonked against Ice Cube's eye as she let out a cry of pain. She kneeled down holding her eye as Book knelt down to her level and began to check her. "Ice Cube! Oh goodness.." She stood back up and glared at Pin. "What was THAT for?!"

Pin snickered and looked at Ice Cube, who looked up back at Pin. Tears were sliding down from her eye that was shut, while the other one was filled with pure fear.

"Aww, whats wrong Icey? Do you have a boo-boo? Do you want a kiss to make it feel better?" She laughed out. Ice Cube's body was shaking uncontrollably as Book stood in front of her, her arms crossed.

"Speaking in a mocking tone towards someone only proves that the person speaking in the tone is as petrified as the victim of the verbal insult." Book stated, her voice stern and clear. Pin raised her eyebrows in awe.

"Aw, how sweet. Well-Read is protecting little-miss crybaby.." She grinned. Book clenched her fist before stepping closer to Pin.

"Don't. Call me Well-Read." She growled.

"Oh shut your trap, you nerd." Pin let out a half-hearted laugh as she stepped closer, staring down at Book. She put a hand on her hip and smirked.

"Stop acting like little-miss-smarty pants will you? You aren't as well read as everyone thinks you are." Book's eyes widened as she resisted the urge to punch her clean on the face.

"Woah there, whats wrong missy? Can't put down someone who is as awesome and as dominant as me?"

"Well.." Book stated, her finger pointed in the air. "You're just a dramatic faker who's constantly on the search for being the center of attention 24/7. You're only acting this way because you're scared of something, and even if you think you're *such* a great and natural-born leader, you're just a weak coward. Even Pencil is a better leader then

you.." She looked down at her nails.

This was the spark. Pin's face was burning red with rage as she suddenly tackled Book to the ground. Book let out a shout before a painful wheeze escaped her lips, as Pin punched her hard in the center of her cover. Book swung her fist across Pin's cheek, jerking her head to the side. The two began to throw forceful and painful punches and kicks, screams and yells echoing through the street.

Meanwhile, Ice Cube dashed through the streets. She panted as she looked around with her one good eye, since her other eye was still blurred with tears.

She saw a few objects in the sidewalk as she screamed out,

"COMING THROUGH!" Within a second, yelps and cries filled the air as startled objects toppled over. Ice Cube yelled out an apology before running even faster than before. Within a few seconds, she found the clubhouse. She skidded to a halt at the door and began to bang hard on it.

"PENCIL! PENCIL! HELP ME, ITS ICE CUBE!" She yelled anxiously. A groan of pure annoyance came from inside.

"What could you possibly want, Ice Cube?" She grunted.

"BOOK IS HURT!" -

Pin threw down punches at an alarming speed, grunting vigorously as she looked down at Book. Ripped pages were scattered around them, while Book's cover was nearly torn clean off. Her left eye was swollen shut, as her cover was dented with holes from each and every punch. Blood trickled down Book's chin, as she laid still, hoping that Pin would stop soon. Pin's sides were darkened from the bruises that Book was responsible for. Her cheek was a deep purple from the swift blow Book gave her. Soon, footsteps were heard getting louder and louder very quickly, before a loud voice was heard.

"HEY, HEY, THATS ENOUGH, BREAK IT UP!"

Two pairs of hands clutched Pin by the shoulders and lifted her off of Book. Pin was still punching the air and struggling from the grips of these two to be free and finish off Book to teach her a lesson.

"DOES THAT FEEL GOOD?! HUH PUNK?! DID THAT TEACH YOU A LESSON?! OR DO YOU NEED MORE?!" Pin screamed out at the top of her lungs. Fries held her down as Coiny turned and faced Pin, his eyes widened in pure shock and fear.

"PIN, PIN STOP!" He yelled out. She took a glance behind him, her eyes bloodshot and furious. The alliance were huddled around Book, with Ruby cradling her in her arms. Book let out a soft cough before slowly sitting up, flinching hard from the waves of pain hitting her like a bus. Ruby clutched her close, tears pouring down her cheeks.

Pencil's face was painted with worry as she spoke with Book, asking her if she could hear them and if she could see. Bubble was consoling Ice Cube, while holding some sort of heating pad over her eye. Match sat next to Pencil, with a first aid kit and tending to Book's wounds. Pin's breathing was heavy and loud as she looked back at Coiny, only to realize that he was talking to someone else. Gelatin.

Pin looked at him, and saw something blue and shiny in his hand.

"Oh no..Oh no YOU DON'T YOU LITTLE SHIT!" Pin slammed herself backwards and slammed Fries against the gravel of the road, a loud crack and grunt of pain echoing through the air. She felt his arms release as she stood up and dashed her way towards the alliance, to finally finish this. Ruby looked up and shrieked as everyone turned and looked at Pin, who was dozing at them at full speed. The alliance flinched before they heard a slight chop, the sounds of twinkles, and then, silence. They slowly looked up, shaking in fear and holding their breaths. Pin stood there, anger still clear on her face, her arms reached out and ready to rip through their chests and cause pain. She was frozen.

"A little freeze juice a day, can make fights like these, go away." Gelatin tossed an injection of freeze juice in the air, before catching

it. Coiny shook his head and ran to Fries, who was on the ground withering in pain.

"My back...." He moaned out. Coiny slowly sat him up, before looking back at the alliance, with a somber look in his eyes.

"Alright..tonight were letting Book and Ice Cube sleep in the clubhouse." She mumbled, a hand on her head. Match clutched her arm.

"We should head back then Pence-Pence, and get everything ready for the two.." She looked down at the others, who were dreary and dazed about the whole situation that just hit them. Pencil nodded and stood up.

"Guys, lets go back to the clubhouse. Ruby, help Book walk back. Bubble, keep a close eye on Ice Cube's eye and make sure she doesn't have some sort of paper cut."

They all nodded as they sluggishly stood up, and plodded down the streets, Book mumbling in pain and Ruby rubbing her back. How weird it is, a situation as bad as this, bringing people closer together.

Coiny sighed and looked back at Pin's frozen body. He walked over to her and looked at her closely. "I..think you need a bit more rest buddy."

-

Pin sat on her bed, staring down at the floor. The affects of the freeze juice finally wore off an hour ago, and now, all she was doing was rethinking everything that happened. 'You were always a shitty leader.' 'You're just weak.' 'You're just scared of something, thats why you're acting this way.'

Voices echoed inside of Pins mind as she held her head. Tears stung at her eyes as memories of the nightmare began to return. She had to do something. She had to make this stop.

She just wanted to feel happy again, safe, knowing that none of it wasn't real and-

....

...

wait.

The only times I've ever felt happy were when i was a leader, Pin thought.

Pin shot up and snatched a paper and pen from her small desk. She began to write down what she saw in each and every nightmare.

It always starts the same way.

The garden.

Fog.

Holes in the ground.

Tombstones.

Corpses.

Hands.

Me..

She looked up, tapping her pencil on the small desk.

I'm repeatedly smiling in the dream, but i never really understood why..

Was it because of what I did?

Was it because..

Pin's eyes stretched wide as she began to scribble down more notes, before the door slowly creaked open.

"Hey.." A soft-spoken voice made Pin jump a bit before she flipped the sheet onto its blank side. She turned around, only to see Coiny with a subtle smile on his face. Pin sighed and looked down.

"Oh. Hey Coiny." She uttered, rubbing her arm. Coiny walked in and

sat himself on her bed, looking at her with a look of disappointment yet care in his eyes.

"How...are you feeling?" He questioned.

"I know you were pretty bruised up but, i managed to put a few ice packs on ya while you were out." Pin nodded, as she pointed to the ice packs on the side of her pillow.

"I took them off when I woke up, but thanks Coiny..." She put a hand on her bruised cheek.

"And besides the fact that I feel crappy about what I did, but at the same time i don't, I'm feeling okay." Coiny raised an eyebrow.

"You..did cause a lot of damage. From what I heard, Book has a black eye and a lot of black and blue. Even a few teeth of hers are missing, and her cover is in really bad shape." He sighed out.

"Ice Cube's eye has gotten better, though she did get a cut from...a paper? I don't know, but she was hurt but now she's doing okay."

"And Fries...?" Pin's voice cracked a bit, her eyes not moving from the ground. Coiny stayed quiet for a moment before clearing his throat.

"You...messed up his back..and he's in severe pain and we're trying to help. Crack it out? He can barely move.." Pin let out a grunt of concern before covering her face with her hands.

"I'm so stupid.." her voice came out muffled from her two hands. Coiny sighed and walked up next to her, rubbing her back in consonance.

"Hey, he's not gonna die or anything, its just some back pain."

"Its not that! Its the fact that I HURT people!" She hugged herself in fear. "Something's wrong, i can feel it, i don't feel right, i feel like somethings gonna happen. What if i die? What if you die? What if i get killed by someone? What if were being watched?! W-What if-"

"Woah, woah, take it easy Pin. Breathe.." Coiny looked at her and put

a hand on her shoulder, attempting to breathe slowly and steadily so Pin could follow his example. Pin slowly looked up, her breathing fast and shortened at first, but after a moment, her breathing was subtle and slow, and Coiny gave her a small smile.

"Listen, Pin. You're okay. You're here, you're alive, and look! Everything's normal. Everyone, besides a few others, are alright. We aren't being watched by anything or anyone, and we never were." He pat her back.

"I know..that you're still freaked out after that 'sleep' incident..but everything is okay now. There's nothing to be afraid of Pin.." He gently cupped his hand over hers, letting her head lay on his shoulder. He felt her soft breathing, as she began to doze off. He smiled and closed his eyes as well, rubbing her hand gently with his thumb.

"I promise."

.

Pin's eyes opened to the darkness of her bedroom. She rubbed her eyes and began to turn to her side, but froze as she felt someone behind her. She slowly laid down on her back before glancing to the left, her vision still adjusting to the darkness. Coiny laid beside her, snoring ever so softly. She couldn't help but smile, as she turned to her other side and faced the desk. Maybe he wouldn't notice.. She slowly crawled out of bed, and grabbed the paper and pen she was using earlier. She looked back at Coiny, before rereading her notes and continuing where she left off. Maybe this..wouldnt be bad.

I was a leader in the dream!

And the garden..was somehow..better.

It was glowing, it had so many forms of life..

She took a shaky sigh, before jotting down bullet points and writing

at the top of the paper.

Garden Plan.

She scratched a small summary beneath the paper title.

After a repeating dream I've been having, I'm going to try out a small way to make the garden more...alive. I mean, it was boring. Why not make it more-

The bed made a small creak as Pin stopped writing. She heard a small yawn and some shuffling. Coiny. She turned around and saw that his arms were slowly moving around the bed, looking for her. She smiled for a split second as she watched him, before setting the paper down. She got up and quietly walked over, placing a pillow in his reach, and saw how his arms wrapped around the pillow, as he snuggled it close and smiled. She made her way back and continued where she left off.

Why not make it a bit more exciting.

1. Apologize to everyone you've hurt. Make yourself look innocent, and regain your good reputation.

2. Keep track of where everyone is. Takes a few days, but jot down where the most popular area is where everyone meets. Then choose the most isolated.

3. Find someone. Someone who isn't well known, or liked. And bring them to the so called area.

4. Kill. Them.

5. Cut off their hands, and quickly take the hands and hide them someplace safe

6. Leave the body. Wait until the death is found out, and take it for future use.

7. Wait 3-4 days.

8. Repeat!

Pin sighed, her hands trembling violently.

She neatly folded the paper and stuck it into her drawer, before walking back to the bed and staring down at Coiny. She began to think.

Should..Coiny be apart of his plan..?

Should I spare him?

Or should I.. Kill him?

He would..make the garden look more wonderful-

Pin shook her head, as she quickly walked back and grabbed the paper. At the bottom, she wrote the following:

RULE 11: DO NOT HURT YOUR BEST FRIENDS.

1.Apologies

Pin strolled down the street, gazing around and then back to the ground in a apologetic manner.

Today was the day she would put her plan into action.

In her hands, were two pots. In one, was a small green succulent with a emerald on it. In the other, was a batch of blue flowers, with a small pearl on the bottom.

This, in her mind, was the best item to give when apologizing.

This was her plan.

Simply go apologize to Book and Ice Cube about the 'incident.'

Next, check up on Fries and see how he's keeping up.

After that, check where everyone is at what time and what hour.

An then, the plan truly reaches its max.

She has to find someone that's truly an outcast. Known well, but not known of their location.

Oh well, she'll figure that out later.

Right now, we take things one at a time.

Slow.

After a few minutes of wandering, she made it to the clubhouse where she slowly walked to the door, and knocked it three times. She could hear voices inside, before shuffling and footsteps that got gradually louder by the door. A tiny click was heard, before the door swung open. Pencil stood in the doorway, one hand around the door

while the other was on her hip. Her eyes had dark bags beneath them, revealing that she was dead beat. She looked around and then at Pin, before her glossy eyes filled with dissatisfaction and anger.

"Can I help you?" She snapped.

"Woah, Pencil, you...look like a mess." The words escaped Pin's lips before she slapped a hand over her mouth. Pencil snarled. "Well a certain someone nearly beat up an alliance member death, so I had to stay up night and day making sure to keep her stable and ALIVE." She shouted. Pin bit her lip and looked down.

She remembered the recovery centers, and how long they have been working for.

She remembered the day the usual whirring noise came to a stop,revealing it has broken down, and stopped working.

As a result from the glue as well.

How did the glue even get there?

She looked up. "Uh...Is Book and Ice Cube here?" She hesitated. She looked back up at Pencil, who had an eyebrow raised.

"Sorry, but I don't allow assholes in here."

Look who's talking.

Pencil began to shut the door, before Pin stuck her foot in to stop it from closing. Pencil let out a grunt before yanking the door open again.

"Seriously, what do you want?! I'm not letting you hurt-"

"I want to apologize, Pencil." Her voice was dull. Pencil looked at her, sudden confusion hitting her.

"Wh-"

"Listen. I need to apologize. What I did.." She glanced to the side. "What I did was messed up, and I just wanted to apologize to

Book. If...she's okay."

Pencil let out a small chuckle.

"Really?" She questioned. Pin gave her a stern look before she sighed.

"Fine. And yes. She's available, she's in a better condition than she was yesterday." She let the door drift open, before Pin walked inside. The floor had dull, multicolored tiles. As well as the walls.. She smiled a bit.

Pencil walked into a room, where Ice Cube, Book, and Ruby sat on a small sofa, watching television. Ice Cube was holding a pack of ice (wow) to her eye, leaning against the couch sleepily. Book had multiple bandages wrapped around her, a few of them already had foggy spots of red. She held an ice pack to one of her eyes, while the other was on her cheek as she watched the television in a slothful manner. Ruby sat beside her, an arm around her friend in a way to console her friend. In general, they all looked exhausted. Pencil cleared her throat which received all of their eyes on her.

"Book, Ice Cube. Someone wants to pay you a visit." Their eyes were filled with confusion, until Pin slowly stepped beside Pencil. Ice Cube's eye widened in horror, as Book's eyes darkened in annoyance. Ruby shot up and put her arms around the two, protectively.

"WHATS *SHE* DOING HERE?!" Ruby exclaimed angrily, breaking the tense silence between the three of them. Pin sighed and looked at the two.

"I just wanted to apologize." Ruby slowly put her arms down as she looked at her closely. Pin looked at her, confused and a bit bothered by the small gemstone.

"Are you SURE? You're not gonna hurt them, like, are you?" She raised an eyebrow angrily. Pin backed up a tiny bit before frowning.

"Ruby, just like, stop this nonsense! Just let her apologize!" Match's

voice echoed from the kitchen. She must've been so loud, that the entire clubhouse could hear her.

Though how strange. Match actually having a good response, letting her apologize to the two without a guilt trip of some sort. Ruby stuttered, before letting out a sigh and glaring back at Pin.

"Hurt them, and you'll regret it."

Oh please, she couldn't even throw a punch without crying from the impact.

She nodded slowly as Ruby stomped out of the room, leaving Book, Pin and Ice Cube in the very. heavy silence.

"What do you want." Book's raspy voice felt like a hard punch in the gut to Pin. She gulped and looked at her.

"L-Listen.." she stuttered.

"I...I really have to apologize about yesterday, I really do...I didn't mean for things to escalate like that."

"Then why did you throw that paper to Icey?!" She snapped.

Pin cringed and rubbed her still swollen wrist.

"I-I swear, I didn't mean to throw that hard.."

Her voice began to shake.

"I didn't want you to get hurt. I didn't mean to hurt both of you. My emotions got the best of me, and..."

She sighed out shakily.

At first, Book's face was stern and serious, but out of nowhere, Book's face softened as she looked at Ice Cube, who was looking at her with concern. She turned back to Pin.

"Hey..." she mumbled.

"It's...okay. I know you. Really aren't the type to start a fight...well,

unless something goes way over the wrong, but I do understand that your emotions took over." She let out a soft chuckle.

"To be honest, I let mine get the best of me too."

Are you fucking kidding me.

Pin looked up at them, and let a small smile grow across her cheeks. Book smiled back, the same, warm smile that she gave Ice Cube before the entire incident happened.

"So...you forgive me?"

"Yes. Yes I do."

Pin smiled wide.

"Perfect! Because not only did I come to give an apology, I came to give you gifts!"

She held out the two plants, which brightened their faces.

"Wow! A emerald gemstone with a small succulent! Thank you Pin!" She held the pot in her hands, admiring the small gemstone.

"I got a pearl!!" Ice Cube exclaimed, her eyes twinkling with excitement. Pin smiled and rubbed her wrist.

"I grew those plants in my garden...I thought you guys would like them."

"Oh we do like them! Don't we Icy?" Book looked at her small friend, who nodded vigorously.

Pin nodded.

"I'm glad you both like them."

-

Time passed, before Pin decided it was time to leave. She felt as if the team forgave her for the small mishap that took place.

The alliance even hung out with Pin before she left!

It was nice.

Now it was time to give an apology to Fries. She didn't know how he was doing, until she began to hear quite a ruckus from the small potato garden a certain someone owned. Pin raised an eyebrow and curiously wandered to said garden, eavesdropping to the current event that was taking place.

"Fries! Seriously you have to at least take a break!"

"NO, you people need to leave me ALONE. These potatoes need to grow NOW, and-"

Suddenly, a soft crack was heard, followed by a grunt of pain.

"FRIES!" They screamed.

Pin made her way around a few buildings, and quietly peeked over to the garden to reveal Fries being helped up by Gelatin. His eyes were filled with silent agony and overflowing pain as his body seemed shook and limp. He winced again and shook Gelatin's arms off of him, before dusting himself off.

"Okay Fries, thats enough. You really have to rest." Gelatin mumbled nervously, looking up at him. He gave him a death glare for a moment, but only for a moment, before sighing and trudging inside.

As he did so, Pin walked up to Gelatin, her eyebrow raised in concern.

"Um, what was that about?" She questioned, innocently. Gelatin looked up at her, and his eyes filled with suspicion as he slowly gripped the freeze juice that de picked up off of the ground.

"Well, if you don't REMEMBER what you did.." Gelatin gritted his teeth. "Fries's back is really messed up. We can't really crack it to make it feel any better, and we feel like the pain is getting more worse.." Pin looked over to the small house Fries plodded into, and looked down at the garden.

"I think I can help." She suggested, shrugging her arms. Gelatin let out a loud snort, before bursting into uncontrollable laughter.

"YOU?! HELPING HIM?! THATS THE BEST JOKE I'VE HEARD ALL DAY!" He wiped a stray tear falling down his cheek.

Oh. Just wait you poor poor excuse of a 'dessert'.

Just wait in a few days.

We'll see who's laughing then.

Pin smacked him upside the head, before he whined and looked up at her.

"Given the right opportunity, I would've freeze you, you jerk." He raised up the freeze juice, and brandished the juice in Pin's face. She noticed how the liquid sparkled and glowed from the sun's reflection. She sighed.

"Just stay out here. I'm gonna help, whether you like it or not." And with that, she stomped away, leaving Gelatin,

And the freeze juice, behind. -

Fries's legs trembled as he slowly let himself sit down in a chair.

This. Was awful.

Sure, the pain bothered him, but at a subtle manner.

It wasn't bad. But now, after the situation with Pin..it was really messed up.

He sighed and let his eyes close, slowly drifting off.

"Fries?" Great. His eyes opened to see Pin standing by the doorway, concern all over her face. His eyes changed to a somber expression as he looked straight at her.

"Yes, Pin?" He mumbled. He sounded tired. Pin walked in and stood

next to him, looking down.

"Um, how are you feeling? She questioned. Fries brightened up.

"Oh, I've been feeling wonderful! Its not like my back is bothering me at all!" He mocked. Pin looked down, hurt from his witty remark. He looked up at her and sighed.

"No. I'm not okay. My back has been killing me all day.."

"And thats why I came here." Fries looked at her, his eyes filled with confusion.

"What?"

"Fries, I came to apologize." Pin rubbed her wrist. "Um...I didn't mean to hurt you. At all. When I saw Gelatin with the freeze juice, I didn't know how to react. I was feeling...Angry. And I just wanted to get it over with." She sighed.

"Yes, I know what I did was messed up. But...."

Fries raised an eyebrow.

"But?"

"But I still don't know how to feel. I was in the wrong, I know..but..." She began to mumble.

"Pin, you're mumbling again."

She looked up, her eyes glossy and out of it.

"Oh...sorry Fries."

He looked at her for a moment, before slowly getting up, and putting a hand on her shoulder and squeezing it gently.

"Alright, now listen to me. You were in the wrong. I'm sorry, but its the truth. But that still doesn't mean that you can't be forgiven." He smiled. Pin looked up, smiling sadly. She really didn't have nothing to say. Sure, Fries could be a down-sided jerk sometimes, but he still

had his soft sides. She smiled and embraced him into a small hug, her arms wrapped around her back.

"Good, 'cause I also wanted to do this."

Fries's eyes widened.

"Wait a second, what-"

He was soon cut off, as Pin hugged him tightly, to the point where a loud crunch-like noise filled the room. Fries winced and grunted from the pain, before his eyes slowly began to ope, the pain subsiding. He stood up, and his eyes filled with shock and perplexity.

"All done!" Pin grinned. Fries began to walk around, and he was soon hit with a feeling of relief as he realized that the back pain was now non-existent. He turned to Pin and chuckled.

"Thanks Pin."

-

Days went by, as Pin sat on top of a building, holding binoculars in one hand and a small notepad in the other.

This was the beginning of step 2:

Keep track of where everyone is. Takes a few days, but jot down where the most popular area is where everyone meets. Then choose the most isolated.

She's been watching carefully at everyone n the city. And, she already had a handful of notes and areas she had to avoid at specific times.

Gelatin is definitely a wanderer. He walks around the city in the morning for an hour, before going over to Fries's garden, where he chatted with him for a few hours before going with him into his house. He also likes to go over by the Goiky Canal and play around in the sand during evening hours. He sure did act like a child at times.

Needle always stood by the science museum, usually in the morning.

During late-afternoon into evening hours, she'd leave and go hang out with Coiny, as they both would go to Fries's garden and talk about their day.

Golf Ball and Tennis Ball were surely wanderers as well. They head to the museum in the morning, and afterwards, they go over to the Yoyle Needy and collect their data and research. They would then proceed the woods, where they would check the wall teleportation device and see if its reached its maximum battery charge. Then, they'd find Coiny and they'd take a walk around the city, telling him about the data they've collected.

Woody wasn't really a wanderer. But he likes to go to the Goiky Canal during morning hours, and hang wander by the garden to see what the others were up to.

Rocky? He likes to hang around TB and GB. The usual.

Coiny? He likes to hang around the others. He goes over to Needle to chat a bit in the morning before he explores the city, looking for small treasures he could find. He'd then walk around with TB and GB, and then he'd hang out with Needle and Fries at his garden.

And the Freesmarters? Extreme wanderers. They stay in the clubhouse for a half hour, before leaving and heading over to the Yoyle Needy. They like to go back and fourth, the same place always being the Yoyle Needy. They'd go to the Canal, and back to the tower. They'd go to the Super Van, and go back to the tower.

They'd sometimes go into the museum, and go back to the tower.

What did they do so much over there?

Ah, well, who cares.

She looked down at her notes and sighed. She finally had enough data and information to start her plan.

But now, the question is:

Who's first?

Definitely not Coiny nor Fries.

Off-limits.

GB? No. TB would find out, and he'd probably start an investigation or. Something.

Rocky? Not yet.

Woody? No.

She sighed as she looked at the tower. This was going to be a bit-

Wait.

She looked at the tower closely, before seeing a small, rectangular shape slowly dangling from the side of the tower.

It took her a moment to realize, until she suddenly knew.

Her eyes darkened as she smirked.

She now knew who was next.

(ACK SORRY IF THIS IS LATE BUT!!!! I'm glad you guys are enjoying the story!! <333)

-Ice

When Push Comes to Shove

Icy winds danced slowly through the autumn night in the city. It was late, as everyone in the city was in their usual slumber.

As always.

Sleeping without a care.

They all didn't think of Yoyle City much. They did know that it was old and abandoned, but none of them took it THAT seriously.

Well...except Book. Obviously, she was spooked by the old, musty city. But thankfully, she got used to it.

Pin laid wide-awake in her small bedroom. She was staring at the ceiling, her heart beating at a rapid pace. Each beat hit her heard as the small vibration echoed to her head.

It was finally time for step 4.

Kill someone.

Pin's anxiety spiked to the max that morning. She had everything ready, but now she had to wait.

The waiting game is very, very harsh. Waiting for something like this, was similar waiting for someones first experience on a rollercoaster. It looks absolutely petrifying, but that little voice in the back of your head keeps whispering for you to go on.

Go on.

Get on.

Its gonna be fun.

Thats exactly what was going on in Pin's mind. Towards the morning, she tried to soothe herself by taking a small walk around the city before heading to her garden. Yet, she just couldn't stop shaking, and her face couldn't regain her normal shade of red. She received a few glances and stares, and was even stopped by Fries.

He was busy digging up a few more seeds before he saw Pin, her arms making small twitches and her body visibly trembling, and then going still, as if she were an on-and-off switch.

He hesitated before calling out her name, putting the trowel down. It definitely caught her off guard. She jumped and gasped sharply, before her tensity faded away as she realized it was just Fries.

"Pin? Are you okay?" His voice filled Pin with a odd sense comfort, as she sighed.

"I-Im fine!" She stuttered out, fiddling with her fingers. Fries raised an eyebrow.

"You're acting anxious again. You sure you're okay?"

Pin hesitated, before nodding quickly and slowly backing away.

"I-I'm okay, though I have to go..."

And with that, she quickly made her way down the street, leaving Fries confused, suspicious and especially concerned.

She also unexpectedly ran into Coiny, which startled her even more. She actually began to tear up from all of the anxiety building up in her.

"Woah, Pin.." he quickly held her hand and gave it a small squeeze.

"What's going on? Are you okay?"

Pin quickly wiped her eyes and nodded, suddenly feeling faint and weak.

"I-I'm...I'm fine.." she gasped out.

Coiny shook his head and put an arm around her and began to lead her back to her home.

"You aren't okay Pin, you need to calm down. Cmon.."

Pin didn't fight back. Instead, she let out a soft moan in reply as she trudged by his side, trying her best not to collapse.

After arriving to her home, Coiny helped her settle in and get comfortable. He even made her some tea to help calm down.

He was too kind.

The two spent the afternoon together, Pin venting about her anxiety and how it couldn't leave her alone, and Coiny helping her calm down and let her know that she could beat this. He told her a few light jokes and gave her some tips on how she can defeat this anxiety she had. He also told her a few stories about his day to get her mind off things.

Coiny explained how he took a trip to the TLC at one point, and saw how the lock for the LOL is getting rusty and deteriorated.

Interesting. She had to keep that in mind.

Time quickly flew by, and soon the sun was already setting over the horizon. Coiny looked out the window and sighed.

It was time to head back.

Coiny gave her a goodbye hug, and reassured her once more that she was going to be alright. He told her that he'd come by in the morning to see how she was doing, and they could even hang out for the day.

Pin smiled.

After the moment of farewells, Coiny left, leaving Pin in her small house, feeling relaxed and safe.

But now it was over.

She looked at her side to the clock on her nightstand.

3:00 AM.

She took a slow breath as she sat up, and quietly sneaked out of her room. She held her written map and plan in her hand and clenched it tightly, a slight crinkling sound coming back from the clench.

She left her door slightly open, as she creeped down the hallway, careful of the floorboards that could potentially make noise. She passed the room where Coiny would stay at if he wanted to sleepover, in which she knew he wasn't there today.

She stopped as she entered the kitchen, and looked around. She could see a blade shining on the counter from the moonlight, bouncing off of the reflection.

Should she even bring a weapon?

He is. At a high distance off ground, she could just simply shove him off.

What was she even saying? That was the plan anyway.

In this murder, and possibly the next few, she wanted to make these deaths look accidental. If she didn't, it would cause a panic. And a panic? Leads to everyone staying inside. And that would make it twice as difficult if she wanted this plan to pass by easily.

She sighed and walked outside, the cold air suddenly hitting her hard. It was a bit windy.. So she had to get this over with quickly. Otherwise, she could be harmed in this process as well.

As she walked down the quiet, empty streets, her arms began to tremble and shake.

Oh dear god, please, not now, anytime but now.

She walked even faster before the thoughts could race through her mind, and before she even knew it, she saw the Yoyle Needy a few miles away.

And in the air? A cage, swaying back and fourth in the high altitude of the tower.

She quietly entered the small doorway into the tower, and slowly began to climb the steps to the top. Her body began to tremble, as her breathing began to go quickly.

This was it. All she had to do was push.

It shouldn't be that hard..right?

She walked faster.

Firey was kind of a jerk as well. He deserved it more than anything. Coiny's enemy. Former winner of BFDI.

Leafy's best friend.

Pin gripped her hand on the bar of the stairwell as she climbed faster, lost in her thoughts.

Leafy and Firey were so close, she could remember how she saw Firey helping Leafy out during their challenges, and hoe they would always be there for each other if one of them was ever in need of assistance.

She remembered when Firey swooped Leafy away from nearly being crushed, and the two flying off into the sunset, Firey holding Leafy as close to him as possible.

And then, she remembered the chase.

Leafy running away.

Everyone running after her, angrily.

Her disappearing into who-knows-where.

And then, silence. No one dared mention Leafy's name, especially when Evil Leafy was still on the loose.

And then bfdia came along, when Leafy returned. Yet Pin didn't care about her. She stuck to her word, saying that Leafy was evil, and that she would never be forgiven by anyone.

Leafy hasn't been seen ever since BFDIA.

She could be anywhere.

Thats when Pin stopped in a cold sweat, quickly looking around frantically.

She's still out there.

She could be following me.

What if she's on the roof?

She began to step backwards, but her eyes widened as she lost her balance. She quickly grabbed a hold of the handle bar and pulled herself back up, shaking.

She gulped.

She looked down, and felt her heart sink.

It was a bobby pin.

But no one had hair?

Unless they collect certain items to use...

She picked it up and looked around once more, anxiety peaking at its worse.

She had to hurry.

She hesitated, before slowly climbing the stairs once again. She could begin to make out the beam of moonlight from the door that was the top of the building.

This was it.

After a few more steps, she finally made it to the top. Thoughts were screaming and jumbling around in her mind as she felt tears prick at her eyes.

Do it.

He's dead meat anyways.

He doesn't matter.

This will make you feel better.

She felt a tear slide down her cheek as she looked down at her wrist.

It was glowing red.

She jumped, and shook her head and faced the doorway nervously.

She clenched her hands tightly and slowly walked out onto the roof, her eyes bloodshot with fear.

- - - - - - - - - - - - -- -- - -

Firey snored, his arm dangling out of one of the small cube-like hole in the cage. His voice was slowly fading away, as him screaming from sunrise to sunset has really took a toll on it.

He HATED heights. He was petrified of them.

Yet here he was, all tuckered out from a fright-filled day of dangling high up in the air.

A small puddle of drool slowly began to slip out of his mouth as he shifted a bit, and soon it trickled down his chin. He awoke and let out a yelp of pain.

"OW!"

He sat up, and rubbed his chin, dazed and confused. His eyes hung heavy with exhaustion as he knew this was just because of him drooling.

Oh well.

It happens.

He looked across the cage, and suddenly his eyes widened in shock.

There, off on the top of the tower, was a silhouette.

Of..

Wait..

Was that..?

"Pencil? Ruby? Is that you?" He called out, but soon flinched in pain. His throat was throbbing and hoarse, he knew that it would soon give out.

He heard a scoff.

"Seriously Firey? No! Its me, Pin! Im helping you out of here."

"YOU ARE?!" He quickly jumped up but squealed in fear as the cage suddenly swung from a gust of wind. He grabbed onto one of the bars and held on tight.

"W-Well if you are, please hurry, I feel like this cage i-is going to snap and collapse at any second!" His voice quivered with fear.

Pin rolled her eyes and looked over at the string.

The strong was thick and sturdy, yet she could see that the middle of it was slowly getting thinner, with a few strands sticking out.

Shit.

*I could, just let him fall and cut the string..*She thought to herself.

She looked closely at the structure, and shook her head.

No. It wouldn't work. He would get many broken bones and injuries from the fall, but nope. Not death.

Well....

She didn't know.

She got near the edge and looked down. Her eyes widened as she tiled downwards a bit and gripped the handlebars tightly.

No wonder he kept on screaming. It really WAS a huge drop.

She gulped as she took a few steps back, and suddenly sprinted towards the cage. She shut her eyes as she leaped over the handle bars, and gasped from the blast of air that hit her.

She felt the air as cold as knives, hitting her hard before her body collapsed onto the cage. She quickly tightened the bars and hugged herself as close to the cage as she could, as she felt it violently swinging from side to side. Meanwhile, Firey was tumbling around, letting out a shriek of fear every now and then.

After what seemed to be a very long time, the cage finally settled and Pin slowly loosened her grip around the bars. She stood up, but soon flinched in pain.

It came from her side.

She looked down and gently touched it, and winced.

She could feel a growing lump, from the impact on her side with the-

Cage..?

She looked down and smiled.

It was the cage door!

Yet, it was locked....

She smirked, and chuckled softly.

Freesmarters. They really were smart.

Pin grabbed the small bobby pin she found, and inserted it into the lock. She began to fumble around with it, as she looked up to check the rope.

It was even thinner than before.

She panicked, and quickly fumbled more before the lock finally gave in and unlocked.(haha)

She threw the lock down and opened the gate, and reached down.

"Okay Firey, give me your hand!" She exclaimed.

Firey didn't hesitate as he grabbed her arm tightly, quivering. She grunted as she slowly pulled him out of those four, secluded walls (bars?), and threw him beside her. She took a moment to breathe, before she stood up and reached down to help him up.

He smiled.

"Oh my oxygen, Pin, thank you so much for getting me out of there!" He grinned with relief.

Pin began to shake, as she stepped closer.

"Y-..You're welcome.."

Firey soon caught onto her shaking, and his expression changed into concern very quickly.

"Pin? Whats wrong?"

DO IT.

"Are you okay?"

DO IT NOW!

"Is something bothering you?"

N O W!

She screamed in fury before grabbing Firey by the shoulders and shoved him backwards. He screamed as he stumbled back, but quickly resisted and began to struggle back. Pin nearly stumbled backwards as her eyes widened.

He was strong. More so than she thought.

She pushed him harder as she grunted painfully, for he was gripping her shoulder too hard. She felt tears streaming down her eyes as Firey was pushing her even harder.

What was I thinking..

This is it..

More thoughts of regret poured into her head as she shook more. She was dangerously close to the edge of the cage, and one more shove would have her falling down to her death.

To the ground.

Wait.

The dream filled her mind.

The red.

The plants.

Hands.

Hands.

Power.

A ruler...

Push him off.

Her eyes snapped open, her pupils glowing red. She stared directly into Firey's eyes, and this seemed to startle him. He quickly let go and yelled out in fear.

NOW.

With the remaining strength she had left, she screamed angrily and shot herself towards Firey, shoving him right over the edge. Pin fell down and hugged the cage tightly, as she heard Firey scream.

She opened her eyes and watched him shrink down, his loud and bone-chilling scream slowly getting softer, and softer..

Until..

CRUNCH.

The sound of flesh tearing and bones cracking filled the air as the scream was silenced.

Firey, was now gone.

Pin panted heavily as she quickly jumped back to the top of the Yoyle Needy. Once safely there, she collapsed onto her knees as she looked down at her hands.

You better run.

The hands that shoved Firey off.

They're going to find you.

She felt more tears pouring down her cheeks.

Quickly.

She slowly got back up, and quickly stumbled down the stairs trying to escape the scene as fast as possible. They seemed so much longer than before...

She made it to the doorway.

Run.

She quickly dashed out as she ran around the corners and on the streets. Her speed increased when she saw the sun rising over the horizon, and she stared at it.

She was so distracted that she tripped and fell over something..

Her face slammed on the ground as she did a few barrel rolls, and felt her back slam against a cement wall. She let out a soft grunt of pain

before opening her eyes to see what made her fall.

She wished that she didnt.

There, on the ground, was Firey.

His eyes lifelessly widened, tears of blood pouring down his cheeks. His left arm was crooked at a painful angle, part of the bone sticking out of his shoulder. His right arm was bent all the way behind his back. His legs twisted at an ungodly angle, and the puddle of blood was slowly getting bigger.

She felt her body go ice cold as her eyes suddenly overflowed with tears, as she was soon disconnected with reality.

She saw everything slowly dim to a shade of red. Roots began to grow all over Firey's corpse, as his hands were sliced clean off and protruding out of the earth.

Pin hyperventilated, her breathing getting heavier and heavier, to the point where she didn't notice that Freesmart was headed this way.

She trembled harder, as she quickly yet sneakily got up and made a mad, final dash to her house. She quickly got in and ran all the way into her room, slamming the door and soon collapsing onto the ground, hugging her knees close to her body.

She let out a blood-curling scream, as she also heard multiple, high pitched screams of fear echo from outside.

Hey guys!!! Sorry its been so long, school has really taken a toll on time and I haven't been able to write much. But here, i had extra time today and i bring you the next part to the story! Hope u guys enjoy!

~Ice

Peaceful Slumber

The sound of vomiting echoed through the air.

The alliance were standing far far away from the scene, with Match on her knees, letting out everything she had eaten earlier. Her face was dangerously pale as she heaved harder, and more liquids came pouring out.

Pencil rubbed her back sympathetically, her entire body shaking in concern. She squeezed Match's shoulder as she mumbled words of comfort to her. Bubble, Ice Cube, Book and Ruby sat behind Pencil, all of them huddled close and shaking on fear, staring at the ground. Ruby had her hands over her head, wanting the sound of vomiting to perish and go away. Book put an arm around her sympathetically, her eyes closed with tears slipping down every now and then.

Meanwhile, the corpse has been covered up with a white sheet. Nearly everyone was outside. Fries, Gelatin, TB and GB..you name it. The science duo were taking notes and walking around, as well as looking up at the cage that was dangling high up in the air. Fries was standing by, his arms crossed and staring t the corpse with a expressionless gaze. He..didn't know how to feel. He never really knew Firey.

But, he didn't deserve to die in such a way.

Gelatin was sitting on the ground, his head buried in his knees. He didn't feel well, he cant handle gore-y scenes like this. He didn't know, he just saw everyone huddled around, and then he saw Firey. He let out a sigh.

Flower was oddly quiet. She complained about the scream and not getting her 'beauty sleep', but as soon as she saw Firey, her mouth shut. Some say she was secretly crying because even she knew that that was the most awful way to go. Which was surprising; she barely

showed any sympathy towards anyone at all.

Meanwhile, a small exhale came from the small scientist as she sat down. This was confusing and very overwhelming; she KNEW that that stupid cage was locked well, she heard and saw the alliance lock it up!

How did he do it?

As she scribbled down more notes into her small notepad, she suddenly looked up as she heard footsteps approach the scene.

Of everyone there, he was the last person to arrive.

Coiny.

He looked tired, yet beneath his darkened eyes was a gleam of curiosity. He didn't know why everyone was standing around, it was FAR too early for everyone to be up at this hour.

Golf Ball sprung up, her senses tingling as she began to walk around him, looking up and down.

"Coiny? Where have you been?" She questioned, raising an eyebrow in suspicion. She had a feeling that if anyone did this, HE would be the one to blame.

He placed a hand on her forehead and slowly pushed her back, rolling his eyes.

"Geez Golfball, its only 6 in the morning, can't you give me a break?" He mumbled, exhaustingly. Golf Ball scoffed angrily, and as payback, she bit his hand. He quickly yelped and yanked his hand backwards, now clearly awaked and alarmed. He held his throbbing hand as he looked up at Golf Ball, infuriated.

"What was THAT for?!" He yelled. Golf Ball dusted herself off before looking up at him, angrily.

"You deserved it."

"DESERVED WHAT?! WHAT DID I DO?!"

"You know what you did."

Coiny looked at her, rage filling him from head to toe.

"Alright, bossy-bot, what could I have possibly done for you to-"

"Murder!" She yelled out, pointing directly at him.

"You're the murderer!"

His eyes suddenly widened as he stumbled back in surprise and shock.

"Golf Ball, what the fuck? What do you-"

"OBVIOUSLY, it was YOU who did it! You WERE his arch nemesis after all, and what could a notorious person do when their arch nemesis is trapped in a unstable cage thats dangling high up in the air? I'll tell you." She pointed towards the corpse.

"THATS..what they do." Her voice began to soften towards the end of her sentence.

Coiny's eyes moved to the corpse as he slowly began to walk towards it.

"Uhh.....who..exactly are you..talking about..?" His voice sounded blank. Golf Ball followed him close behind, her eyes staring down at the floor.

"Firey. He was found by the alliance at exactly 5:47 this morning." She looked up at him.

"He was in a...terrible condition."

As soon as he was mentioned, Coiny stopped in his tracks. He couldn't move...he couldn't speak..he couldn't feel.

Others thought that he would've been jubilant at the sight of his death, but..

Tears were now escaping his eyes and rolling down from his cheeks.

He stared at the blank sheet which was now getting stains of a dark orange, debating whether he should even touch it. Golf Ball looked at him and walked towards the corpse, and without thinking, she uncovered the body. She looked up towards him for any reaction.

That was it.

He collapsed on the floor, his face pale and painted with horror as he shook and began to mumble. He was in shock.

Golf Ball quickly covered up the body and ran back to him, grabbing him by the shoulders.

"COINY. SNAP OUT OF IT!" She yelled angrily.

He didn't respond. Instead, he began to mumble even more as he grabbed his head and brung it into his knees. Waterfalls of tears fell from his eyes as he wailed out every now and then. She sighed angrily and soon, she slapped him hard across the face. He jolted as his hand shot up to his glowing-red cheek, as he looked at her.

"Guess you aren't the killer, huh."

He shook his head, gulping.

"Hm. Well if there isn't any proof, then it just must have been an accident. We have to figure this out." She looked over at Tennis Ball.

"TB! IS EVERYONE HERE?!" She yelled out, alarming the rest of the group. Tennis Ball looked around and looked back down at a small list, and then looked up.

"We're missing Pin!"

Pin gripped the covers beneath her. Ever since she got home, she quickly cleaned herself up and in a anxious mess, she ran and

collapsed into bed, where she let her mind process everything that had just happened earlier. She couldn't sleep; her eyes had dark circles around them, as the memory of his face appeared behind her glossy eyes.

Firey's face.

How the blood was pouring out of his eyes and mouth such as a faucet pouring out water.

How his bone protruded out of his body that way.

The sound...of his body and bones breaking as his impact with the ground happened.

She shivered as more tears began to sting in her eyes. She rolled onto her side and let her eyes close, hoping that this could finally let her go to sleep.

...

Knock knock.

Her eyes slowly dragged open as she laid still, listening carefully once again.

Knock knock knock.

She sighed angrily and dragged herself out of bed, wrapping herself in her blanket she dragged along with her. She plodded towards the door and stood in front of it.

"Who is it." She mumbled.

"Its Tennis Ball. We need you." His voice was sharp and stern, very unlikely of him to be in such a way. He's usually just an anxious wreck.

She unlocked the door and swung it open, and flinched at the bright beam of sunlight that burnt in her eyes. She hissed and rubbed her eyes gently, before she heard a gasp.

"Dang Pin, you look like a total train wreck. Didn't you sleep at all?" Tennis Ball's voice filled with both concern and suspicion.

She had to make up an act.

Quickly.

In the most exhausted and painful voice she could make out, she whimpered out,

"No."

Tennis Ball sighed.

"Well, we need you over here. Firey was found dead this morning and we need help on figuring out what happened."

She grunted.

"Didn't he just fall off the cage because-"

Her eyes widened as she quickly tightened her lips.

"I'm sorry- he what?" Tennis Ball sounded very suspicious.

Shit.

"I-I, uh....I..." She stuttered out in fear. She gave it away. Tennis Ball turned around.

"Lets go Pin. Maybe you can help us figure out what happened and *who* was responsible for this." He turned around and began walking back.

She began to back away, but she stopped.

Running away will just make you look even more guilty. Face it up and act. You started this, you created this, now you have to end it properly if you want to continue. Simply lie and act; the golden rule of YOUR'E plan Pin.

She shivered, as she began to follow Tennis Ball. Her hand gripped at the blanket that was around her as she could feel her body beginning

to tremble.

The anxiety suddenly reached its peak, as she could see the crowd of people overhead.

Tennis Ball quickly walked over to Golf Ball and began to talk with her as he began to talk, and Pin decided to walk around and see how everyone was working out.

Theres the alliance. Match puking, Pencil by her side, the rest of them cuddled up in fear.

Fries and Gelatin, staring at the Yoyle Needy.

Coiny, sitting down and cryi-

Wait,

Coiny??

Pin rushed towards him and sat down. She looked over, and felt her heart sink into her shoes as she saw tears rolling down his cheeks.

"Coiny..?" She asked, concern hitting her like a baseball bat.

"Are you.."

"He's dead."

Coiny's voice cracked as he said those two words. Pin looked over at the sheet, and back at Coiny. Her eyes darkened.

"Coiny..."

"He's dead." His voice shook even more as he began to hold in sobs.

"He's dead and its all my fault."

Pin gasped.

"Why would it be your fault? You didn't even-"

"I was a JERK to him Pin! I caused him so much damn trouble and

NOW look at him!! HE'S DEAD AND ITS ALL MY FAULT."

Coiny immediately lost it as he began to sob, burying his head into his knees. His whole body shook as he let out weeps and cries, and gasps for air. Pin hesitated, but slowly put a hand onto his back and rubbed it slowly.

"Coiny...I-"

"MURDERER!"

Everyone looked up as Golf Ball pointed towards Pin, her eyes widened with fury and rage.

"SHE DID IT!"

Pin felt herself freeze.

How the hell did they even..

"Tennis Ball told me that YOU know exactly what happened to Firey. As well as a little help from the alliance.." She gestured over to Book, who was looked up, and soon looked away.

"THEY told us that they saw you fleeing the scene. And THATS when they found the body. Now FESS UP Pin. What did you do?" She towered over Pin.

Pin was on the ground, hugging herself and trembling. Nearly all eyes were on her as they waited to hear her speak.

"I..."

She tried to speak, but nothing came out.

"Did you murder Firey, Pin?!" Golf Ball yelled out, demanding for an answer.

Pin looked around, feeling as if walls were closing around her. She saw the alliance staring, Fries, Gelatin, Flower..

Coiny.

The shock and sadness stabbed Pin in the heart, as a tear suddenly escaped her darkened eye.

She couldn't hold it in anymore.

"I DIDN'T DO IT!"

Lie.

"I WAS TRYING TO WALK TO SEE IF I COULD GET TIRED, I JUST COULDN'T SLEEP,"

Act.

"I HEAR A CREAK FROM THE CAGE AND SOON I HEAR SCREAMING,"

They won't notice you faking.

"AND I SEE HIM FALLING-"

A lie is better than the truth.

"AND-AND-"

Lie.

Pin soon burst into sobs, as she grabbed herself and hugged her body tight.

"STOP IT! JUST STOP! LEAVE ME ALONE! PLEASE!"

She sobbed at the top of her lungs, wheezing and gasping for air. Everything around her was blurred out, and she felt lost. She felt weird. All eyes were on her, panicked and freaked out. She didn't care. Just please, PLEASE PLEASE *PLEASE* don't make them find out.

Please.

Soon she felt arms wrapping around her, but that didn't matter.

She started to scream.

Screams that were unfamiliar.

Screams that weren't even..*her.*

She continued to scream, not caring that if it was real or fake.

She could feel Firey staring at her.

Whispering.

Its all your fault.

She screamed more.

Im in a peaceful slumber.

She screamed even more.

While you're in a living nightmare.

Aren't you.

And continued to, staying that way for the rest of the time being, while everyone was hugging her and trying to get her out of it.

Hey guys!!! here we are with the next chapter of Fear Garden! I managed to snatch some time and use it for the story haha

Im so glad you guys are liking the story!!! it means so so much to me and I hope you guys are prepared for a wild ride haha!!

Thanks again for your kind words!!

~Ice

?????

i watched as Pin let out all of these horrific wails and weeps of pain.

I looked down at the corpse myself and felt hot, hot tears burning down my cheeks. My hand lost its grip as it fell down on the grass softly, as I sunk behind the bush and covered my face.

We never even got the chance to talk again.

Now we never will.

Caught in a Daze

"Are you sure you're gonna be okay?"

Coiny rubbed Pin's back ever so gently as he looked at his friend in worry. Her eyes were staring at the dirt below their feet, glimmering with tears every so often. The bags beneath her eyes have gotten darker, and she hasn't eaten much of anything in a while.

Yet, she responded with a slow nod of reassurance, not saying a single word.

Coiny's eyes darkened as he stared down at the dirt below their feet. He brought her to her garden to calm her racing thoughts after her confession from before. She hasn't been herself, through out the entire walk here. For seconds, she would stay as silent as death itself, but the next, her eyes shimmered and waterfalls of tears began to pour down her face.
Guess she wasn't handling this very well either, especially since everyone thought *she* was the 'killer'.

His eyes scanned the garden surrounding him, and he soon saw a single rose, already bloomed and filled with life, right next to him. He gently plucked it from the Earth and quietly handed it to Pin, giving her a sentimental smile.

"I just saw this and...it reminded me of you. Just because of your color, of course." He chuckled softly.

Pin looked at the rose, and then back up at Coiny and soon, a small snort and laugh burst through her lips. She gave him a small nudge and held the rose in her hand.

She examined the rose, and saw how green the leaves were, how vibrant they were, how they gleamed from the water droplets on them. The thorns, how sharp and painful they looked. And then, She

then examined the petals, and how red they were.
As red, as the pool of blood that surrounded Firey, and the stream of blood came from his eyes and mouth.
As red, as her nightmares themselves.

She didn't notice how hard she was squeezing the rose, and she soon jumped when she saw blood trickling down her arm. Coiny looked back at her and jumped.

"Pin! Be careful!!" He exclaimed, quickly taking the rose and setting it down. She seemed out of it, not even feeling a pinch. Coiny looked around and quickly jumped up.

"I'll be right back, I'm just gonna get you some bandages for your hand! Stay here alright?" He squeezed her shoulder gently.

Her eyes soon locked onto his as she nodded again. He smiled, before releasing his grip and dashing away back into the city.

She looked down at her hand, the blood gushing out from her open wounds. Thoughts began to race in circles around her mind, as she was beginning to get memories of the plan she had made.
She had done most of it, but yet, there was a looming feeling in her mind that something wasn't complete.

But what was it? What was missing?

Kill them? Done...
Fake it? Perfect...

What else was there..?

She stared down at her hand, and soon, the realization shot into her head like a bullet.

Cut their hands off. *Keep* them.

Plant them.

Crap.

She forgot a damn step to her plan.

She quickly got up and whirled her head around, searching for a nearby tool that could get the job done quickly. After a few seconds of panic, she grabbed a green object, a small shoulder bag which contained seeds and some small tools, and began to run, not caring that drops of blood were beginning to stain the ground, and the cement of the road below her.

"Hey Pin? Sorry I was late, I couldn't find any at my place but-" His words soon drifted off as he noticed that the garden was empty. His eyebrows lowered in confusion as he began to loom around the big yoyleberry bushes, and the rows of flowers she had. Maybe she was just taking a breather by the lavender plants again...

Nope.

Nothing.

He looked around and thought to himself.

Maybe...she went back to her place?
She *was* exhausted after all..

He shrugged a bit, and began to walk out of the garden, not noticing, the small droplets of blood that were on the ground.

Keep cutting.

Don't puke.

You're almost there.

You can finish this.

Pin's eyes were locked shut as she could feel the vomit creeping up her throat. She couldn't bear the thought of seeing his dead body once again, so she shut her eyes and quickly got to work.

His body was ice cold, as she slowly lifted his lifeless arm. She took a deep, shaky breath as she lifted the trowel.

One hit.

Her arm trembled.

Dig into it hard.

She shut her eyes.

Now.

With all her might, she slammed her trowel into Firey's wrist, as she began to quickly cut his hand off.

She could feel the dried veins popping, and the bone slowly crunching and crackling from the force of the trowel. She could feel the pain Firey could've felt if he was still alive.

After time seemed to drag oh so slowly, Firey's hand made a soft thump as it fell onto the pavement below. She grabbed the hand and hid it by her side, as she quickly got to work on the next. Her eyes were bloodshot and drenched with tears as she could feel the world around her slowly dripping into darkness. Her heart pounded inside her chest as she heard the popping and crackling sounds get even louder. The trowel, now stained with dried figments and dried blood, began to grow sharper and sharper. She quickly glanced around and began to notice, rataher gorgeous and jaw-dropping flowers bloom from the ground below. Begonia's, Marigold's, Tulips, Bulbine's....even California Poppy's and Alstroemeria's.
The tears that were packing up inside of her eyes quickly began to retreat, as she could see how beautiful the world around her was growing. She didn't even notice the hand, lying stiffly on the ground.

After looking around, she grabbed the two hands and stuffed them into the small bag. She them placed her trowel inside, which poked out of it, showing as if she was just headed to garden somewhere

else. She began to climb through hills and buildings, flowers growing within each inch of each area. Caught in a daze, her eyes were deathly pale, yet filled with fascination with the blossoming life around her. She began to trudge through even more, and ended up in a small area.
It was her garden, looking even more lively than it usually had. And in the middle of it all, sticking up with vines and leaves wrapping around the center to the top,

Was Firey's hands.
Behind that, was herself yet again, with blood covering her arms, hands, and legs. A smile slowly grew on her face as she let out a bloody hand towards Pin.

Pin, was under her spell. It was as if she was being lured to her, to exchange the hands for a lively garden, and a powerful leadership in her own. The Other Pin beckoned her slowly, her smile growing more and more sinister with every step Pin took.

Pin felt cold air blowing on her face ever so gently, as she began to take the final two steps. Her hand reached out towards her....

"PIN!"

-

A hand grabbed Pin's shoulder and whirled her around. Pin quickly snapped out of the daze and nearly lost her balance, before someone grabbed her close and pulled her away. She let out a small yelp before she heard a gust of wind blow. Her eyes opened to reveal that, she was on the top of the Yoyle Needy,

And she was about to hurl herself off of it.
Her mind pounded as it raced with questions and thoughts.

What just happened?

Where were the flowers?

Wasn't I just in my garden?

Who was reaching out towards me?

Where was I going?

She felt the arms squeeze her harder, and she grunted in discomfort. Her eyes glanced over to the object hugging her, and quickly made out the figure.

It was Coiny.

He hugged her as tightly and as closely as he could before pulling her away and looking at her, rage, relief and concern painted all over his face.

"WHAT THE HELL WERE YOU DOING?!" He shouted, his voice shaking.

Pin began to feel her arms tremble as she tried to explain. She could feel herself getting as small and defenseless as a blueberry seed. She opened her mouth, but all that managed to come out was,
"I don't know."

Coiny's eyes shut as he tried to squeeze the tears back.
"Thank GOD we saw you, I-I couldn't find you in the garden, and I saw you on the top of the tower, and everyone began to notice how you were on the edge of it, and-and-" he couldn't hold it in anymore.

"What is WRONG with you?! Were you TRYING to get yourself killed?!" He slammed his fist on the tower.
"WHAT IF YOU FELL?! WHAT IF YOU GOT HURT?! I COULDN'T DEAL WITH MYSELF IF YOU GOT HURT! I CAN'T LOSE YOU TOO! I CAN'T BEAR TO LOSE YOU PIN! I CAN'T LET THIS REPEAT!"
Tears now poured down Coiny's eyes as he dug his face into his hands. His boy shook with rage and fear, as sobs began to escape from his mouth.

"I'M SORRY IF I DID SOMETHING WRONG! I..I'M SO SORRY! P..PLEASE DON'T DO IT!"

Pin stared at him, her eyes widened with pain. Seeing all these negative emotions pouring out of him felt like a knife stabbing her through her heart. Her face was flushed, as she slowly reached out towards his arm.

Without thinking, Coiny grabbed her and hugged her close, crying. Pin stayed still, scared that he could throw her back at any moment. He sniffed, and soon said in a child-like voice,

"Don't go, please don't go.."

Pain. Guilt. Sadness. Relief.

The emotions hit Pin like a baseball bat as she quickly wrapped her arms around him and let the tears flow from her eyes. The guilt hung off of Pin's back, dragging her down with every second, making her heavier, and heavier.

"I...I'm sorry."

She began to repeat the two words, quickly and quietly with a great eagerness. She was desperate for his forgiveness, she never wanted this.
They both held each other in their arms, crying and apologizing reputedly.
And they stayed that way, with the sun slowly setting off the horizon.

-

The innocence card is surely something fun to pull out and use. Well, it is, when you know when and how to use it.

But this time, it was purely innocence. Pin didn't understand what happened, one moment she was standing above Firey's corpse, the next, on top of the Yoyle Needy, nearly about to jump off.

But she knew that the hallucination meant something.

She was met by everyone below, once Coiny brought her back down from the tower. "Are you okay?"'s and "What did you do?"'s bubbled up, but she shook them off and told them that it was a hallucination, that she had somehow been ripped away from reality and brought into another one.
Flower let out a scoff and rolled her eyes.
"You have got to be kidding me. You were just CRYING out for attention were you?" She smirked.
God, was she beautiful. But god, was she an asshole.
Pin quickly made her way through after convincing everyone that she was okay, and quickly made her way back to the garden.
She had told everyone that she wanted to be alone, just her in the garden. Coiny, GB and Fries obviously opposed to the idea, but after a while of convincing them, they let her go.

And now, it was time for the final step.

She stood in the middle of the garden, staring down at the small hole she had dug not too long ago. The hole was meant for a few sunflower seeds she would've planted, before this entire mess began. She took a slow, deep breath and opened her bag beside her.

The hands laid there, lifeless and still. She reached into the bag and felt the ice-cold touch of the skin, before a thought came to mind.

What if someone finds the hands here.
The garden is dangerously close to the city.
I can't grow all of this here, I can't.

She rubbed her hands together and began to get to work. She dug out a few roses, a few sunflowers and a few other plants, and gently piled them up in a cardboard box. She then took a few bags of seeds from the ground which she had planted not too long ago and put them in the decapitated palms of Firey's hands.

After a while, she grabbed a pen and paper and began to write a small note for everyone, just in case anyone decided to visit Pin in her original garden.

Went out for a walk on the mountain. Be back soon.
I'll be fine.
~P

-

okay holy crap, i am SO sorry for the very long wait my dudes, ive been through a TON of bs but heres another chapter! im planning to continue this story, I ain't letting it die off

but anyways i hope you guys enjoyed it!!! thank you all for the support for the story, and your kind words too <33

-Ice

Knock Knock..

(Warning: gore will be told in this chapter. Read with caution?? I guess? Just be careful or don't read if your squeamish.)

-

"Finally....I'm done."
Pin wiped the beads of ooze from her forehead, as she collapsed in her newly built secret garden.

It took at least two hours to find a perfect spot that was well hidden from the city and civilization, and well hidden enough for only Pin to find.

She smiled.

Her secret garden was located right near the top of the mountain, hidden by a few towers of rocks and trees. A spot where the sun perfectly hit from sunrise, to sunset.
When she found the spot, she immediately began to work.
She began to rearrange all her flowers and seeds around the edges of the garden, and began to dig up new spots for future plant use.

And for *other*. Purposes as well.

On her way to the spot, she found a old, deteriorated plastic bottle which seemed to be years old. Yet, there was still water in it. She took it, and with that, she watered her plants and seeds.
And for the final part, she planted Firey's hands.
It was most definitely hard for her. Her hands began to shake as she slowly planted the hands, sticking upright. The lifeless fingers dangled in the air, as she dug them up with wet and dry dirt. She then took out a small tag, and tied it around one of the hands, and on the tag, it was labeled:

Firey. Former winner of BFDI. Plant grower.

Once it was finished, she took a slow, deep breath, and walked out of the garden. She sat outside and stared at the view of the entire city, enjoying the feeling of her being on top of the world.

She felt so powerful. So dominant. She felt like nothing could stop her.
But, like everyone else,

She has her weak spots.

When she returned, the sigh of relief echoed through the air. Coiny explained to her that while she was gone, they couldn't help but try and find her, because they feared that she would try to harm herself even more, or worse.
She apologized, and everyone soon made sure to keep a close eye on her. GB recommended some tests on her, to see if her brain was playing tricks on her, or to see if she was ill. But Pin politely declined.

She knew that they still weren't okay.

Five days have passed since Firey's death.
And within two days, the garden soon began to blossom with so much life, more life than her original garden.
Tulips, sunflowers, marigolds, and torch lilies began to thrive in the garden, their colors bursting with joy and relief.

But yet again, it's been five days.
Surely everyone has gotten over Firey's death, right?

Those who weren't as close to Firey, has already been through the small stages of grief. And it seems that they have already accepted that he was no longer apart of this world.

Pin sighed.

This meant one thing.
It was time for another pair of hands.

She had gone through her list of the people in Yoyle City. There was no order; she chose who she wanted to and continued with that. But, she would always start off with the most weakest; the most fragile.
Firey's name was now crossed off with a red pen, the scribbles pressed deeply into the paper. The ink bled through the thin sheet and left a few marks on the desk beneath it. It was done and over with, what happened has happened, and there's no going back.

Pin sat in her room, going through the list of the local objects in the city before she heard a loud knock from her front door.
"Coming!" She replied, as she quickly hid the paper and began to walk to the door.

She opened the door and it was no one other than Needle, concern plastered all over her face.

"Needle? What's-"

"No time to explain Pin! Cmon!" Needle grabbed her hand and quickly dashed out of the room, and soon out of the house.
Needle was surely a fast runner.

Pin tried to keep up, being as quickly and as careful as she could be so she wouldn't trip, and soon, they arrived to The Science Museum. Count stood beside the entrance, his eyebrows furrowed together in confusion. TB stood there anxiously, while GB sat on top of him, confusion and suspicion on her face. She held a small notepad and was focused scribbling down her usual findings, until she heard the footsteps of the two. She looked up.

"Oh wow! You two made it quick!" She smiled a bit.

Needle scoffed.

"Well, who do you think you're talking to hear? The fastest runner in Yoyle City!"

Pin couldn't help but smile. Needle surely could be prideful in herself. Golf Ball cleared her throat, and soon had a serious expression.

"Anyways, this is no time for chit-chat! This is serious." She sternly

proclaimed.

"This morning, me and TB decided to bring Firey's body somewhere safe so we could bury it and at least put him at rest.."

Pin felt her heart drop.

"But as we took a look at the corpse, we realized that his hands were cut off!"

Coiny shivered in disgust.
"Who could've done that? Why would they do that?" His voice was soft and weakened. He wasn't over it one bit.

"We...don't know." Tennis Ball proclaimed.
"But me and GB are planning to start an investigation on the culprit soon, because we're starting to think that this wasn't an accidental cause."

Pin gulped silently. This would surely go downhill, especially if they were to do-

"We're planning to search for some fingerprints on the body, specifically the arms of Firey."

Crap.

"When...are you planning to start the search?" Pin's voice began to tremble, but she quickly held herself together.

"As soon as possible. We're gonna see if we can get started tonight, or tomorrow morning." Golf Ball looked down at her notes.

Pin stared at the ground, her fists clenching together hard.

"We only gathered you three here because we didn't want to cause a wide spread panic to the city- so we only brought you three, who were at least close to Firey." Golf Ball looked down.
"There were more, but as you all know, *she* has no purpose of being here anymore."
Coiny looked to his side. Needle looked down, her eyes dimming sadly.

They knew she was talking about Leafy.

GB looked up.

"But as I said, we'll share the results once we receive them, and hopefully we can catch this culprit while we can."

She had to stop them.

She can't let them find out, she can't.

But how...

"Bleh!"
A small voice echoed from down the sidewalk, before a small figure came scuttling over to TB and GB.

Rocky.

TB smiled, his eyes filling with pure, childlike joy.
"Hi Rocky!"

Rocky grinned and gave TB a hug, before plopping himself down next to him. GB's mouth slowly began to curl into a smile, before shaking her head.

"Alright everyone, we'll let you know the results asap." She mumbled, before waving her foot towards us.

Coiny walked over to Needle and began to converse with her, not even noticing Pin walking off.
Oh well, who cares?
Her fist clenched even tighter.

I don't. I don't care.

Besides, I already know what to do next.

Sorry you two, I'm gonna be busy.

Busy, with a small little friend of yours.

The sun beamed brightly over the sky. It was a bit past noon, but the autumn air chilled everyone below.

Pin smirked. The time was perfect. She knew that he was just wandering around, or simply just sitting by the Goiky Canal.

Rocky was always a odd being, but no one ever questioned him. He was a child-like, imaginative friend; someone who couldn't respond, but could at least let you cry on his shoulder.
He had a pure soul.

And what way, to make a pure friend like Rocky laugh, than a few jokes?

Pin was walking down a pathway that led to the canal, when she suddenly saw Rocky, plopped down and staring at a small ladybug on the ground. She had her trusty brown shoulder bag; filled with all her essentials she would need, and use to clean up afterwards.

"Hi Rocky!" She beamed happily. Rocky looked up and grinned, before turning around and puking, as per usual.

Pin winced, but gave him a pat on the back.

"What are you up to, pal?" She grinned. He pointed at the small ladybug, and watched it as it soon buzzed off into the sky. Pin also watched, and nodded in agreement.

"Ladybugs sure are precious." She stated. Rocky nodded, adding in a little 'Hmph!' to emphasize his agreement with Pin.

"Say, what do you think those fireflies eat?" Pin gestured towards a small firefly, that was buzzing around in the tall grass. Rocky looked up at her, confusion clear in his eyes.

"LIGHT-snacks!"

It took a moment, but soon, a smile grew on Rocky's face as he began to giggle and burst into laughter. As he did, Pin slowly opened her bag, reaching in for her chef knife she had.

"Wait, wait, what- pff- what kind of bugs would live in Clocky?" She

let out a snicker.

Rocky grinned, vomit dripping out of his mouth. His eyes were filled with joy, as his expression emphasized "What? What type of bugs??"

Pin giggled, before bursting out the answer.

"TICKS!"

Rocky burst into laughter, rolling around at the joke made towards someone who was stuck in the Locker of Losers. He giggled and laughed as his high pitched voice echoed down the path. Pin wiped a few tears from her eyes, as she laughed as well.

She clenched the knife.

"Hey Rocky! Wanna hear another joke?"

Rocky beamed with joy as he nodded. He bounced up and down, since he enjoyed the sharing of jokes between him and Pin. It has surely been a while since they've conversed, and it seems like he's getting a new pal to play with!

He just COULDN'T wait to tell Tennis Ball!!

"Okay, um....

Knock knock!"

Rocky turned, and let out a small 'bleh!' of vomit before turning back, eagerness in his eyes.

"Who's there!" He squealed.

"Knife!"

"Knife who?" His eyes gleamed with excitement, ready to laugh his guts out once again at her response.

Grinning wildly, Pin pulled out her chef's knife, and with one, hard swing, she stabbed it deep into Rocky's head, twisting and turning it so it could go in deeper, and deeper. Crunches and splatters were

heard, as the knife dug deep into his skull and flesh.

Rocky's smile immediately faded as his mouth hung open in pain and shock. Nothing came out, except for pained gargles and croaks, the noises echoing through the air. The echoes became quieter, and quieter, and soon, a stream of blood and vomit began to ooze from his mouth. His eyes let out a few, glimmering tears, before they rolled back into his head, and turned pale.

Pin smiled as she forcefully yanked out the knife from his head, blood suddenly spurting everywhere. It oozed and drooled down, blanketing his face. Some blood flew and splashed onto Pin's face, as well as her arms and legs.

Rocky's body soon collapsed onto the ground, his legs twitching ever so gently. It seemed to continue for a few seconds...

Before they became limp, as still as death itself.

She let out a small chuckle as she knelt down and began to do her work. She pulled out her handy trowel and proceeded to cut off Rocky's legs.

Since he was just killed, blood began to pour out of his open wounds.

But Pin didn't mind.

She continued, getting blood all over her hands and legs. She cut off his other leg, and sighed in accomplishment.
She put his legs back into her bag, as well as her tools that she had used, special and just for Rocky.

She pulled out some small towels and quickly proceeded to wipe herself clean, watching the blood stain the clean, white cloth.

The first one was drenched in blood.

The second, was a light pink.

And the third, was still white and clean.

Pin looked around, and slowly began to walk out of the way, and

proceeded to make her way to the garden. But before she left, she turned around to face Rocky's small, innocent corpse.

"It was 'knife', knowing you Rocky."

She turned around, and began to walk off.

"And I'm sure it was 'knife' of TB and GB knowing you too."

Jesus Christ, I'm sorry for all these awful puns and jokes, I just want people to love me
Anyways!! To make up for the very long wait for the previous chapter, I'm releasing another chapter I managed to write! I hope you enjoy!!

~ice

Where Did He Go?

"ROCKY?"

Tennis Ball's voice broke the peace in the city. His voice was dim with concern, yet high enough to be heard from afar.

Usually, around this time, his small friend came by and him, himself and GB would go check on the wall teleporter.

But today, he wasn't seen at all.
Not even wandering around, as usual.

Golf Ball walked up to Tennis Ball, her head shaking.
"I asked nearly EVERYONE if they have seen Rocky. No one has seen him all day."

Tennis Ball looked around with worry.
"Where could he be? He's never been gone for this long!" The anxiety began to get the best of him.

Golf Ball patted his back in sympathy and looked around.
"You have to calm down, there's a good 94.36% chance that Rocky couldn't have gone far. Maybe he just went out for a walk?"

"Which means HE COULD BE LOST!" Tennis Ball's voice broke.

Golf Ball grunted and rolled her eyes.
"Alright TB, calm down, and I'll check around Goiky to see if he's hanging out by the canal. You check around the fields and the Locker of Losers to see if he wandered off over there again." Golf Ball looked straight into TB's eyes, her eyes filled with both annoyance, yet determination to find their little friend.

Tennis Ball took a shaky sigh, before nodding his head. Golf Ball smiled as she gave him another pat, before walking off.

He took a deep breath.
"Alright, all I have to do, is simply look around and inside a few buildings he's been in before. He's fine! He's okay!" He forced himself to smile, and believe the thought.
When he gained enough comfort at the thought, he quickly began to search around.

He looked inside, and outside, out and around, over and under...

No luck.

He then began to make his way to the Locker of Losers.
But before he made it, he passed the deteriorated Recovery Center.
The gears were now covered in cobwebs and dust, and the screen and corners were cracked.
He frowned.
"Maybe I could try to make it work...maybe it needs a small touch up?" He thought to himself.
It did break down, maybe it was the gears? The machinery?

No.

He shook his head, and continued to walk forward.
He had to look for Rocky.

"Anyone in there?"

Tennis Ball smirked as groans of annoyance came from inside the large, blue metal box.
The Locker of Losers.

Tennis Ball laughed and waited for everyone's complaints to die down a bit.

"Don't you have anything better to do?!" A high pitched voice rang from inside.

"Well I mean, I'm trying to find ways on getting you guys out from there. What about you Bell? Are you doing anything productive in there?" He chuckled.

A few dings could be heard, as she sighed angrily.

"Alright Tennis Ball, are you planning to get us out, or what?" Donut questioned.

"What? No. Not yet."

Even more groans.

"I haven't gotten the wall teleporter to charge any faster. It's taking a serious amount of time for it to reach its maximum capacity, and, well, yknow, if you guys want to get out, you have to be patient." His voice was firm and to the point.

Donut sighed.

"Anyways, that's not why I'm here. Have you guys seen-"

"SEEN?!" Nearly everyone yelled together in unison, anger beginning to bubble up from their tones.

Tennis Ball laughed nervously.

"I'm sorry- have you guys HEARD, of Rocky?"

"Well, duh, he's that funky little rock dude you and bossy-bot always hang around with." Blocky's voice sighed out.

"Well- ugh, yes, I know that, but have you like? Heard him around here? Heard him barf? Say anything? Sneeze? Cough???" His voice began to shake with concern.

"Woah woah, dude, calm down." Pen's voice soothed Tennis Ball. He gulped slowly, and a crooked smile escaped from his lips.

"Y-Yeah...um...has he been around here...?"

A pause.

"No...we haven't heard from him at all today. We heard him barf nearby yesterday, but...not today." Pen explained.

"Is something going on? What happened?" A auto tuned voice filled

the Locker of Losers. It was Puffball.

Tennis Ball shook his head, and leaned against the cold, metal walls.

"He was fine yesterday, but he hasn't been seen at all this morning. I walked him over to his place, his small room? And left...but when I went to the usual spot where he usually meets up with me and GB.." he paused, trying to maintain the calmness in his voice.
"He didn't come. I looked at his place. He wasn't there. The entire city, I searched and searched...nothing."

His eyes began to sting with hot tears.
"And after what happened with Firey, I fear that something must've happened...maybe he's hurt..or-"

"Wait! Firey?"

He looked up.

"What happened to Firey? Is he okay?" Blocky questioned, his voice beginning to grow with concern.

Tennis Ball looked down, and sighed.

"Firey..is dead, Blocky."

"WHAT?!"

Many voices and questions began to erupt from the large, over-sized tin box. Overwhelmed, Tennis Ball quickly walked by a small patch of grass and sat down, shutting his eyes and ever-so-gently rocking himself back and fourth. Questions and thoughts swirled through his aching mind as he tried to calm himself down, and soon, he vision began to blur and darken quickly.

He was beginning to black out.
A high-ring filled his ears as he suddenly remembered Firey's face.
The way blood oozed from his mouth like a waterfall.
The tears of blood that rolled down his face.
His legs..

Rocky..

His small legs..
His eyes..
Rocky...

....

TB...

...Tennis Ball.....? T...ennis Ball.....

.....

"TENNIS BALL!"

His body jerked forward as he looked around quickly. He quickly regained his surroundings before trudging carefully towards the Locker of Losers.

"Yoyle City to Tennis Ball! What the hell happened to Firey?!"

He winced. He didn't have time for this, and he surely didn't want to explain to them, but...

"Okay, to make a long story short, Firey was found after supposedly 'falling' to his death. Our hypothesis back then was that he somehow managed to escape the cage he was kept hostage in, but lost balance and fell to his death."

He took a breath.

"But something...strange happened. Me and GB we're going to try and bury the body to at least let Firey rest in piece, but when we went for the body, his hands were cut clean off. So now, this new information leads to my new hypothesis; This was no accident. Whatever...or whoever did this had the sole purpose to get rid of Firey. And since the recovery centers are no longer in use...they seemed to have gotten rid of him, permanently."

A heavy silence crushed the entire atmosphere as no one dared to speak from inside the Locker of Losers.

"Leafy."

The sudden voice made Tennis Ball jump.

"It has to be Leafy." Blocky's voice muttered somberly as he let out a sigh.

"She hasn't been seen ever since BFDIA; which means she's still out there. And since she's the only one; well, besides Coiny...and Flower, and the alliance...who has been on very bad terms with him, she must have done this to get revenge on him."

Tennis Ball thought for a moment, and looked around.

"But where could she be?"

"Hell if we know buddy." Snowball knocked from inside.
"But one things for sure; you better find her and make her pay."

Tennis Ball cocked his head to the side, curiously.
"But why? She's gotten what she wanted, why would she-"

Suddenly, realization stabbed Tennis Ball in his mind as his eyes widened.

Rocky.

Leafy.

She's still out there.

Tennis Ball began to panic.

"WHAT A-AM I DOING?! I HAVE TO GO! ROCKY!!" He cried out before running off.

As he ran, he could hear the worried yells from the Chamber.

And as the yells got quieter and quieter, the last thing he heard before tumbling through the woods was a quiet,
"Good luck."

"ROCKY?"

Golf Ball stomped around aimlessly, looking for her small friend. Her eyebrows were furrowed together in frustration; she's been searching for precisely two hours now.

"This ISN'T funny Rocky! We're not playing hide n' seek! WHERE ARE YOU?!"

She continued to stomp around, her small feet crunching dead leaves and grass beneath them.

She looked around, before making her way through the long pathway to the canal. She wanted to make sure Rocky wasn't in a patch of grass; he had the tendency to do so after multiple experiences.

She sighed.
This was going NOWHERE.

And if he was just in his room, the chances of her yelling at TB for wasting their time would be 87.492%.

She continued walking, the sun shining brightly along the path. The aroma of a odd smell began to linger towards her, making her cringe.

She continued walking, the putrid smell getting stronger and stronger.

"Ugh, what is that?! Is there something dead by here or what?!" She yelled out angrily.

She stomped harder, until, off in the distance of the trail, she saw a small, blurry orb.

It HAS to be Rocky.

Golf Ball didn't have the best vision out there, but she knew her acquaintances well enough to spot them from miles away.

She began to stomp over to the blue, angrily.

"Rocky, you better have a GOOD explanation for this!" She scowled angrily.

No answer.

She rolled her eyes, and stomped faster.
"Rocky, what have I told you before?! You have to ANSWER ME! Not knowing how to talk DOESN'T mean you can't make eye contact!"

Nothing.

"ROCKY! WHAT THE HELL IS WRONG WITH-"

Her words were soon cut off as she suddenly saw what was in front of her.
There was Rocky.

His eyes glossy and pale, a single, pale, tear staining his cheek. A deep, bleeding wound dug deep into his forehead, as the blood was still gushing all over the ground around him.
His mouth was stained with dried blood and bits of vomit, as his legs...were missing.
All that was left was two, small nubs, still oozing out blood...the bone completely visible.

It only took a few seconds, before Golf Ball stumbled back from shock. Losing her balance, she quickly tripped and fell, suddenly rolling away from Rocky at an alarming speed. She let out a few startled yelps before she collided with a street pole, head first. She was immediately knocked out, slowly sinking down and collapsing onto the pavement.
And then, silence.

....

Until quick, quiet footsteps were heard from the distance, getting louder and louder.

Tennis Ball.

"ROCKY?! WHERE ARE YOU?!"

He ran as fast as he could, his lungs burning and beads of sweat dripping down his face.

He HAD TO FIND ROCKY. NOW.

He continued to run until he skidded to a halt, after noticing,

Golf Ball.

She laid on the ground, a dark, purple bump beginning to form on her forehead.

Crap GB...

Tennis Ball quickly looked around, before shifting her into a more comfortable position.

"I'll be right back GB, just hang in there...." he muttered, before quickly running off.

She was nearby.

She did this.

She did this as a way of distraction.

Tennis Ball continued to dash through the path, anxiety stabbing his mind like icicles. He was petrified, something wasn't right.

He continued to run before...

Tennis Ball froze.

His eyes widened in fear as he looked down upon Rocky's corpse, which was laying on the ground. Rocky's glossy eyes stared straight into Tennis Ball.

Blame.

Guilt.

Shame.

It wasn't long before a loud scream was heard through out the city, as Tennis Ball collapsed and sobbed next to Rocky's dead body.

Aight everyone, sorry if this was kinda rushed, but boom! part? 9? 10? i forgot

ANYWAYS hope u guys enjoyed!!
my birthday is tomorrow so im just gonna. party? yea

enjoy!!

~ ice

Too Many Tears

"ROCKY!"

Tennis Ball weeped out as he buried his face into the ground.

His small little friend, the most innocent one out of the group..

Was dead.

Murdered.

In the most painful way possible.

Beside him, Coiny was patting his back in consolement; trying to comfort the grieving ball to the best of his abilities. Fries was covering up Rocky with plaided sheet he no longer used, to save the evidence for Golfball when she came to (whenever that. would be.).

As for Golfball...
She was out, out Like a light.

Needle and Book we're trying their best to wake her up, but Golfball rammed into the pole at such an alarming speed, that she completely knocked herself out.

Chaos was erupting from the group, one side is sobbing, the other, with begs and pleas, trying to wake someone who was out.

Chaos.

Pin liked that.

She stood far off behind the scene, hidden in a large cluster of bushes. A smile crept on her face as she watched it all unfold, with other objects quickly arriving to the scene after the yells began to reverberate through the city.

"We have to take her back to her lab! Maybe she has something there to help?!" Needle cried out, her soft voice filled with panic.

Book shook her head. "She knocked herself out Needle; I don't think there's any cure for that. All we have to do is keep a sharp eye on her, and keep a lot of patience." She sighed, before shooting a glance towards Tennis Ball, who was still erupting with sobs.

"A Lot. Of patience."

Pencil looked at Rocky's corpse and shuddered a bit. Sure, she was glad that there would be no more vomit.

No more messes to clean up..

But she didn't want for it to stop THIS way.

Her eyes glanced down to black stubs, which were still gushing out blood.

The monster who did this took his legs.
What kind of sick, fucking joke IS this?!
She shuddered more before looking away, trying her best to not let a tear slip down her cheek.

As she watched, Pin chuckled softly. She slowly opened her dark, tattered garden bag to reveal that..

Inside, we're two, tiny legs.

Legs that formerly belonged to a small, childlike rock.

"Guys! Guys!"

"What, like, is it NOW Book?"

"She's finally coming to!!"

Golf Ball's legs gently shifted, as she began to squirm a bit. Her eyes tightly shut in pain for a quick moment, as she felt a wave of pain

and dizziness come over her. Slowly, her eyes fluttered open, daze and confusion filling them as much as the questions that began to flood her mind. Her eyes adjusted to the room and soon, she saw a few objects surrounding her.

Tennis Ball's face was lit up with relief and joy as he let out a sigh.

"You're finally awake...we thought you were gonna slip into a coma or something." He chuckled.

Golf Ball rolled her eyes as she looked around.

Wait..

Wasn't she just outside...?

"W-..Where am I...?" She mumbled out, rubbing her eyes sleepily.

Book quickly scribbled down some notes before looking up.

"You're in your lab GB. We figured that it would be the best place to leave you rest until you awoke..." she smiled, "..And We were right."

Golf Ball grunted and sank back into her sheets.

"What the hell- how..was I even knocked out? All I remember was..seeing Rocky, and...." her voice began to soften as she mentioned Rocky.

"R-..Rocky.." her voice cracked out. She looked up.

"He's...He's Okay, right? Based off of my c-..calculations, he only had a 50.1% chance of making it, he...he...."

Everyone glanced at each other nervously, before Book cleared her throat.

"He..was long gone when we found him."

Golf Ball's eyes widened. She looked over to Tennis Ball, a small scoff escaping her lips.

"Tennis Ball- C-..Cmon, this is a joke right? Y-You saved him, right?"

She chuckled out, a nervous grin on her face.

Tennis Ball's eyes darkened as he gave her a blank stare.

"He was murdered, GB."

Golf Ball's face turned pale.

"Wh-...."

Tennis Ball looked down.

"I found him not long after I found you. He was-...he..." He shook his head before clearing his throat, trying his best not to let out a cry.

Golf Ball put her head down as she began to breathe heavily.

"We don't have much evidence GB, but...the best we can do is at least warn everyone and lay low-"

"Lay low?" She rasped out, her small body trembling.

"Lay LOW?! IS THAT ALL WE HAVE LEFT TO DO IN THIS SITUATION?!"
She stood up, a few tears now rolling down her pale cheeks.

"WE SHOULD BE INVESTIGATING! LOOKING! FINDING OUT WHO DID THIS, DAMNIT! FINDING OUT WHO DID THIS AND MAKING THEM PAY!" She screeched out angrily.

Tennis Ball panicked and tried to sit her back down.

"G-GB, calm down-"

"NO! I DON'T NEED TO!"

Golf Ball turned and faced the objects towards her.

"THERE IS A MURDERER ON THE LOOSE. THIS WASN'T A FOOLISH "ACCIDENT", WHOEVER IS DOING THIS WANTS US ALL DEAD! AND THEY WILL NOT STOP, UNTIL WE ARE ALL DEAD!"

She suddenly collapsed onto her knees, more tears pouring out of her

eyes.

"Someone. Murdered Rocky." Her voice began to wobble.

"Someone....took him away..." she began to shake her head.

Everyone exchanged glances of concern and pain.

"For gardens sake, there's too much goddamn tears in this room; I've never seen you like this, GB."

Everyone turned towards Flower, who had her arms crossed and her eyes shut.

"How would YOU feel if someone close was murdered this way, Flower?!" TB snapped back at her.

Her eyes opened, and to everyone's surprise, her eyes were shining with tears.

"I don't even want to think about how I would feel."

A heavy silence filled the air, except for the broken sighs and sniffles that were coming from GB.

"But who could've done such a thing..? Rocky hasn't had any negatives with anyone here! Not even Snowball! Well..he's in the TLC.." Pencil exclaimed.

Book shrugged. "I don't know. For all I know anyone could be suspects..."

"But what kind of person cuts off the legs of a object they just *murdered* and takes them away?!" Tennis Ball looked up, after sitting Golfball down and handing her a small box of tissues.

"I don't know. But we have to find out sooner or later..." Book said.

Woody, who was standing anxiously nearby, tapped Fries's shoulder. Fries looked towards him, and Woody leaned in to whisper a few words into his ear. Fries nodded, and looked towards Book.

"Woody asked, what are we going to do until the culprit is found?"

Book looked over at Golfball, who was hunched over and still, crying. Tennis Ball gave her a few pats to console her, before looking up.

"We investigate. Find anything that could be clues for us. Find anything that could lead us closer to the object behind all of this." Her eyes narrowed.

"But be. Careful. Like Golfball said, whoever's out there wants us dead. Stay in groups, and, towards the night, make sure everything is locked down."

Pin frowned a bit. She's going to have to think of a different strategy...

"Pff, screw all of this. There is a MURDERER out there!" Flower pointed towards the doorway.
"And you expect us to stay, "in groups"?! I'm sorry, but I'm staying inside for now. You guys JUST let me out of the TLC, and I come back to THIS disaster!" She pouted and crossed her arms.

Ruby nervously took her hand and rubbed it gently.

"Flower, please..." she nervously mumbled. She noticed dirty glances from the group, directed towards her and Flower.

She was the one who asked if Flower could come back first...

Book sighed and looked up.

"Alright. Do as you, like, want. I'm going to keep our alliance meetings going, whether we like it or not!" Pencil snapped, turning around and beginning to walk out of the room.

"Come, Match!"

Soon, Match, Bubble, and the rest of the alliance quickly followed behind her. Book looked towards TB.

"Keep an eye on her." She whispered. TB nodded, and turned back to his friend, who was not leaning on him and staring off into space.

Book then ran out, trying to catch up with the rest of the alliance.

"Coiny!"

"What, what?"

"You're such a cheater!"

Pin laughed before playfully smacking. Coiny's arm, and slamming her cards down on her desk.

"You're just a sore loser, aren't ya?" He smirked, and gently pushed her arm away.

The two had decided to return to Coiny's place and do something to keep their mind off of the fiasco that had happened earlier.

And boy was it working.

Pin laughed before shuffling the cards once again, but Coiny placed a hand on hers.

"How about we just chill? I think I'm all worn out from winning.." he smiled.

Pin rolled her eyes and placed the cards back on his desk.

"Oh screw you."

"What? It isn't my fault I'm the b-"

Coiny's face soon dropped, as he slowly put his hand down.

"You're what now?" She turned around and saw his expression, and her chest soon filled with worry.

"Hey..what's the matter?" Her voice softened a bit. Coiny looked up at her, before grunting and falling backwards, covering his face. Pin frowned before laying down as well, and poking him.

"Coiny?"

No response.

She sighed, before rolling on to her side.

"Hey, Co-Captain, we have a problem."

Muffled words escaped Coiny's mouth, as he refused to take his hands off of his face.

"Someone's tryin to switch teams here. We got team Winner and team Loser. One of the winners is crawling off towards the Losers, so I need backup." She smirked.

Coiny stayed silent for a moment, before he began to chuckle. Pin smiled and sat up, crossing her legs.

"Aw, cmon? Where's that smile of that W.O.A.H Bunch co-captain?"

Coiny sighed before he removed his hands from his face, and looked up at her, smiling.
His eyes were red, as tears were filling his saddened eyes.

"Woah woah woah, what's-"

"I miss him."

Pin stopped talking. She gave him a confused look.

"Miss who?"

Coiny looked at the ceiling.

"I miss Firey."

Pin's eyes widened as she nearly fell backwards from shock.

"You-You MISS Firey? Am I hearing this correctly?" She spat out.
Coiny shot her a dirty look, as she giggled nervously.

"I don't know why-I'm used to him always fighting me, and I'm used to fighting him, but..." he stayed quiet for a moment, "I wanted to just, fix it. I didn't really want to fight anymore, I just wanted to, yknow..talk with him. Get to know him. Be a pal, a friend, and

just...not slap each other."

He let out a broken sigh.

"Now I missed my chance."

He shut his eyes, and laid on the floor, grief suddenly overbearing him. He couldn't move; he didn't know why, but he felt like this was all his fault.

Maybe he did decide to jump out of the cage.

Was it something he said?

Was it the slapping.

Was it-

A pair of hands yanked Coiny up as he snapped out of his thoughts. Pin wrapped his arms around him gently as she gave him a warm, comforting hug.

"Listen to me. None of this..is your fault." Her voice faltered as she mentioned that it wasn't his fault.

It was *no one's* fault.

It was *hers*.

"But I want you to understand this. As Co-Captain, you must understand this. I'm sure Firey wanted to be on good terms with you too. I'm sure he didn't want to fight with you, too." She paused.

"But don't you dare say that this was your fault. Something happened up there. Firey was killed. He didn't kill himself. He was..killed."

Silence.

"But know, that he's resting now. And I'm sure he can hear us; and I'm very sure..he forgives you, too."

By this point, Coiny was silently sobbing into Pin's shoulder. He hugged her tightly as his arms slightly trembled. Pin smiled a bit.

"Hasn't there been too many tears for today Coiny..?" She quietly giggled

Coiny let out a muffled laugh, and Pin held him tightly as she rubbed his back comfortingly.

"It's okay..you're okay.."

She closed her eyes, a tear slipping out of her eye.

"We're going to be okay."

I promise I won't hurt you Coiny.

I love you.

(2024: edited the long paragraph. don't mind me)

WIG OKAY
I HAVE BEEN GONE FOR A REALLY LONG TIME AND I APOLOGIZE FOR THAT
BUT!!!!! I am NOT abandoning this story!!! I want to continue and yknow,,,,,,,,,,,
Also I'm sorry but I like CoinPin so im gonna give y'all some CoinPin ok? Ok

But yeah!!! I hope this chapter was worth it?? I really hope it was im sorry
I'll upload the next chapter more sooner since exams and holidays are over!!!!!!!

anyways enough of me rambling, enjoy this part of the fanfic
-Ice

Bad Nightmares, Sweet Awakenings

The garden radiated with life as Pin stepped onto the soft soil.

She took a deep breath in, and smiled, letting the warmth of the sunshine permeate through her cheeks. Roses flowed from the small bush by the entrance, as Pin gently plucked one from the ground, and gave it a sniff.

Light and soft, a delicate smell made Pin smile even more as she began to make her way through the garden.

The bright aura from the sunflowers greeted Pin as she let her free hand brush against the soft petals. She clenched the rose in her hand, and began to get deeper into the garden, the plants glowing with even more life than the plants from the entrance. Yoyle berry bushes glowed besides the lavender plants, and Pin quickly snatched one from the small branch as she popped the bright berry into her mouth, feeling the sweet, yet bizarre taste of the juice fill her taste buds. Her body slowly began to turn into metal as she clenched the Rose even harder.

She continued to walk, until she finally collapsed to her knees as she looked down, a large grin plastered on her face.

Two pairs of hands laid on the soft patch of dirt, blood beginning to soak the dirt below them. She wrapped her fingers around one of the hands, and gave it a gentle squeeze. She looked down, and place the rose onto the ground besides the lifeless hands. She looked down, and saw that her hand that was holding the Rose was gushing out blood, cuts and scrapes from all the thorns the rose had. She winced a bit, but giggled as she let out a sigh.

"You were lovely..." she whispered, as she caressed the hands.

"You were the only one who did understand-"

snap

Pin whirled her head around, and her eyes widened in horror.

Firey stood behind her, his eyes filled with blood, and his body, mangled and distorted.

"Pin.....i-...it hurts...."

Pin felt her heart pound inside her chest, as she felt her breaths become more shallow and quicker. She quickly scuttled backwards, shoving the hands out of the way.

"F-F..Firey?! I-I'm-"

"*Why did...you do it....."*

Pin felt her heart ache as she let out a choked sob.

"I- You-I had t-to-"

"Hello Pin..."

Pin felt her entire body go cold.

"It's been so long, hasn't it..?"

Before she could respond, a knife plunged into her chest. The knife twisted deeper into her violently,as Pin choked, feeling blood pour out of her mouth. Her vision began to fade, as the object leaned into her 'ear', caressing her cheek gently.

"Miss me?～"

"NO!"

Pin let out a blood-curdling scream as she scrambled up and into the kitchen. Her screams reverberated through the house, as she collapsed onto her knees. She yanked the kitchen-cabinet open, and began to dig through the utensils, before gripping her hand around

the handle of her carving knife.

"I WON'T LET YOU!" She cried out.

It wasn't long before Coiny scrambled in, his eyes filled with exhaustion but fear, after hearing Pin's screams.

"Pin?! PIN!"

Pin whirled her head around, and the exhaustion quickly fled Coiny's eyes, as he stumbled back.

"P-Pin-"

"I WON'T LET YOU?!" She sobbed out. The knife was pointed directly towards him, the light reflecting off of the blade.

Coiny stared at her in disbelief, before slowly getting back up.

"Pin....Pin, look at me..."

"SHUT IT!" Her eyes squeezed shut, tears streaming down her face.

"I-I WON'T LET YOU KILL ME LEAFY!"

Coiny's face dropped at the mention of Leafy. He looked at her, and slowly made her way towards him.

"Pin...I-I know your scared.."

Pin clenched the knife harder, her arms trembling wildly.

"Please....." Her voice cracked.

"Pin, open your eyes. Look at me." His voice was stern and smooth, as he made his way in front of her. She shook her head no, as more tears poured down her face.

"Y-You're not killing me..."

Coiny hesitated, but gently pressed his hand onto the knife, and slowly pushed it downwards. Pin's eyes fluttered open, as disbelief filled them quickly. The knife slipped out of her grip, as it fell with a

clang onto the cold, kitchen floor.

Coiny put a hand on her cheek, and caressed it gently. He let out a weak smile.

"There we go..." he whispered.

Pin put a hand on her forehead as she closed her eyes, pitifully.

"My head.." she muttered.

"That was..the shittiest dream I've had..."

Coiny let his forehead touch against hers, his hand still on her cheek.

"Don't you mean, a nightmare..?" He chuckled softly.

She let a small smile grow on her face, as she laughed.

"Whatever, same thing..."

She closed her eyes, and took a deep breath.

"...I can't stop thinking about what's going on Coiny..." she felt her eyes burn.
"I'm so scared..."

Coiny looked around slowly, before leaning in, and giving Pin a small kiss on her forehead.

Pin's eyes snapped open, as she stared at Coiny, shocked and confused.

"Wh-...wha..."

His cheeks glowed a bright shade of red, as he scratched the back of his head.

"S-Sorry about that.." he stuttered.

"I-I just wanted-To-uh..yknow, u-uh-"

A snicker made Coiny stop talking.

Pin let out a laugh, before looking at Coiny, holding his hands and giving them a gently squeeze, feeling the warmth and softness of his hands.

"No need to explain..."

She leaned in, and gave him a soft peck on his lips.

"I already know."

"ALLIANCE MEETING!"

Groans of frustration filled the air as Pencil smirked.

"Again?" Ice Cube whined out.

"THIS IS IMPORTANT GIRLS! Trust me! You're gonna appreciate it." Pencil winked.

Ruby looked down at Flower and frowned.

"I'm really sorry Flower, but-"

Flower scoffed and held her hands.

"Please, Ruby; don't apologize, you goofball. Go ahead." She gave her a kiss.
Ruby gushed and looked up at her, her eyes filled with glee.

"Gosh-thank you Flower!"

Book rubbed her arm, and cleared her throat.

"Um, Flower..please." Book gestured her towards the door. Flower sighed, and waved goodbye to Ruby, as she walked out.

Ruby waved, and gave Book a hug.

"She KISSED me! I can't believe it!" She squealed. Book forced a smile

onto her face.

"I'm so happy for you Ruby.." she gave her a hug. Ruby giggled, until Pencil cleared her throat.

"Alright Freesmart-ers, I have some important news to share with you all!"

Match nodded, agreeing with Pencil as if she knew the important news.

"Well, what is the important news Poincil?" Bubble questioned.

"I'm VERY glad you asked, Bubble!" She winked, before turning around and grabbing a small handbag.

"Alright girls; I was, like, walking around with Match, earlier today..." she reached into the bag.
"And, like, I found something that seemed really...suspicious."

Everyone in the group exchanged nervous glances.

"What..was it..?" Book whispered.

"It has something to do with what's going on..."

Pencil reached into the bag.

Ruby nervously took Book's hand and leaned in close to her; Book, smiling a bit, put an arm around her in comfort.

Pencil snatched a small tag out of her bag, and dangled it in front of the freesmarters.

"BEHOLD!"

The room stayed quiet, all eyes on Pencil.

"Pencil; you dragged us here, for the fifth time today, to show us. A tag." Book gritted through her teeth. Pencil scoffed.

"Not just ANY tag, Book! If you look closely, you'll see that someone wrote Firey's name on it!" She held it up.

"This could be a MAJOR clue into the so called 'accident'."

Bubble sighed. "What if it's foir something else Pencil? Like, a gift Foirey was supposed to get..."

Pencil looked up, beginning to get lost in her thoughts. "It could be...but, look, if it really WAS a gift for Firey, wouldn't it say 'To:Firey", or something?"

Match grabbed the tag from her hands, as her eyes scanned through it.

"The only thing it, like, says, is Firey's name....and something that's, like, scribbled out."

"Then its a abandoned gift tag that someone dropped or something." Book sighed out.

"No, it's a clue of the murderer!"

"It's a GIFT TAG!"

"CLUE!"

"GIFT TAG!"

"CLUE!"

Pin could hear the freesmarters arguing from above. She rolled her eyes.

Stupid freesmarters...

Whatever. Hopefully the place will quiet down when she's finished with this.

She looked down at the small piece of paper in her hands. A list of names was scribbled onto the paper, with Firey's scribbled out. Pin

took out a pen, and scanned through the list.

There, was Rocky's name, written with shiny, black ink.

Pin smiled a bit, before she harshly scribbled out his name, the ink bleeding through the page. She sighed, and looked through once again.

"I have to..at least, get rid of one more weak object from here..to at least make it look like..an accident.." she muttered.

But the others know it's a murderer.

She sighed.

"What am I going to do..?" She mumbled.

She continued to read through the list, before a loud yell made Pin crumple up the paper.
"ROOOBEEEE!!!"

Pin looked up furiously at Flower, who was waving madly towards the top of the Yoyle Needy.
Her voice was obnoxiously loud enough for Ruby to hear; she could see a small gleaming gem waving down towards them.

"Hi Flower!!" Her voice echoed.

Flower beamed with happiness before looking over at Pin, smirking.

"Jealous, much?" She snickered.

She walked past her, shoving her nearly out of the way before laughing a bit.

"Out of my way, Pin! I need my space..."

Pin, fury now in her eyes, looked down at her crumpled mess of a list.

There, she furiously circled Flower's name in bright, red ink.

(editing ice in 2024: fixing these paragraphs. the urge to rewrite this is so strong, I swear.)

I am so sorry but CoinPin real
Anyways HELLO!!! I bring you part.....12? I think , of Fear Garden!
This is really fun to write tbh, and I'm excited to write the next part since they'll be some...stuff, happening.
I'm also thinking about making more stories on here, like...a BFB one, II, etc.
But!!! That's for the future!
That's all I really have to say, but I hope you enjoy this part!!

Thanks for enjoying this story ajdhsjhsh
~Ice

Accidents Happen!

"Gelatin! What did I just TELL you?!"

"Oh, cmon Fries! Please? Just one!"

"For the last time, NO!"

Fries grabbed the bright, green bag labeled "Growtatoes", and ripped a corner open.

"Let those grow! Those are for me; I have to make more so I don't die off!" He lamented.
Gelatin scoffed and plopped down beside him.

"Can you at least plant some for the rest of us?" He mumbled, his eyes attempting to stare into Fries's.

Fries hesitated, but let out a sigh.

"Listen. Once I get these growtatoes growing, I'll grow a separate patch for the rest of us. But you HAVE to let these growtatoes GROW." He sprinkled a few seeds into a small hole he dug.

"Did I hear someone say, 'growtatoes'?"

Gelatin and Fries both looked up, to see Pin and Coiny, both walking towards the small garden.
Gelatin immediately bounced up and immediately pulled Fries up with him. Fries grumbled and gave him an annoyed look.

"Well, our LOVELY friend Fries has informed ME that he'll be planting some new Growtatoes for US! Well, when he's finished with his, of course."

Fries pried Gelatin's arm off and dusted himself off, sighing.

"Yes, but you guys better not ruin my potatoes. Or else you guys won't get ANY." He grabbed his trowel and twirled it in between his fingers.

"You guys can...hang around though." He blushed a bit.
"It gets too quiet sometimes."

A grin slowly grew on Gelatin's face, as Fries gave him a dirty look.

"What?"

"Awww, you actually like us!"

Fries rolled his eyes, and patted his head.

"You guys just keep the quiet away. It's nice to have you guys around." He leaned in close.
"Don't tell the others though; I won't ever hear the end of it." He let out a chuckle.

Gelatin nodded and gave him a 'salute'. "Sir! Yes sir!"

"Okay Gelatin, you can stop." He sighed, and began to dig up the seeds.

Pin snickered, as she saw Gelatin watch Fries work on the garden. A sudden thought popped into her head, and she turned towards Coiny, who was beside her.

"Hey, I just remembered that I have to check up on my garden. You mind holding up here while I go check?" She asked innocently.

Coiny smiled, and held her hand, giving it a gentle squeeze.

"Anything for the lovely W.O.A.H Bunch captain..." He gave her hand a kiss. Pin felt her cheeks glow as she let a smile grow on her face.

"Coiny-"

He chuckled, and stood straight up.

"Of course of course. Go check up on your plants. I'll be here." He

leaned in, and gave her another kiss.

"Bye scarlet~" he whispered.

Pin let out a laugh before gently shoving him off.

"I'll see you in a bit.." she smiled, but felt a dark heaviness in the back of her mind.

Hopefully I'll see you happy like this again.

Before someone else is found dead.

"Hey, Ruby?"

"Yeah?"

"Do you think we're gonna get...murdered?"

Ruby shot up, and stared down at Book, shock filling her eyes.

"Book...."

"It was just a thought!" She put her hands up, but stared at the sky.

"It was just a dumb thought." She mumbled.

Ruby frowned, and grabbed her hands, yanking her up. Book let out a gasp at the sudden yank, blinking a bit before looking into Ruby's eyes.

"Listen.." Her voice was quiet.

"We're not gonna die, Book. I'm sure that...they're going to be caught, and we're going to be okay." She gave Book's hands a soft squeeze. Book felt herself blush a bit.

"But-"

"But nothing." Ruby cut her off.

"We're gonna live and you're gonna like it. Besides, if we die off...I'm pretty sure we won't be able to come back." Ruby's eyes looked down.

Book sighed, and looked away, feeling herself blush even more.

Why was she blushing.

This wasn't funny at all.

Why was she blushing?!

"Book?"

Book shook her head, and looked back at Ruby.

"Y-Yeah?" She stuttered.

Ruby looked outwards towards the forest, and not looking away, she mumbled,
"Do you think Evil Leafy is the murderer?"

Book looked out towards the forest as well, and shrugged a bit.

"I..don't know Ruby. Evil Leafy is dangerous, sure, but these two 'incidents' were too planned out for them to be natural, such as..Evil Leafy."

Ruby turned towards Book, her eyes now filling with fear.

"Is it one of us..?!" She whispered.

"No...no, Ruby..." she pulled her in for a hug, feeling Ruby's body tremble in fear.

"Listen to me. Soon, this will all blow over, okay? Soon, they're going to be caught, and...no more damage will be done." She mumbled. She felt Ruby's arms tighten around her chest, as she winced.

"Book...?" She tightened her hug.

"Promise me you won't die."

Book winced harder, feeling her cover bend in.

"R-Ruby-"

"I just..don't want to lose you, your my best friend..." she felt her eyes well up with tears.
"I don't want to lose Flower...I don't want to lose the alliance..I don't want to lose you.."

"I-I can't breathe-"

Ruby's eyes widened as she quickly let go of Book, moving back a bit. Book wheezed a little and straitened out her back, wincing.

"S-sorry!" Ruby spat out. Book smiled a bit.

"It's okay, it's okay..." she laughed a little.

"For a Ruby, you're really strong.."

Ruby smiled, feeling her cheeks turn pink.
"Oh, stop.."

Book laughed a bit, and soon, Ruby joined in, forgetting all about the murders, and the deaths.

Pin sighed, as she looked through the small box.

Tools were cluttered everywhere, dirt and mud covering each one. Her shoulder bag laid beside her, containing the knife, gloves, and some plants she had.

All she needed now, was a trowel.

"Dammit!" She sat down.

"Where is it?!"

She angrily shut the small box, and grabbed her bag. She had looked everywhere in the garden, yet she couldn't find that STUPID trowel.

She sighed, and shook her head. She had no choice but to go back to the city and look for it there.

Now the next murder had to be delayed.

She grumbled angrily as she stomped out of her garden, beginning to take the path down the mountain.

"Who could've taken my STUPID trowel?!" She kicked a rock.

"Fries has his own damn trowel; who else decided to plant some crap in the city?!" She was boiling with all of this sudden rage that had hit her out of nowhere. Her fists were clenched as she shut her eyes, feeling hot tears prickle at them.

"Fuck..." She huffed out, collapsing onto the ground. She held herself close as she could feel her heart racing inside of her chest.

"Today was supposed to be it, today was supposed to be IT dammit!" Her voice shuddered as she felt a tear roll down her cheek. Everything about this was starting to nip away at her sanity, as well as her mental health in total. It takes so much energy to plan and go through with a murder; and she already bulldozed through two herself. She looked up, her eyes now overflowing with tears.

Should she just give up? There has to be another way, there HAS to be another way..

She looked around, surrounded with bushes and plants. She crawled up towards them, and began to examine their colors and leaves, trying to take a guess at what type of wild plants they were.

A bundle of white, bell-shaped plants stood out to pin. She gasped, as she gently brushed her finger over the soft, silky petal.

"Lilies of the Valley...?" She whispered. "But how...?"

She looked behind her, and looked at the plants. The entry way of the garden had new life growing everywhere, and Pin was too distressed

to even noticed. She stood up, and rushed over towards another bush of plants.

"Oleanders..." Her eyes sparkled in awe.

"Did my...garden...make these...?" She whispered.

Yes. They did.

"WHAT?!" She jumped, her head whirling around. Yet, there was no one...

Rocky's limbs. They brought so much more life to the garden than you thought. Firey's brought plants, Rocky brought some tasty and hazardous plants; some that are safe to consume, others that are not..

Pin's eyes widened in realization.

"Thats...THATS IT!" She yelled out. She took the knife out of her bag, and triumphantly threw it down onto the soil. She laughed, and twirled around.

"I DON'T HAVE TO KILL ANYMORE! I DON'T HAVE TO USE MY KNIFES AND TOOLS TO CUT OPEN OTHER CONTESTANTS!" She giggled.

"All I have to do, is use one of these lovely plants Rocky helped me grow, and feed them to a special someone back in the crowd! She can't reject one of my meals; I'll simply lace it with one of these amazing plants...." She stroked the bushes.

"And it looks like I'll have a new 'plant', for my garden..." She let a giggle escape her lips.

"Fiery and Rocky won't feel so alone anymore...they'll get such a *beautiful* addition to the garden-"

"Eh..?!"

Pin's eyes snapped open as she turned around, and she felt her entire body turn cold.

Woody.

He held the trowel in his hands, with a potted plant in the other. And his eyes stared at Pin,

horror, disbelief, and fear shining within them.

(2024 editing ice: finally done. you did not see me.)

Hello!!

Sorry for the cliffhanger, but ya gotta do what ya gotta do skjdhgvsh

anyways!! I hope you guys enjoyed this! I may also make a new book about a object show I am currently making, just to upload silly scenarios of my lil characters aaa

ALSO I SAW THAT THIS BOOK WAS NUMBER ONE IN THE BFB TAG AND???! ALL I HAVE TO SAY IS THANK YOU???? SO MUCH?????? I NEVER THOUGHT THIS SILLY LITTLE BOOK WOULD GO FAR KJHGFDXSDCFGHJK

THANK YOU GUYS!!!!! Enjoy!!!!

~Ice

Didn't Expect the Unexpected.

****GORE WARNING. READ AT YOUR OWN RISK.****

"Shit.." was all Pin could say, as she saw Woody standing behind her, hearing everything.

He slowly began backing away, the trowel slipping out of his hands, as well as the potted plant. He pointed towards her direction, and let out a whine of fear.

"Woody..Woody wait-"

"NO!" He quickly sprinted the opposite direction, to a different path that returned to Yoyle City. Pin quickly sprinted after him, her heart pounding painfully in her chest. She leaped over and grabbed his wrist, yanking him back to her. He shrieked in fear, and struggled to get himself loose from Pin's grip. Her eyes blazed with fury and concern as she tightened her grip.

"WHERE DO YOU THINK YOU'RE GOING." Her voice cracked a bit. Woody's body trembled violently as he began to whimper out of pain, tugging his arm with all of his might to try and run back.

And warn everyone.

He shook his head out of fear, as she yanked him closer.

"Don't you DARE tell anyone, you-"

Woody cried out angrily, and bit her wrist, letting his teeth sink deep into her skin. Pin let out a yelp as she yanked her hand back, feeling tears sting her eyes. Woody coughed a bit, and quickly sprinted down the path even more, feeling panic rush through his veins. He ran deeper into the path, where trees began to block out the beaming sunlight that hugged the mountain. As his surroundings began to get

darker and darker, he slowed down, and leaned against a tree, wheezing and letting air back into his throbbing lungs.

His eyes quickly scanned around. All he could see was trees and bushes. Just trees and bushes...and silence. He looked down, and saw a jagged rock by his foot. With a trembling hand, he gently picked it up, and held it in his hands, deciding to keep it as some sort of self-defense.

Hopefully, he could defend himself. If his stupid anxiety stayed out of the way...

After a few minutes, he slowly began to make his way back, cautiously looking around and making sure he wasn't being followed. He looked up at the crooked branches of the trees, and stared at all of the leaves dangling from them. He shuddered.

He was so sure that Leafy was behind all of this. Leafy, or Evil Leafy. One of the two.

But Pin...?

He shuddered, clenching the rock harder. No. He can't think about it anymore. The damage was done, and now no one can't do anything about it.

At least he, and the others, can avenge Firey and Rocky's death by letting them know that-

"**YOU!**"

Woody felt someone slam into his back, as the two began to tumble down the path. They growled angrily, and pinned Woody down on the ground. Woody opened his eyes and shrieked once more, seeing that it was Pin, her wrist indented with teeth marks and dots of clotted blood.

"Woody, I am BEGGING YOU-" Pin's voice trembled.

"Please. Don't tell anyone; I-I'll stop! I won't hurt you if you just STAY QUIET,,"

Woody's eyebrow's furrowed together as he clenched the rock in his hands. He remained silent, staring at her with a cold, angry stare. She let out an angry scream as she clenched his wrists even tighter.

"GOD DAMNIT - SPEAK! SAY SOMETHING!" Her voice echoed through the woods. Her eyes were widened with panic as she stared down at Woody, her arms beginning to tremble.

Woody felt his body slowly going cold from the anxiety spike, but he still stared her down, more anger rising in his eyes. This seemed to weaken her, as he felt her grip slowly starting to loosen.

"Pin?"

Both pairs of eyes looked towards the source of the voice, fear in one, and surprise in the other.

"Is that you? I heard a loud yell, and-"

"EHH!!!"

"GET OUT OF HERE!"

The object didn't even have a chance to step out of the shadows, before a gasp escaped their lips.

"Oh- I- Uh-" They laughed a bit awkwardly,

"I- I see you guys are uh- heh- "busy"- um-"

"NO, WAIT-"

"BYE!"

Scurried footsteps were heard, getting quieter and quieter as they dashed away from the scene. Pin grunted angrily, as she looked down at Woody.

"Fine. Have it your way then." She looked at her side bag, and slowly reached in to grab her knife. She felt her head pound painfully as she clenched the knife she had.

"If you won't keep quiet..." She whispered.

"I'll-"

Woody quickly swung the rock towards Pin's eye, and smashed the rock onto her face. She screamed in pain as she fell back, feeling tears of blood pour out of her left eye. She grunted, as she looked up.

Woody scrambled up, and began to run off again, trying so hard to increase his speed and tell everyone the truth back in the city.

"THAT'S **ENOUGH!**"

Pin grabbed the knife, and swung it towards Woody's direction. Even with a bloody eye, she managed to win her aim, as the knife stabbed Woody in the back. He let to an awful wheeze, as he collapsed onto the ground. Grunts of pain escaped his lips as he began to drag himself down the path. He could see the clearing just ahead, the city is right there..he can make it..

Pin staggered his way, and chuckled quietly as she saw him whimpering, and dragging his body towards the city. She could hear his struggled breaths, as he clawed at the earth, trying to pull his way to life.

That's all he wants. He doesn't care anymore, he just wants to live, please, just let him live, just let him live to see the others just, one more time....

These thoughts were silenced as he felt something press onto his back. He spat out blood, as he wheezed harder.

"Leaving so soon, huh..?" Pin whispered. Woody trembled, as he clawed at the ground, whimpering and letting a few tears fall down, staining the dirt below him. He let out a raspy plea, for her to let him go, that he simply wanted to live. Pin laughed.

"I was just like you... so scared..." She leaned down towards his level.

"So small..."

Woody shuddered, as he felt Pin's fingers brush down his wooden

back. She gripped the handle of the knife, and grinned, as she forcefully yanked it out. Woody let out a lout scream, before Pin shoved his head into the ground. His screams became muffled as she laughed a bit.

"You know, you were always so annoying..." She grabbed him up, and tossed him down across from her. He grunted, as he tried to scuttle away from her. Pin quickly sat on top of him, and held him down by the neck.

"I'd love to fix that for you." She smiled, feeling a heaviness in her mind, that simply blocked herself from hearing her speak, or even see, what she was doing. She gripped the knife, and dipped it into Woody's mouth. Woody began to scream in fear, quickly catching on about what she was going to do.

"It's time to shut up, Woody..."

And with that, she dug the knife into his cheek, and slit his mouth, from the corner to his side. He let out choked scream, as he felt blood pour down his chin. She turned the knife, and did the same with the other cheek, leaving him with a sickening, bloody grin. He no longer screamed, but instead, let out soft chokes and whimpers. Pin frowned.

"Hm. Didn't work?"

She let out a sigh.

"Ah well. Lets try this, then..."

She hovered the knife over Woody's throat, before suddenly swiping it down, leaving a large slit. Blood began to gush out of the open wound, as Woody's eyes widened. His body began to twitch violently, and Pin let put a happy sigh as she watched him thrash around like a fish out of water.

After a few minutes, Woody's twitching died down, as he laid still. Blood streamed out of his mouth, and his eyes stared up at the sky, foggy and clouded with fear. Pin's left eye let out more bloody tears, as she sat down.

"It worked."

She stared down at her hands, seeing the bloody knife just inches away from her. Her eyes began to darken.

"It..It..."

She blinked, as the heaviness escaped from her mind. She blinked a bit, before she winced, and lifted her trembling hand towards her bloodied eye. She felt the liquid, and looked down at her hand, horror slowly painting over her face.

Her wrist was swollen and bloodied, with fresh blood now covering her fingers. She looked down at her legs, which were covered in the scars and bruises that she had earned herself after tumbling down the patch with Woody.

She then looked at Woody, and felt her throat close up. She saw the blood that leaked from his body and throat, and felt the fear that fogged over his eyes. She looked at his wrists.

Red and swollen. From the grip that she had on him.

Pin couldn't do it anymore. She leaned over and began to throw up, letting everything out of her stomach. In between, she let out guttering weeps and cries, before she was forcefully cut off by coughing fits, and more puke rising up from her stomach.

After a few minutes, she dragged her head up, her vision tilting and fading away from her. Her throat burned as her head pounded with questions and waves of pain, and she looked down. She was a complete mess. She couldn't hide any of this. The scars, the eye, the cuts...

She gulped. There was only one thing she could do now.

She grabbed the knife, and slowly dragged it along the ground that Woody was laying beside.

I'm.

She felt her vision fade even more, as she clenched her teeth. She

could do this. She could do this.

so.

She scratched out the rest of the message, before slowly putting the knife in Woody's hands. She curled his lifeless fingers around the handle, and forced herself up. The entire world tilted towards one side, as she gagged. She grabbed her bag with the tools, and slowly began to stagger towards the bright light.

She felt the world tilt even more, as more blood gushed from her eye. A tear slipped out of her good eye, as dizziness hit her hard. She opened her eye, and continued to stagger forward.

sorry.

Pin wheezed a bit, before she suddenly heard a voice echo and bounce around in her head. She looked up, and saw two blurry blobs slowly growing and bigger towards her. She tilted her head slowly.

It.

"P i n..!" A voice echoed once again. She squeezed her eye shut, and then slowly opened it again.

Was.

She reached out towards the colors, her limps and staggering growing heavier and heavier.

Me.

Everything suddenly faded to black, as Pin felt a sudden gush of wind blow on her face.

The message, already echoing through the grounds of the earth.

I'm so sorry. It was me.

-

GOLLY GEE this was a long one. this had. a lot. and honestly it was sort of Pin's breaking point.

But! I bring you! Part. 14? of Fear Garden!

Woody is d e c e a s e d. The 'message' he wrote was the last lines of the chapter, basically the words above lol

or, in better terms, it could've been like "woody, look out, pin's behind you! oh god, he has AirPods in, oh god, oh fu"

im so sorry

anyways!!! enjoy this part of the story!!! thank you guys for the nice comments n stuff aksjhdgdsh ＜3

see you guys!

~Ice

That's The Tea!

Muffled noises began to fill Pin's head as she furrowed her eyebrows together. She opened her eyes sleepily, and could barely make out anything that was around her. All she could see was blurs; so many grey blobs and, every now and then, fuzzy blobs moving around. She let out a dazed mumble, as she slowly lifted her arm. She began to try and shift so she could lay on her side, but a wave of pain soon crashed onto her. She let out a yelp, as she collapsed back onto her backside.

The noises began to fade in more clearly.

"Pin! Pin, take it easy..!"

"I think she needs more anesthetic. TB!"

"Guys, relax. She's simply waking up. Let her readjust to everything, you've drugged her up enough to a point where she could pass out again."

Pin felt a pair of hands rub her arm gently. She let her eyes flutter open, and as her vision began to clear up, she looked up.
Coiny's eyes greeted hers as he let a sad smile grow on his face.

"Hey.." he whispered, moving his hand to her cheek and stroking it gently. This made a wobbly smile grow on Pin's face, as she closed her eyes and sighed.
She liked this; really liked this.

"Well? Is she getting up, or what?"
Ugh.

Pin blinked a bit, and looked around the room, dazed.
Golf Ball was sitting on top of Tennis Ball, a clipboard in hand. Fries was beside them, holding some rubbing alcohol and cotton balls. He

gave her a smile.

"Glad to see your up. We thought you'd slip into a coma, with the amount of medicine they put in you." He placed the bottle and bag on a side table.
Pin could already feel the effects of the medicine crawling in her, as her words quickly became more slurred and sluggish.

"Wha..." was all she was able to mumble out.

Golf Ball jumped down and walked to the side of her bed.
"You're in the lab. We figured we'd patch you up and give you some medicine; the injuries you had weren't fatal, but we had to do some work on them. Especially..." she made a gesture towards Pin's face.
Pin lifted her hand up, and her fingers brushed against a soft, bundle of bandages that was wrapped around her eye. She blinked even more; confusion eating her away with the antibiotics.
"How did...why..." she looked down at her wrists. Bandages hugged them, the white slowly fading to a light shade of pink from the blood. Bandages were on her legs, covering the scratches and cuts she had before. She looked at Coiny; fear slowly starting to eat at her as she was realizing what was done.
Coiny put a hand on her cheek, and gave her a reassuring smile.
"Hey...it's okay, you're okay.." he whispered. He let his forehead touch hers, as she felt her throat tighten.

Memories began to flood back into her dull mind, as she began to realize what she had done.
Woody.
The plants.
The message.

She had to make up an act; she had to make one up now. There was clearly enough evidence that could lead to them finding out that it was her. She closed her eyes for a moment, before she suddenly sprung up, putting on a small act for the others.

"No..no NO, HE- HE's GONNA FIND ME, HE'S..." Her voice was panicked yet slow, still not being able to speak well from the side affects of the medication. She looked around and began to get up quickly, wincing in pain.

"He's GONNA KILL ME..." she wailed out.
At this point, Coiny and the others were all around her, concern and suspicion growing on their faces. Coiny gently grabbed Pin's shoulders as he laid her back down onto the cot.
"Woah, Pin, take it easy..." Coiny gave GB a worried look as she sighed.

"She has to explain what happened back there. That was no accident this time, and she is our only witness." Golf Ball looked towards Tennis Ball.
"That was clearly planned and carried out."

"But are you sure we should ask her in THIS state? She can barely speak for coin's sake!" He made a gesture towards Pin, who's eye was closing, and then snapping back, wide awake. Her mumbled were incoherent as her body trembled in fear. Golf Ball looked down at her, and rolled her eyes.

"I guess...you're right." She mumbled. Tennis Ball looked at the notes GB had, and looked back towards Coiny.

"Make sure she gets plenty of rest so the effects of the anesthesia can wear out more quickly. Don't mention anything about what happened back there either; we all need to know what happened, and we don't want her to either forget, or give it all away and not speak again." He instructed. Coiny nodded, as he held Pin's frail hand, rubbing it slowly.

"I'll do my best.." Coiny sighed out. Golf Ball let out a yawn, as she looked over at the clock on her wall.

"Perfect. The day is coming to a close; I think we all could go for some sleep right now."

Fries walked over to Coiny, and put a hand on his shoulder.
"Keep an eye on her. I'm gonna head back before it gets too dark out there." Fries looked at Pin, who was still mumbling, but had her eye closed. Coiny nodded, and looked at him.

"Thanks Fries..be careful out there." His voice has a sad tone to it, as Fries sympathetically patted his back, before making his way out of

the room. Golf Ball led him out, rambling on about how if he were to see anything, to haul ass back to them.

Tennis Ball began to walk out, but was stopped by Coiny's weakened voice.

"This is my fault."

Tennis Ball turned around, a confused expression on his face.
"What?"

"This is my fault." Coiny looked at him, his face darkened and exhausted.

"I should've went with her to the garden, I shouldn't have let her go alone with this situation.." His voice began to wobble, as he looked back at Pin.

Tennis Ball walked back, and stood by Coiny, a sympathetic expression on his face.

"Coiny, none of us knew that this would happen." He looked up.
"Although with this situation..." he stopped, as he noticed Coiny glaring daggers at him. Tennis Ball let out a nervous chuckle as he stepped back.

"B-But look on the bright side!" He exclaimed.
"She wasn't terribly hurt! And she isn't dead!"

"But what if SHE WAS?!" Coiny yelled back at him. This made TB jump.
"I can't imagine what would've happened if we decided to look for her later, what if we found her and it was too late?!" He hid his face.

"I can't believe someone as frail as WOODY would do this!" He let a tear slip out of his eye, as his hand balled up into a fist. Tennis Ball sighed, and stood up.

"Listen, let's not think about that right now. She's here, and she's alive. She's breathing. We all did what we could.." he stopped.
"But don't blame this on yourself Coiny. This kind of craziness would have happened anyways; and who knows. Maybe it wasn't Woody

who did it." He closed his eyes, in thought.

"Maybe someone else did it; and tried to kill Pin-"

"DON'T." Coiny put a hand up, silencing Tennis Ball mid-sentence.
"J-Just..Don't remind me." He mumbled.

"Sorry..." Tennis Ball looked over at him.
"But, for now, let's just focus on her well-being. She's going to be okay, she just...needs some rest. We all need rest, after this craziness of a day." He yawned.

Coiny looked down at Pin, and sighed.
"I guess you're right..." was all he was able to mumble. Tennis Ball gave him a kind smile, and Coiny exchanged a smile back.

"TENNIS BALL!" Golf Ball's voice echoed through out the building.

"COME HERE! I NEED YOU TO DO SOMETHING FOR ME!"

Tennis Ball sighed as he looked back towards Coiny.

"You rest up too; she'll be out like a light soon. I'm gonna lock the lab down, and we'll be upstairs if both of you need anything." And with that, Tennis Ball left, shuttling the door behind him.

Coiny looked down, and frowned at Pin. She was continuing to mumble, but her eye was still closed. He held her hand, and gave it a squeeze.

"I'm sorry Pin..." he whispered.
"I'm sorry I couldn't do enough to help you..."

Pin's mumbling soon came to a stop, as she heard Coiny's voice. The room doin fell into a silence, besides the soft chirps of the crickets outside.
And soon, a sniffle.

Coiny angrily wiped his eyes and held her hand.

"Ugh; I feel terrible. Angry? Confused...." he spoke to himself. Pin let her eye slowly drag open as she looked over towards him.

"It's all my fault..I'm a terrible...b..Boy.." his voice faded as he tried to say the word. He wasn't used to it; he never imagined he would be dating such a heroic leader like Pin.
His eyes soon darted towards Pin as he felt her hand brush against his cheek. She smiled weakly as her eye began to sparkle with tears.

"Hey..." she whispered.
"I..It's ok..."

Coiny put his hand on hers, as he shook his head.
"I-It ISN'T Pin! I should've went with you! Or looked for you earlier! Or- Or-"

He was suddenly shushed by Pin, who put her hand on his mouth.

"I'm...I'm okay..alright?" She mumbled.
"I'm hurt...sure...but..I'll be ok...don't..blame yourself..."

Coiny sadly embraced her, giving her cheek a kiss. She smiled even more, feeling herself melt into the warmth of his arms. She felt so...safe. She felt like nothing was ever going to hurt her, when she was with Coiny.

But that was the issue. No one *would* be able to hurt her.

Except herself.

"Flower, please stop, Book didn't do anything-"

"BOOK CAN KISS MY ASS!"

Ruby sighed angrily and crossed her arms. Arguing with Flower is like fighting with a fire-breathing dragon, especially when she was in a bad mood.

"Flower, me and Book were just hanging out! We just wanted some time together since we barely hang out, singe they're "alternates"." She used air-quotation marks at the word "alternate". Flower rolled her eyes and scoffed.

"And you guys were out for HOURS! I was worried!" Flower stomped her foot. Ruby's hands soon balled up into fists, as she leaned on one side.

"And what is THAT supposed to mean." Ruby gritted through her teeth.

Flower opened her mouth to speak, but nothing came out. She stood there, and stayed quiet, trying to find the words she could say to Ruby. Ruby tapped her foot impatiently.

"Well?"

"I just didn't want you to leave me for her."

Ruby's eyes widened as she stared at Flower in disbelief.

"Huh?!"

Flower glared down at her. "Do you REALLY want me to repeat myself?!" She snapped. Ruby simply stared up at her, confused and oblivious to what she meant. Flower rubbed her temples and sighed.

"I didn't want you going with Book...because I feel like you're gonna leave me for her."

Flower stared towards her side in shame, before she heard quiet snickering. She looked down at Ruby, and saw her laughing into her hand. Flower felt her cheeks turn red as she crossed her arms.

"H-..Hey! What's so funny?!" She screeched out. Ruby laughed a bit more, before wiping her eyes.

"Flower, are you serious?" She giggled. "I would never do that! I'm not that type of object to do that, thats just really low!" She gently took both of Flower's hands, and held them in her own.

"I love you, and only you. You're beautiful, and I would never leave you for someone else..." She looked down though.

"But I want you to let me do things on my own. Like, let me hang out with my alliance, and my friends, without worrying so much. I just

want you to trust me, because..." She looked towards her side.

"I just don't think its right to control my every move, y'know...?"

Flower gave her a saddened look, and sighed, sitting down onto the sidewalk. Ruby did the same, as she crossed her legs and looked towards her way.

"...I'm sorry Ruby." Flower put a hand on her head. "I really have to check myself, I can't do that to you...." She looked down.

"I want to become a better person, I really do; hell, I want to be apart of your alliance with you, and be friends with everyone! But its just..." She sighed.

Ruby patted her back, and gave her a reassuring smile.

"Hey, I understand...I know change is hard, and I know your trying your best to become someone even better. But there's gonna be times where the others just...don't believe you." She looked across the street, towards the woods that were a bit distant.

"Trust me. I try my best to not slip up and make mistakes anymore; for the sake of the alliance. But sometimes, I slip up and just..." She sighed heavily.

"I have to deal with everyone yelling at me."

Flower looked at Ruby, and put a hand on hers. Ruby looked down, and a small smile crept up onto her face. Flower giggled.

"You're cute when you're flustered."

"Mmmm, aw stop..." Ruby gushed, and giggled even more. She looked back at her, beginning to focus once again.

"But, yeah. Change takes time, but in the end, it'll be fantastic. There will be slip ups, but with your non-slip shoes, I'm sure you'll make it through!" She gently punched her arm, and Flower laughed, wrapping her arms around Ruby and letting out a relieved sigh.

"...Thank you Ruby." She whispered.

"I promise I'll try my best to be more better with you."

"You're welcome-"

"GUYS!"

The two looked up, and saw a few figures running towards them.

The alliance.

"Oh, hey guys! What's u-"

"Like, there's no time for greetings, Ruby! You've got to hear, like, what we saw!" Match prated on. Pencil nodded.

"Ooh! So is this gossip, then?" Flower questioned.

"Nono! I think the right term is 'tea'!" Ruby exclaimed.

"Is this tea?"

"Oi, guess so..." Bubble shrugged. Book peered over at the two, waving towards Ruby. Ruby waved back, and Flower gave Book a kind, yet crooked smile. Book chuckled a bit.

"SO! Our little alternates decided to head out into the woods, just because they wanted some time out.." Pencil made a gesture towards Ice Cube and Book, who made their way to the front.

"And, like, you HAVE to hear about what they saw!"

Book coughed a bit, and looked up.

"We were heading up to the mountain because Icey wanted to see the sunset, right?" Book told the others. Everyone nodded.

"And as we were heading up, I hear some noise..." Ice Cube added on.

"So I decided to check it out, but because of that, I kinda drifted away from Book. But, as I went to see what the noise was, I saw..."

"Yes?" Ruby was eagerly listening.

"I saw..."

"YES???" Everyone yelled out at once. Ice Cube felt a mischievous grin grow onto her face, as she leaned in closely.

"I saw Pin and Woody, and I think they were kissing."

Ruby and Flower gasped, before looking at each other.

"But isn't Pin dating Coiny? How could she do that?" Ruby asked, pity filling her voice.

"Oooooh, Coiny is gonna be soooo mad..." Flower sneered.

Book cleared her throat, and got the two to look at her.

"But, as you guys know, Woody is dead, and Pin is hurt. So, our guess is that they were murdered by Leafy."

"But are you sure it was Leafy?" Ice Cube's tone changed.

"She couldn't have done that..."

Book sighed, and looked back up.

"I....don't know Icy. I heard Golf Ball say that Woody was the murderer, because there was a message on the ground saying 'I'm so sorry, it was me.'. But that could've been *easily* forged." Ruby looked at Book, and raised her hand. Book laughed a bit.

"Yes, Ruby?"

"Um, haven't you guys suspected Pin? She wasn't killed, she was only hurt..."

Book thought for a moment, and looked around, meeting everyone's eyes.

"Maybe it could be. But I don't want to assume anything until we find proof. So listen here."

Everyone leaned in close.

"Tomorrow we're gonna question her about it. We'll take her out of the science lab, or we'll just make sure she's all alone. If she's the culprit, well...we'll turn her in. If she tries any funny stuff...." She paused.

"Let's just say that Coiny won't be very *happy*, to hear what we saw."

Wig! I love writing

anyways, hello! I'm glad you guys are enjoying the story so far, this was a LONG part of the story

But yeah lol Pin is fucked

also sorry guys but flowby..,,,,,, i love flowby

anyways hope you enjoy! Thank you all for the nice comments, I try my best ＜3

Have a good evening!

~Ice

Kidnapped

The air was cool and crisp, as moonlight poured into the small room, letting off a soft glow.
Light snoring echoed inside the four walls, breaking the calming silence, as Coiny laid beside Pin, a blanket hugging both of them. Pin shifted a bit, letting an exhausted sigh escape her lips as she continued to doze off. Coiny shifted onto his side, and wrapped his arm around Pin.
She snuggled close to him, enjoying the warmth that he gave off to her. Her mouth curled up a bit, as they both continued to sleep.

.....

Click, click.

A strange clicking sound began to crawl around the room, as the doorknob carefully twisted and turned. A few more clicks were heard, before a heavy click gave in, and the jiggles of the doorknob went silent.
The door slowly creaked open, as the moonlight poured inside the room, as well as revealing a dark shadow in the doorway.

"*Alright, try to pry Coiny off of her. We'll grab her ourselves."*

"Where's Bubble?"

"She's back at the basement. She's keeping watch so we can get this over and done with."

"Okay, that sounds good."

"If they wake up, knock 'em out. You know what to do."

The whispers sent chills down Pin, as she shifted and felt Coiny's arms plop onto the bed. She let out a sigh, and continued to sleep.

The three then go to work. Ruby carefully leaned over, and carefully lifted Coiny's arms off. She looked up, and nodded towards Pencil and Match.

"Go!" She whispered.

Pencil quickly took out a cloth, and carefully pressed it onto her face. Pin, eyes scrunched, before they snapped open, as her pupils darted towards the shadows standing in front of her. She turned and grabbed Pencil's wrist, and began to tug at it in panic. Muffled yells began to break the silence, as she began to thrash around.
Match quickly grabbed her legs and arms, and tried to hold her down. The bed began to shake, as Match looked up at Pencil.

"Hurry up! She's gonna wake him-"

"Wh-...Wha...?"

They all froze, as all eyes shot on Coiny. Ruby was frozen in place, as she stared down at him.
Coiny yawned, before he turned towards Ruby, and slowly wrapped his arms around her. Ruby's eyes widened as she shook her head frantically.

"*Hurry up, HURRY UP HURRY UP!*" Ruby quietly shrieked.

Pencil looked down, and smirked as she saw Pin's eyes slowly coming to a close. She let out muffled groans, and tried to speak out Coiny's name, but it came out as a soft muffled noise. Her thrashing died down, as her grip on Pencil's arm loosened. After a few seconds, her arm collapsed, and her eyes finally shut.

Pencil carefully removed the cloth from Pin's face, and quickly lifted her up. She turned towards Match.

"*Go help Ruby! Get his hands off of her!*"

Match nodded, and quickly ran over to the other side. Ruby was trying to pick his arms off, before she turned towards Match.

She thought for a moment, and quickly grabbed a pillow. She looked at Ruby.

"*Take his hands off! I'll shove this in his arms instead, you just go and run!"* She instructed. Ruby nodded, and looked down, her arms shaking. She took a deep breath, and quickly broke out of his arms, and collapsing onto the ground, covering her eyes.

A shuffling was heard, before Coiny yawned and turned onto his side, hugging the pillow that Match rammed into his arms. The room fell quiet once more, as Match grabbed Ruby and yanked her up.

"*Like, seriously?! Cmon, let's go!"* Match quickly led Ruby out, as the door slammed shut.

A heavy, dark silence filled the room, as the moonlight began to fade away into the sky, leaving the room in complete darkness.

"...."

"*Miss me?~"*

Pin's eyes snapped open, as she frantically looked around the room. The voice echoed in her head, as her lungs and mind pounded painfully. She looked around, quickly trying to figure out what happened, and where she was.

But nothing came out to her; all she could see was darkness. She tried to reach up to her eyes and take off what was blocking her vision, but...

Her arms.

The we're tied behind her, and her legs were tied as well. She attempted to speak, but only a choked whimper escaped her mouth. She was gagged and tied.

She pulled her arms, and began to groan as she tried to wriggle herself free from the ropes that held her down. Panic tugged at her, as she began to choke out a call for help.

"*Like, QUIET DOWN! Some of us are, like, trying to sleep!"*

Match?

Pin struggled a bit more, before she turned towards the voice.

"Agh..?" Pin guttered out. A sigh was heard, and multiple footsteps began to break the silence that was in the room. She felt a pair of hands behind her, and suddenly, the cloth that blocked her vision was yanked off her face.

Pin blinked rapidly, trying to let her eyes adjust to the light in the room. She looked around, but a hand grabbed her head and yanked it up.

"Aw, hey Pin!" Pencil chuckled, leaning in close to her face. Pin stared at her, her eyes widened in surprise, before she let out a muffled snicker. Pencil eyed her in suspicion, and threw her head down.

"Alright girls, should we start?" Pencil turned around. The others nodded, as they began to make their way closer to Pin. Match stared down at her, her eyes glaring with suspicion.

"So, Pin...." she began.
"I bet you're, like, wondering why you're here."

Pin rolled her eyes angrily, and Match scoffed. She then shoved Pin's head back, making her grunt.

"Like, PAY ATTENTION!" She yelled.

Pin glared daggers at her, as she let out a few muffled words quietly.

"So, like, I'm sure you know that Woody is gone."

"OBVIOUSLY! She was with him, you dumbass!" Flower crossed her arms. Match clenched her fists angrily, and stomped towards her.

"EXCUSE ME." She gritted through her teeth.
"Are YOU the one who's STARTING?!"

"Well, if I *was*, I'd be doing a damn good job at it, unlike you." Flower scoffed. Match etched in closer, her eyes darkening with fury.

"Why you little-"

"OKAY, we have NO TIME FOR THIS." Book shoved the two apart. They still shot dirty looks at each other, and Book sighed.

"Alright Pin. You saw what happened down there. Woody was...'murdered', right?"

Pin sleepily nodded, already exhausted from the crap the Freesmarters are making her put up with.

"Well, I want you to tell me; was Woody *really* murdered by the same object who was responsible for the deaths of Firey and Rocky..." she paused.

"Or, was the object who was responsible for the three murders...you?"

Pin felt her heart skip a beat.

The act.

Put on the act.

Pin began to shake her head rapidly, crying out muffled words and denying that statement. Book raised an eyebrow.

"Really?" She walked up close to her.

"Then why was THIS, left behind?"

Book lifted up the small brown handbag, that Pin carried with her. Pin felt her eyes widen.

"Mmf..!" She shook her head.

Book looked up at Pencil.

"Take That off of her mouth." She pointed towards the rag. Pencil nodded, and quickly untied it, and yanked it out of Pin's mouth. Pin coughed a bit, before looking back at Book.

"I was-..." she paused, letting the air get back in.

"I was...with him, he-..borrowed, my trowel...and-..I was going back..." her words were slow and heavy.

Act.

She looked down, letting a dark look spill over her eyes.

Book scoffed, and tossed the bag back onto the floor.

"Listen, Pin. Are you sure you were with him, and nothing else?" She began to walk closer.

"Are you *sure* that you were taking a morning stroll, when Firey was killed?"

Pin shut her eyes, feeling tears sting at her eyes.

"Are you *sure* you were at your garden when Rocky was found dead?" Book sneered. Pin took a shaky breath, and nodded.

"W-...Why are you, doing this." She muttered.

"Oh! Oh! I can answer that!" Ruby chimed in. She happily ran and stood next to Book, clearing her throat.

"Icey was taking a walk with Book to the top of the mountain..." Ruby explained.

Pin's eyes darkened. She didn't like where this was going.

"And she heard some *interesting* noises come from the bushes. So!!" She giggled, and leaned on Pin.

"She went to look, and we saw that you and Woody were doing some...*really interesting* stuff down there.." she whispered.

Pin's eyes widened in rage and disgust as she jerked her body away. Ruby lost her balance and fell down, letting out a surprised yelp.

"WHAT THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH YOU?!" She rebuked. The girls began to giggle.

"Honestly, I never knew that you'd be into guys like....Woody..."

Pencil sighed out.

"But ah, whatever. You do you."

"Or, you do him! You already did!" Ice Cube teased. Pin's cheeks were burning, as she began to struggle.

"You guys are ridiculous, let me g-"

"Oh, but it sure would be a shame if someone were to tell *Coiny* about the little...'dance' you and Woody were doing in the woods." Flower sneered. Pin's eyes widened, as she felt her face flush.

"You better not." Pin rasped out, feeling her heart pound in her chest.

"Oh, but we will!" Pencil winked, and walked ny Pin.

"Unless, you know...." She paused.

"You tell us the TRUTH about what happened back there!"

Pin shook her head, feeling her eyes water up from fear and frustration.

"Pencil, I've told you once, and I'm going to say it again. I DIDN'T DO ANYTHING! JUST LET ME GO!" she began to beg. Pencil rolled her eyes.

"Ever since you, like, fought Book to nearly DEATH, I haven't been trusting you at, like, ALL." Match babbled.

"Whats that supposed to mean." Pin's voice began to tremble.

"Well-"

"WE THOINK YOU KILLED WOODY! AND EVERYOINE ELSE!"

All eyes turned towards Bubble, who was holding her head in frustration. She looked up, and a blush bloomed on her cheeks.

"O-OI'm soirry..." Bubble muttered, ashamed of her sudden outburst. Pencil rolled her eyes angrily and turned back.

"What she said." She mumbled.

Pin stared at them in belief, and tried to say something...

But she couldn't.

A heavy silence filled the room, as she stared down at the floor. Thoughts raced through her ind as she wasn't able to make out what she wanted to say...

Before a giggle escaped from her lips.

The girls suddenly looked up, as Pin began to giggle, and then laugh as tears poured down her face. Angered, Pencil stomped over to her.

"What's so FUNNY?!" She yelled, her voice getting heavy with suspicion. Pin looked up, and let a grin slowly grow on her face.

Act.

"A-Are you guys serious right now? I thought you guys were smart, but turns out you guys are just DUMB." She snapped.

Pencil clenched her fist, as she stared down at Pin.

"What." She growled.

"You guys do know, I was in a really bad state when that little 'fight', broke out." She glanced over at Book and Ice Cube.

"And like I said earlier, Woody borrowed my trowel and I found him as I was going to my garden. We were going to go together, but-..." Her voice began to fade away.

"But.."

She gulped, beads of ooze dripping down her head. Her face began to lose its color, her cheeks turning as white as snow.

"He was...m-...." She couldn't speak any more.

Pencil has had enough at this point. She slapped Pin hard across the face, the slap echoing through the walls, as well as shocked gasps.

Pin stared down, her cheek stinging from the impact of her hand. She began to shake her head.

"Y-...You're making...a huge mistake..." She choked out.

"I didn't...do...anything..."

Pencil began to raise her hand again, before Match quickly ran towards her and grabbed her arm.

"Pence-Pence, what if she's right." Match mumbled.

"She, like, doesn't look...guilty."

Pencil looked at her, and looked back down at Pin, shaking her head and letting out broken sighs. She then lowered her hand, and turned around.

"C'mon girls, lets go."

Ruby grabbed Flower's arm, and stood up timidly.

"But, what are we going to..-"

"Ruby. Hush." Pencil raised her hand. This silenced Ruby, as she held onto Flower's arm a bit tighter. Flower put an arm around her, and looked up at Pencil. Pencil thought for a moment, before smiling sweetly and turning back around. She led all the girls towards the doorway, and glared across the room at Pin.

"I'm sorry Pin, but I think you're gonna stay with us for a while."

No.

"You should thank us; because after Coiny hears about what you and Woody did? I don't think he'll be loving you anymore..."

Pin shook her head, and began to yank her arms back, trying to rip the ropes wringing around her wrists.

"NO! PENCIL I DIDN'T DO ANYTHING WITH WOODY!!" She began to sob.

"PLEASE DON'T SAY THAT TO COINY, PLEASE JUST LET ME GO!"

"Ugh, its getting too noisy down here. Match, please, shut her up." Pencil rubbed her temples, her frustration giving her a headache.

Match nodded, and grabbed the cloth that was beside Pin. Pin began to cry and beg at the freesmarters, begging them to let her go. But none seemed to bat an eye.

"Sorry Pin..." Match whispered, as she suddenly tied the cloth in and around her mouth. She let out gagged coughs and cries; but they were now quiet. Match quickly dashed out, and slammed the heavy metal door, shut. Pin began to weep and yell, trying to wriggle herself free and grab someone, anyone's, attention.

But she was bound, gagged, tied...

She was silenced.

Silenced enough so that no one, could hear a peep.

Hello

Sorry if this was an odd chapter?? or if it sucks

im in a kind-of depressive episode rn but. writing helps i guess

anyways, enjoy

thanks for reading n sticking around

~ice

Cutting Ties

A day passed.

And then, two.

And three.

And four

and...

...

A cold, limp object laid shivering in the darkest corner of the basement. Her eyes were barely opened, as she let out small, shallow breaths every once in a while. She was starving; her stomach taunting her with growls that echoed in the darkness. Sharp pains stabbed through her stomach every minute or so, and at first, she rolled around in agony, wailing at the ceiling.

But no one could hear.

And the pain? Well, she's paralyzed from the dreadful feeling of emptiness, as well as the low temperature. She just couldn't feel much.

On the night of the second day, her voice perished. No matter how much she let tears squeeze out of her eyes, nothing, not even a gentle whimper, could escape her lips.

Now, she was just parched. Her throat itched for just a drop of water, but there was nothing she could do. No matter how much she thrashed, scratched, yelled and cried,

Nothing would change.

She could feel death crawl on her, slowly letting its arms reach around Pin, and give her a slow embrace. Her entire body felt numb; her throat felt like a desert. The rag didn't help at all either, making her mouth even dryer than it would've been without it.

How many days could an object make it without food?

Water?

Heat?

Pin let these thoughts sway in her head, since no other thoughts could shine through. Her eyes were cloudy and death-like, as she stared at the dark corner of this basement, or, in her case, a prison. She couldn't do much of anything anymore.

Her hopes eventually gave out as she realized that no one would be coming for her. The muffled voices that would grow louder and louder as they walked by, teased her as they began to fade away, growing quieter and quieter and, soon? Silence.

She could feel it; she could practically feel her body giving into the embrace of death. She doesn't care anymore; too much has happened. She swam too deep into the river; and it was far too late to return back to shore.

She let her eyes close once more, as she let out a shudder. If she was gonna die, she'd rather die away in her sleep.

Silence filled the room once more, as she slowly began to drift away.

Her thoughts, her reality, her mindset, was crippling away, but...

Whatever.

.....

"....?"

.....

alliance, remember?~

Pin's eyes shot open as she panted heavily. Beads of ooze slid down her face, as she looked around once more.

Same room.

But...

"I KNOW SHE'S ALIVE! I KNOW HER! NONE OF YOU KNOW HER LIKE I DO!"

A yell made Pin jump up. That was Coiny's voice; he was close! He was by the door! This was her chance for escape!
Alright, alright, collect yourself. She had to act. NOW.

She thought for a moment; before a lightbulb went off in her mind. She swung a bit, and fell back, grunting in pain. She shook it off, and soon began to roll over towards the door. She rolled quickly, and slammed herself onto the door. A loud thud broke the silence, and she shut her eyes in pain. She quieted down, and listened.

"Wait; did you hear that..?!"

"Coiny, please, calm down. You're going through grief; you just have to accept that-"

"NO! I-I swear I heard something.." His voice began to fade away.

"Coiny! Just get over it!" Golf Ball's voice bitterly responded.

"You know what she did; we ALL know what she did with Woody! Accept it and MOVE ON!"

Pin's eyes widened in disbelief.

They...told him.

They told him a lie.

Her eyes filled with fury, as she began to shift her body. She positioned herself, and took a sharp breath in.
And with all of her might, she began to slam her feet against the door, each kick creating a loud thud, loud enough to vibrate through

the room.

"There it is!"
Footsteps began to grow louder and quicker, before the knob of the door began to wiggle.

"Wh-Who's in there?!" Coiny's voice cracked out.

This was it.

"M-...." Pin shook her head. Her voice was nearly gone. She shook her head as she repeatedly slammed her feet against the door, the kicking growing more and more frantic.

"WHO'S THERE?! TELL US WHO YOU ARE!" Golf Ball screeched out.

"M-MmM!" Pin grunted out.

""Mgfgmm!!"

Silence.

Pin's eyes shut, as she shook her head. Where did they go?! Where were they?!
They were just there!

Her breaths became more shallow and frightened. Was this all just a hallucination?!
These thoughts swirled in Pin's mind, before a loud bang snapped her out of it. She looked at the door, shock and confusion pouring into her chest.

"To Whoever is in there; you better MOVE!" Shouted Tennis Ball.

Pin's eyes widened in alarm as she turned, and quickly rolled towards the right wall. She squeezed her eyes shut, preparing for the impact. A few seconds passed, and then suddenly, a loud crash made Pin jump. She slowly made her body roll around, and squinted at the sudden light that poured into the room.

Tennis Ball bounced a bit, shaking his head from the impact. Golf Ball, Needle and Coiny quickly ran down the steps and looked

around.

"Mmgf!! MM!" She began to roll towards them. Coiny gasped as he suddenly ran over, and tackled Pin. Pin grunted from the sudden pain, but it faded away as she felt the warmth of Coiny's body. He looked down, tears of joy spilling down his pale, exhausted face.

"PIN!" He cried out happily, hugging her close. She flinched, but soon relaxed as she began to melt into his arms.

"Coiny; don't just hug her! Untie her!" Needle's high pitch voice grew louder with annoyance. Coiny sniffed, and let go of Pin, putting a hand on her cheek.

"I-I was so sure...I thought...I'm..." Coiny croaked out. Pin shook her head, as she muffled out a few words. Coiny then slowly took the rag out of her mouth, and waited as she began to cough and adjust to the air. She took a deep breath, and looked up at him.

"D-..Don't blame yourself." She smiled weakly. Coiny shook his head, and wrapped his arms around her once more.

"Alright Pin, let me help you out." Golf Ball walked behind the two, and began to untie the ropes that held Pin's wrists together. It took her a bit, but when the ropes collapsed onto the ground, Pin wrapped her arms around Coiny, her eyes dim, yet filled with relief. Golf Ball sighed.

"This is Freesmart's basement." Tennis Ball walked up to the group, sighing.

"What makes you say that?" Needle asked.

"Simple." Tennis Ball held up a small, empty container, labeled 'Peanuts' in bold, green letters.

"I'm pretty sure we know who could eat an entire jar of these in less than two seconds."

Golf Ball examined the jar, and looked around the basement.

"But why did they do this? Are they the murderers?!" Golf Ball's voice

began to grow with anger.

"Because if they are, THEY WILL BE EXECUTED! THEY HAVE TO PAY FOR WHAT THEY'VE DONE!" She cried out angrily. Tennis Ball quickly put the jar down, and began to pat her back in comfort.

"Hey, hey, calm down..." He whispered. Golf Ball panted, as she looked up at him, her eyes starting to shine with tears. She sniffed angrily, as she wiped her eyes.

"Sorry." She muttered. TB nodded, as he gave her a hug. Usually, Golf Ball would refuse, but today...

She just stayed in his embrace.

"Alright, you lovebirds, lets go. We have a team to question, and we gotta get Pin something to eat, she looks terrible." Needle sneered. Golf Ball's eyes widened as she quickly fell out of his embrace, clearing her throat.

"Y-Yes, I agree. Lets get out of here." She stuttered.

Coiny stood up, and helped Pin onto her feet. He wrapped her arm over his shoulder, and began to help her walk. He took a step forward, before Pin suddenly yelped and toppled over Coiny, both landing face-flat onto the pavement. Golf Ball gasped.

"Ack! Sorry Pin, I forgot to untie your legs.." She laughed nervously. Pin rolled her eyes, but waved her hand towards her, smiling a bit.

"It's fine, don't worry about it."

"OW!"

"Be careful, its really hot! Should've warned you earlier, heh..."

Pin slowly took a sip from the yoyle-stew Coiny had whipped up for her. She was instructed to eat, but to eat small portions, since her stomach has shrunken a bit over the five days she was stuck in the

basement. She shuddered a bit, before slowly turning her spoon in the bright, purple liquid.

Coiny was kind enough to let her stay over his place; it was small, yet it was comfortable, and perfect for him. She gazed over at the window, where the Yoyle Needy was seen in the distance, standing high off of the ground. Pin began to space out, as the memories soon began to trickle back.

All of this was happening too quickly;

how long has it been since Firey died?

"Pin, eat, your stew is gonna go cold."
The sudden stern tone in Coiny's voice sent chills up Pin. She stared back down, and dipped her spoon into the liquid, watching it run inside of the spoon. She sighed, as she lifted the spoon.

'I remember our alliance. Why don't you?'

A hand trailed down by back, and soon went back up and rested on my shoulder.

I felt goosebumps grow on my body as I felt the hand rub my shoulder.

'Remember me, Pin.'

Why do I want to remember you. You're the one who betrayed all of us.

'Oh, am I?~ Why don't you ask Woody? Or Rocky? Or even, Firey..about who really betrayed everyone here.'

Stop it.

'How about Coiny? You sure had some fun with Woody, didn't you?'

STOP IT.

'It would be a shame if Coiny was...killed....~'

"NO!"

Her spoon flung across the room, the purple liquid splattering all

over the sheets and the floor.

"Pin!" Coiny quickly walked over to her, and sat down beside her. Pin breathed heavily, as she looked at Coiny, her eyes blood-shot. He sighed.

"Pin, it's okay, calm down.." he looked down. Pin shook her head, and gulped.

"R-Right, I'm sorry..." she stuttered.

She put a hand on her head, and sighed, ooze starting to go down her face.

Why does she keep remembering...her....

"Pin."

Pin's eyes opened as she looked over at Coiny. She sat up, wincing a bit from her sore sides.

"Yes?"

"Is it true."

Pin tilted her head to the side. Is what true..? What did he mean by that..?

"Uh, what do you..mean.." she asked softly, confusion getting the best of her. Coiny shook his head.

"Pin, don't play innocent. You know what I mean." He responded gravely. This made Pin turn cold; she has never seen Coiny act this way.

"Coiny, seriously, what do you mean?" She asked nervously.

"I don't know what you mean by that, I swear.."

Coiny looked up at her.

"Did you really make out and....do some stuff..with Woody..?" His voice began to fade away.

Pin's eyes widened.

"C-...Coiny, why would you believe that? Of course I didn't, I never even LIKED Woody to begin with..!" Her voice began to tremble. Coiny glared at her, anger and betrayal in his eyes.

"Then why did Ice Cube see you two doing some stuff then." He mumbled angrily. Pin stared at him in disbelief.

"Are you seriously believing the FREESMARTERS?!" She yelled. Coiny jumped back, before recollecting himself.

"Pin, I don't know who to believe here. They, *saw* you. But here you are, telling me you didn't...I don't know who to trust.." he put a hand on his head.

"Are you KIDDING ME." Pin slammed her hands down, the bowl of Yoyle-Stew nearly spilling its contents.

"I NEVER LIKED WOODY! HELL, I'VE NEVER EVEN DONE ANYTHING LIKE THAT!"

It was too late for her to realize that tears were starting to pour down her face.

"COINY, PLEASE, BELIEVE ME! I..I LOVE YOU!"

Coiny gave her a blank stare. His eyes filled with tears, as he looked down.

"I..." he went silent.

That was enough.

"Alright; you don't believe me? Fine." She stood up, and grabbed a blanket.

"I'm leaving."

"Pin, Pin Wait.." Coiny's voice began to shake, but Pin didn't notice. She walked over to the door, and opened it, letting the cool breeze embrace her.

"I'm done."

And with that, she slammed the door behind her, leaving Coiny, and the stew, behind.

And that's the tea, sis

But hello! Here's part 17 of the story!! Let's just say, things are gonna go a bit...downhill.

But, thank you all for the nice comments and the votes! I've been feeling better, and I'm also gonna be making something else on here! It's a bfb story ooop

But anyways! Enjoy!

~Ice

Is Love Even Real Anymore?

Pin clenched the soft blanket tightly, as it fluttered in the cool winter breeze. The sky was beginning to darken with storm-like clouds, slowly approaching the city in the distance.

Her eyes were heavy and wet with tears, as she stared down at the pavement below her feet.

She couldn't believe she did that.

It wasn't his fault.

But..why didn't he believe her..

She sniffed, as she trudged back towards her home. But a familiar voice caught her off guard, and quickly made her head pound with rage.

"Golf Ball, SERIOUSLY. LET US GO."

"We're not letting you leave until we know WHY you did it, Pencil."

"SERIOUSLY?! WE AREN'T MURDERERS GOLFBALL! WE ONLY WANTED TO QUESTION HER!"

"And investigate!"

"But that doesn't excuse WHY you TIED HER DOWN IN THE GODDAMN BASEMENT!"

Pin turned around, and saw a small group of objects. Golf Ball and Tennis Ball were leading the Freesmarters towards the lab, Needle following and making sure none of them decided to escape.

"Well, until we hear why, you're staying with us." Golf Ball growled in a low, angry tone. Pencil flinched, and slowly interlocked her hand

with Match's, who was following close beside her.

Pin's fists were clenched, and her arms were trembling. She felt her heart slowly begin to break, as she remembered her fingers interlocking with Coiny's.

Oh, How *sweet!* Look at them, all happy with their significant other! Look! Look at how *perfect* they're life is! You envy them, don't you.

You took him away from me.

Pin couldn't take it much longer. She darted towards the team, and tackled Pencil down to the ground. A shout of pain echoed through the winter air, as Pin hit her sides. Both of them tumbled around the grass before Pin pinned her down (haha, Pin, pinned) and stared deeply into Pencil's eyes.

Pencil only felt pain. A slight pressure from where Pin was, but a heavy pain from the impact. She opened her eyes, and looked up to see Pin's deathly glare, her eyes suddenly shining with tears.

"*You.....*" Her voice trembled. Pencil suddenly felt fear overwhelm her as she began to struggle from her grip, trying to get her off of her.

"YOU RUINED **EVERYTHING**!" Pin screamed out angrily, as she slapped Pencil. Pencil let out a quiet whimper, as she felt the harsh sting from Pin's slap.

"YOU TOOK HIM AWAY! YOU FUCKING LIAR!" She slapped Pencil once more, feeling nothing but burning rage in her heart. Everything was blocked out; she couldn't see, she couldn't hear...

The only thing she could feel was rage. And the only thing she could see was the backstabbing a-hole who ruined her life. Hot tears trickled down Pin's cheeks as she repeatedly slapped Pencil, her slaps becoming more harder and harder. Her hands were balling up into fists, as she sobbed angrily.

"I HATE YOU!" Were the only words that came out of Pin's mouth. She repeated them as she continued to beat the light out of Pencil, but quickly felt a pair of hands yank her away. Pin's arms trembled violently as she stared at Pencil, her eyes fixated on her. She

continued to growl out menacing threats towards her, as everything slowly began to fade back in.

"Pencil! Pencil, are you okay?!"

"Hold her down! She's gone mad!"

"Not again! Pencil!"

Pin suddenly felt the burning rage in her chest, slowly freeze up and turn into heavy icicles of pain. She didn't know who held her in her arms; but she hugged the pair of arms and began to let out painful sobs and weeps, remembering...

Him.

She felt her legs give in, as she collapsed onto the ground, letting her tears stain the ground below her. The arms stayed wrapped around her, but soon loosened, and embraced her in a more comfortable position. She held a hand to her chest, as her sobs began to quiet down.

Needle looked up towards the duo.

"Take them to the lab; I'll talk with Pin." She reassured the two, and they nodded, leading the girls towards the lab. Pencil held her red, burning cheeks as she weakly turned and looked at Pin, before entering the lab.

Needle turned back, and cautiously removed her arms from Pin. She sat down, and crossed her legs, as she rubbed Pin's back soothingly. She waited patiently, until all she could hear were quiet sniffles and whimpers.

"Pin?" Her soft voice broke the silence. Pin stared at the ground, not bothering to turn and look towards Needle.

"Pin."

"They ruined it."

Needle looked at Pin, tilting her head curiously.

"What?"

"They told Coiny." Pin choked out, letting a few tears roll down her cheeks.

"They told him a lie. Now he..." Her voice trailed off, as she covered her face with her hands, taking shaky gasps and letting out quiet sobs. Needle's eyes widened, as she reached out towards Pin.

"Y...You mean, you and..Woody..?" She stuttered out. Pin slowly nodded as she lifted her face from her hands, her eyes still letting tears pour down her face.

"He...he broke up..." she suddenly collapsed, as she felt her heart break into two. Needle gently put a hand on her back, and rubbed it gently.

"Pin...I'm so sorry..." her gentle voice soothed Pin, as she looked up at her. She suddenly threw her arms around Needle, as she sobbed heavily into her shoulder. Needle, on the other hand, didn't mind; she wrapped her arms around Pin as she let her cry. She continued to rub her back, as she tried to soothe her.

"It's gonna be okay Pin...we're gonna fix this, okay..?" Needle gave her a gentle squeeze. Pin sniffed, as she lifted herself off of Needle, staring into her grey, shimmering eyes. Pin nodded slowly, as Needle gave her a sympathetic smile.

"Here, let's head down to the lab. I could make you some tea if you'd like.." Needle suggested. Pin nodded, as she slowly stood up, still holding the blanket that was covering her. Needle giggled a bit, and led her down the steps into the lab.

After a nice cup of tea, Pin sat in her garden, the blanket giving her warmth. She held it close to her body, as her eyes began to water.

Why couldn't she stop thinking about him.

Why does she feel empty..

Cold...

She shivered, and looked at the plants beside her, letting her tears spill down on the soil, turning some bits to mud. She let her hand brush against the petals of a bush of Lillies of the Valley's, as she began to space out.

What she didn't expect, was to hear footsteps from afar, which were getting louder as they came closer. She shivered, as she clenched her fists, and held the blanket tighter in her arms.

The footsteps stopped as the object stood beside Pin, Pin refusing to look up.

But what made her jump, was when she felt a hand on her shoulder, rubbing it slowly.

"Hi Pin~".

"Why didn't you believe her?!" Golf Ball's voice was filled with dissapointment as she stared at Coiny angrily. Coiny's face looked brim and dark, as he stared at the ground. He mumbled something incoherent, and Golf Ball raised an eyebrow.

"What was that?"

"I didn't know who to believe."

Golf Ball scoffed.

"Are you a MAN?! WHY would you believe the idiots that held her hostage in the first place?!"

"Well what if they were RIGHT?! I don't know who to trust.." Coiny sighed in defeat as he put a hand on his head. Golf Ball rolled her eyes.

"She's gotten worse without you." She stated. Coiny gave her a blank stare, his eyes cloudy with tears.

"I miss her..." was the only thing he could say before he began to cry. Golf Ball looked away, and sighed.

"Listen." She turned towards him.

"Talk with her. Listen to what she has to say. I'm no expert with relationships, but based on my research, communication is key when it comes to your significant other..." she paused.

"Especially when it comes to times like this." She Pat his back with sympathy.

"Talk things out; I'm sure she'll tell you the truth. And if what was said about her is really true..."

She shrugged a bit.

"It's up to you."

Coiny stared at her, a small smile creeping up on his face. Golf Ball gave him a confused stare.

"What?"

"Why do you know so much about this?"

"I-...oh." Golf Ball went quiet, as she quickly looked away.

"It's classified." She grumbled. Coiny leaned in towards her, grinning.

"GB, TB, sittin' in a tree,K-I-S-S-"

"IT IS **PLATONIC!**" Golf Ball screeched out, a light, pink blush spreading on her face. Coiny snickered as she saw Golf Ball, Who was beginning to touch her face in confusion.

"W-What is this." She mumbled, looking up at Coiny.

"What did you do?!" She felt the warmth grow all over her face. Coiny began to laugh.

"You seriously don't know what blush is?!"

"No, I don't! What is this?! Am I ill?!" She began to panic as she grabbed Coiny, and yanked him to her level.

"Whatever you did to me, you better tell me how I can find a cure." She mumbled angrily. Coiny smirked.

"Do you really want to know what the cure is?"

"YES."

Coiny sighed, and put an arm around her.

"All you need is one Tennis Ball. A scientist, a nerd, a odd voice, yes. A kiss should do, and bam. There's your cure." He winked.

Golf Ball stared at him blankly.

"What's...a kiss."

Coiny stared at her, disbelief in his eyes.

"You seriously don't know what a kiss is?!" He gasped. Golf Ball shrugged.

"I don't know much about what couples do. All I know is how they can maintain a perfectly healthy-"

"**AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!!**"

The two looked up, startled from the sudden scream that echoed through the city.

"What in the name of putts was THAT?!" Golf Ball looked around.

Coiny looked at her, concern and fear growing in his eyes.

"Pin."

"Shh~ it's okay~" Leafy traced her finger over Pin, who was pinned down by Leafy. She giggled, as she saw her struggling, trying to break free from her grip.

"Oh Pin, haven't you forgotten me?~ Why don't you give me a friendly greeting..." she smirked. Pin stared at her angrily.

"Go fuck yourself, Leafy." She growled.

A sudden stab into her stomach made Pin choke, before letting out a painful grunt. Leafy grinned.

"Wrong answer, Pin."

Pin growled, as she began to cough out droplets of blood. Leafy laughed a bit.

"How does it feel Pin?~"

Pin shook her head, spitting out more blood.

"I-I've...felt..worse." She choked out.

"Oh, really?" Leafy held the knife over her chest, as she slowly began to press it against her skin. Pin felt her heart race, as she shook her head.

"N-No, Wait.." she whimpered out. Leafy cocked her head.

"Oh? What's this?~" she chuckled. Pin shook her head.

"P-Please..." she choked out. Leafy looked at her, before sighing and tossing her onto the ground.

"Alright cherry-blossom. This isn't over." She growled out, as she leaned in towards her. Pin glared at her angrily.

"Tell Firey I say hello, will you please?~" she smirked, as she got up, and began to leave. Pin struggled to get back up, as she reached out towards Leafy.

"N-No..." she mumbled. She grunted, as she lifted herself off of the

ground, feeling the blood gush out of her wound.
She couldn't stay out like this, she had to go back.

She picked herself up, and held her side, wincing in pain. Her arm pressed onto the wound, as she clenched her teeth. The pain was unbearable...

How was she going to make it back?

She looked down, and saw the bushes of lilies, blood staining their angelic, white aura.

Pluck one off.

You're gonna need it eventually.

Pin breathed heavily, feeling blood drivel out of her mouth. She let out a guttering yell of pain, as she quickly leaned down and grabbed a fistful of lilies. She began to loose feeling in her stomach; she had to head back. Now.

She trudged back down her secret path, one hand wrapped around her stomach, and the other carrying the lilies.

Everything began to blur out, as Pin stood in the middle of the path, confused about where she should go. Everything seemed to spin, as she felt her heart racing with panic.

Where was she?!

Who was she, why was she doing this..

Why is she here?!

"*Rocky!"*

A sudden voice made Pin jump. She turned around, and her eyes widened.

"*Oh my oxygen, Rocky! You can talk again!" Firey squealed as he pat Rocky's head. Rocky nodded in excitement as he looked up towards the flame.*

"Aren't you glad I didn't vomit on you?" His high pitched voice rang in the air. Firey laughed, and put an arm on Rocky's head, resting it there.

"And Would you look at that! It's the fighter!" He raised his arm, and clenched it.

His hand was missing.

Woody shyly trudged on over to the two, giving them a small wave.

His hands were missing.

"Aw, cmon Woody! You were so brave! I can't believe you could fight like that!" Firey's eyes twinkled in amazement. Woody let a shy smile grow on his face, and soon, he began to laugh.

First, it was Woody. And then, Rocky began to giggle, his voice ringing louder and louder. And then, Firey's laugh pitched in, raspy, yet warm. The three continued to laugh, their laughs filling the atmosphere.

I looked around. I have to get out of here, I have to get out of here NOW!

Ooze was dripping down my forehead as I turned my head, frantically trying to search for an exit.

But then it hit me;

Why was it so quiet?

I turned my head, and felt my heart stop.

Firey, Rocky, and Woody, all had their eyes fixated on me. They were pointing...

And they weren't smiling.

Imma keep it real with you Chief; it is freezing , i am sitting outside of my school waiting for my ride. Play shop ended on time today lmao

But hello!! Here's part 18 of this story! A lot happens, but. I hope it

makes sense

Silly GB, don't know a thing about love (mood)

Also thank you to those who make memes with this story I owe you my life kisudidjsjwnndbwbsb

Anyways, thanks for enjoying the story! See y'all in the next chapter!!

~ice

Edit: guys,,,,,,,,,,chill,,,,,,,,,,the story is far from over , just please enjoy it hhhdhdjdjd

Sweet Nostalgic Memories

All she could remember was the three boys staring at her.

Glaring.

They looked horribly angry.

She was muttering. She didn't know where she was or how she was; hell, she didn't even remember who she was.

She patted the ground, her dazed mind trying to recollect itself and function. She fumbled around, before slowly sitting up, wincing. A sharp pain arose from her stomach, and she looked down. The stab had stopped bleeding, but it looked terrible. It was turning a dark, red to a black-ish color.

She had to do something. That cut is gonna get infected, and that's a whole lotta pain that she doesn't want to deal with right now.

She looked around, trying to focus on where she was, and most importantly, how to return home. But instead, she was greeted with something,
Or, someone, new.

Off in the distance, a group of objects stood around, seemingly waiting for...
something.

Pin decided to investigate; maybe there was a way she could get help! She could get out of this mess...

As she walked closer to said objects, she began to slow down. She squinted, and, oddly enough, these objects seemed so...

Familiar.

She staggered forward, and her eyes widened in shock, as she looked around at the scene.

It was her...acquaintances. Spongy, Flower, TD, Blocky...

But they looked so...young.

She shook her head in disbelief, before a young, warm voice startled her, forcing her to turn around and face who that was.

"Aha! Icey, come on down, you can be my ally!" Leafy grinned innocently, as she waved Ice Cube over towards her. Pin turned around, and noticed a small, young Ice Cube, walking over to them happily.

"Thanks for picking me!" She cried out happily.
"Pencil wouldn't let me into *her* alliance..."

"Then I, choose Pencil."
Pin turned around, and her eyes immediately welled up with tears as she held back a snicker.

Would you look at that...

There stood Pin, back when she was younger and fresh. She gave off a sassy attitude, with her hand on her hip, as she pointed towards Pencil. Pin laughed silently, wiping her eyes as she watched her younger self. After a moment of thinking, she decided to sit down, and watch this all unfold.

"Hm...who should I pick, Icey?"

Ice Cube tilted her head.

"I dunno! It's up to you!" She responded.

Pin felt a smile grow on her face, as she watched all of her pals chatter on the sides. She could remember the excitement she felt when she was the leader of the group, or, as she could remember...
The Squishy Cherries?
She shrugged, and continued to watch.

"...Oooh! They're in loOoOove!" Pin's eyes followed the voice as she saw Blocky, young and full of energy. She hasn't seen him in a while, since he was still in the TLC....

"No Blocky! I like COINY more!" A high pitched voice exclaimed.
Pin turned her head and noticed that it was Needle, pointing towards a young, golden coin-creature. He turned around after hearing her exclamation, and gasped.

Pin raised a eyebrow, suspicion starting to eat at her.
How long has she liked him?
Hm...
She had to keep that in mind.
She sighed, as she continued to watch the randomness of that day unfold. She laughed as she saw Coiny's face of disgust when Firey was chosen for her team; she remembered how much they hated each other back then. Leafy's team decided to let Tennis Ball on their team, and Pin watched as he walked on over to them. Young and full of life...

"Come on, people. Pick a boy."
The sudden robotic voice made Pin jump, as she looked over to the source of the sound.

It was that Speaker Box!

A wave of nostalgia hit her as she held her head.

"Holy shit.." she mumbled.
"Is this some sort of psychotic episode or something..?"

"I don't know!" Pin exclaimed. Pin looked up at her sudden shout, confused on whether she heard her or not.

"They're all pretty bad!" Pin pointed towards the objects that were left waiting. Pin smirked as she looked over towards them, ready to hear her past self roast all of them.

"First of all, I wouldn't choose Flower for *obvious* reasons..."
Flower glared daggers towards Pin. Well, she *has* changed...or, is trying to change, so just...

Whatever. She continued to listen. She went on to Blocky, the one who had 'issues', all the way to Woody, who was terrified of everything.
Still-
No, wait, it was true...

Time passed, before she noticed that Pin was staring directly at her. She scanned her from the bottom to the top, before noticing her wound. Her eyes filled with confusion and worry, as she mouthed towards her.

'Are you okay?'

Pin looked around, confused. She didn't know if she was talking to her. She held a hand towards her chest, as if she were saying, 'me?'

Pin nodded.

Pin felt a chill go down her back.

How could she see her?

She nodded slowly, waving her hand towards her. 'I'm okay.' She whispered.

Pin nodded, before turning her focus onto the Speaker Box, who was rambling on about team names. Soon, both teams erupted in chatter, trying to come up with their fantastic team names.

Pin smiled, as she looked at her younger self. She was looking around, absorbing the exciting moment around her. She couldn't believe that she was a team leader, she always wanted to lead...

Pin suddenly felt the ground shift. Her vision began to darken as she looked around, her mind becoming fuzzy and her memories darkening. She felt herself fall onto her knees, as she looked towards herself, reaching out towards her.

Young Pin was waving goodbye towards her, a grin on her face, yet, tears pouring down her cheeks.

Then everything faded away, a cold breeze brushing past Pin. The

world around her began to spin rapidly, as she held her head in pain.

What's going on?

Why is everything spinning?!

Noises began to grow louder, and louder, as the world spun even faster. White petals quickly flew around Pin, as she attempted to grab each one. She was panicking. She didn't know how to get out of this.

She suddenly felt a hand grab her wrist, and yank her upwards. She yelped, and looked at the tall figure, letting a tear fall down her cheek.

All she could see was Flower, her eyes bloodshot, wet, and...
Bloody.

Pin tried to speak, but before she did-

"**WAKE UP.**"

Pin gasped for air as she shot up, her heart racing and her mind swirling with confusion. She held her chest, as beads of ooze dripped down her face.

What..just happened.

She breathed heavily, as she looked around.

She was back in her room!

She held her head, as she noticed that her hand had a few, crumbled petals in them. She then looked around her bed, as she saw it covered in petals. She sighed, putting a hand on her stomach.
A bandage was wrapped around her waist and stomach, her fingers tracing the soft gauze. She looked around once more, before she

pinched herself.

Yep. She was awake.

She sat there, trying to let her mind grab onto what just happened, before a knock on her door snapped her out of it.

"Come in.." She wearily mumbled.

Of all the people it had to be...

She clenched her fist as she stared down at her sheets.

"Hey..." his voice was softer, and deeper, unlike his younger self.

"You're awake.."

"Obviously." She snapped. Coiny sighed, as he sat on the end of her bed, glancing down at the floor.

"So...how-"

"I feel fine, thank you." She glared at him.

"Now, do me a huge favor and get out of my house."

Coiny clenched his fist, as he felt tears sting in his eyes.

"Pin, I only want to-"

"Help?" She chuckled.

"I'm sorry Coiny, but you've done NOTHING to help. Now LEAVE."

A heavy silence filled the room, as Pin crossed her arms. She stared away, expecting him to get up and slam the door, like some cliché romance movie or something.

"...I'm sorry."

Pin looked towards him.

"What?"

"You heard me." Coiny got up, and brushed himself off. He began to walk towards the door, sighing.

"I'll leave you be. I'll talk to you some other time, Pin."

Pin felt...strange. She didn't want him to leave. As he was opening the door..

"Wait." She croaked out.

Coiny turned around, and noticed that she was moving towards the other side of the bed. She pat the side of the bed, before crossing her arms and looking away. Coiny couldn't help but let a small smile grow, as he walked back. He climbed up, and sat beside her, his hands folded on his lap.

"...Why are you here." Pin broke the silence between them.

"Don't you hate me?"

Coiny sighed, as he looked towards her.

"No...quite the opposite, actually.." he mumbled. Pin raised her eyebrow.

"What do you mean."

Coiny was silent for a moment, before he looked up towards her once more.

"I miss you."

Those three words went in one ear, and out the other. Pin rolled her eyes.

"And I miss everything being back to normal, what's your fucking point?" She snapped.

Coiny stared at her, shocked about how...sassy she had become.

"Listen..." he fiddled with his hands.

"I...have to apologize. I shouldn't have believed Freesmart, I shouldn't

have questioned you..." he looked at her, his eyes filled with sincerity and worry.

"I'm sorry, Pin."

She didn't know how to feel. This all felt unfamiliar. She, felt unfamiliar. Nothing felt...familiar.

Coiny catched onto her worry, and sighed. He slowly put a hand on her cheek, and leaned in, letting his lips touch hers. He gave her a kiss, letting their lips stay connected for a few moments, before be pulled away.

Pin's cheeks were a dark shade of red. She touched her lips, remembering the feeling of his against hers. She didn't even notice the wobbly smile that was growing on her face.

"What I want to ask is..." he paused.

"Will you forgive me?"

She thought for a moment, before crossing her arms and looking at him, smiling.

"As a W.O.A.H Bunch Co-Captain, you have been gifted with my forgiveness." She laughed a bit. Coiny's face brightened as he wrapped his arms around her, hugging her close. Pin rested her head on his shoulder, as she sighed happily, absorbing the moment around her.

Doesn't that feel familiar?

.....

Yes, yes it does.

"Pin, could you go get their food?! I'm tired of having to even deal with their nonsense!"

"Well now you know how I feel! Just give me a sec, and after this,

we're letting them LEAVE."

Golf Ball rolled her eyes as she stomped towards Tennis Ball, who gave her a kind smile. Coiny snickered at the two.

"How much do you wanna bet that they'll be together soon?" Coiny whispered.

Pin shrugged.

"One of them has to confess. Both of them look like they can't do that." She smirked. Coiny jumped up.

"Well I'm gonna do it for them!" He exclaimed. Pin laughed a bit, as she began to walk towards the lab's kitchen. She looked at the tray of food, and sighed.

Couldn't they just drop this? Just let them go?

They were comfortable, they weren't locked away or something, but...

The petals.

Pin eyes widened as she looked around, trying to find the source of the voice.

Where are the petals.

"I- Uh..." she looked around, and saw a few stuck onto her bandages. They must've gotten stuck there as she was in bed...

She carefully plucked the three of them, as she held them in her hands. Her eyes gazed over at the cups of tea, and a sudden lightbulb went off in her head.

How long has it been since Woody died?

"Three weeks..." Pin mumbled, feeling herself grow submissive towards the voice.

How about we try something new, for our fellow plant, shall we?

Without thinking, Pin crushed the petals in her hand, letting them break into tiny bits and pieces. She looked over at the cups, and threw the petals into a light, pink teacup. She stared at the cup, watching the petals float around, and soon, sink into the tea. She stayed silent.

"PIN! WHERE'S THE FOOD!" Golf Ball's voice echoed through the lab. Pin shook her head, as she quickly grabbed the tray of drinks, and the tray of food.

"I COULD USE A LITTLE HELP HERE, YKNOW!" She yelled back.

Needle quickly ran in, taking the tray of cups and giving her a smile.

"I'll help you!" Her voice rang.

I like COINY more!

Pin froze, as she watched her walk out of the kitchen.

Snap out of it. You can deal with her later, just go.

Pin shook her head, as she began to follow Needle into the room.

"Can we go now? We're innocent, we didn't do anything wrong..." Pencil had a defeated tone in her voice. Golf Ball raised an eyebrow while looking at her, and then at the rest of her team.

"I'm not sure, I feel like theres something missing in this puzzle...." She muttered. The girls groaned in annoyance, as Needle and Pin walked in, looking around.

"GB, just let them go." Pin stated.

"Let them eat, and then let them go. I doubt any of them are murderers; they don't seem like the murdering type." She looked at all of them. Match had an arm around Pencil, while Pencil was resting her head on her shoulder. She stared at Pin; exhaustion

shining in her eyes.

Golf Ball rolled her eyes and sighed, putting her notes down.

"Fine. You all can eat up, and leave. And if anyone." She clenched her fist.

"ANYONE. Sees anything suspicious, you better come tell me." And with that, she turned away, and left. The Freesmarters sighed in relief, as they quickly dug into their meals. Pin turned towards Needle, nudging her with her elbow.

"Hey." Needle turned her head, and looked down at Pin.

"Whats up?"

"I had the most strangest dream while I was out..." Pin looked down at her bandages, and patted them gently.

"Ooh! Do tell.." Needle turned towards Pin, ready to hear what she was going to say. Pin looked at her eyes, and grinned a bit.

"For some reason, I woke up in a field, right?" She paused for a moment, trying to remember her dream.

"And I was trying to look for help, but suddenly, I was back in BFDI!"

Needle's eyes sparkled, before she raised an eyebrow.

"Wait; BFDI? When we were....young??" Needle snickered.

"Gosh, I can't even think about myself back in those days! I was so weird.." She laughed a bit. Pin smiled, and looked around.

"Yeah, I remember seeing you, Blocky, Coiny, Flo-"

She suddenly cut herself off, as she looked towards the Freesmarter's. The cups were all gone from the tray, and she quickly began to scan each cup in each hand.

Her heart nearly skipped a beat, when the pink teacup was in Flower's hand. She watched as Flower took sips from the tea, and

looked back at Needle when Flower looked into the cup. Pin grinned nervously at Needle, who was rambling about everyone back in BFDI.

"And don't you remember when I said I liked Coiny more?" She snickered, as she let out a sigh.

"That was embarrassing, sure, but my heart belongs to someone else..." She looked down.

"Too bad she's in the TLC." She muttered.

"H-Hey, maybe we can get her out soon?" Pin suggested.

"TB and GB have the wall teleporter with them, yknow."

Needle shrugged.

"Maybe, I just don't want to bother them." She looked at Pin, and her face filled with concern.

"Hey, are you okay? You're looking a bit pale..." Needle put a hand on Pin's arm. Pin glanced over towards Flower, who finished her tea completely, and put down the empty cup. She looked down at Ruby, and giggled at whatever the jewel was speaking about. Pin looked back at Needle, smiling.

"I'm fine, don't worry about me." She put a hand on Needle's hand.

"Just a little dizzy, thats all."

---

today was a snow day, so guess who had time to write?!

This nerd!!

anyways whats up my dudes, heres the next part of the story!! The petals that Pin put in the tea were Lilies of the Valley's, just. look it up and it'll make more sense

as for needle,,,,,,,,,,hm. needle big gay (try guessing who she likes lol)

but that don't mean that pin will let her guard down

also I feel like everyone in bfdi? is just baby. everyone in bfdi is young. and in idfb? everyones like.....older. not that old, but older.

I'm going off topic here, so anyways, enjoy this part of the story! this aint over yet, this aint gonna be over for a while

Feel free to follow me on Instagram (icemintfreeze) because i answer questions abt the story there n stuff? Plus i post art oop

enjoy!!! (this was a lot wowwie)

~ice

Valentine's Day Blues

"Good Morning Flower!" Ruby bursted into her room, giggling. She let Flower sleep in, since she woke up with a mild headache earlier on, and asked if she could rest up for a bit more. Ruby agreed, letting her get the rest she deserved.

"Cmon sleepyhead! We made waffles! A Valentine's Day treat, from me!" She giggled out.

Silence.

Ruby pouted a bit, walking up besides the bed.

"Flower? Hellooo?" She waved a bit. No response.

She bit her lip nervously, before looking down.

"Sorry Flower..." she whispered. She grabbed the blanket, and with one pull, she lifted it up into the air. She looked down, grinning happily to make her girlfriend's morning a bit better than it was.

"Wakey Wakey, Eggs and-"

"FLOWER!"

-

"Pin! How are you feeling?" Fries stood up from his garden as he saw Pin approaching him. She waved a bit.

"Ah, I'm feeling so much better than before, though my eye is bothering me, heh..." she patted the bandage that was still wrapped

around her eye.

" Thanks for the concern Fries."

Fries smiled warmly towards her, as he stood up, and brushed the dirt off of his knees. He put the trowel in his hands down, as he walked closer to her.

"I still can't believe that the Freesmarter's would do something like that.." he muttered. Pin snickered.

"Honestly, I never knew that they had that kind of attitude in them."

Fries rolled his eyes, as he picked up a small rag and wiped his hands clean from the dirt that stained them. She watched him quietly, leaning on the small garden fence that Fries built.

"You should've seen Coiny; he was crying non-stop one moment, and pouting angrily the next. He was freaked out, but after we thought you were gone for good, he acted like a kid." He chuckled a bit, shaking his head. Pin laughed a bit, as she watched Fries pick up a small pitcher with water, and began to water the growtatoes. Her eyes sparkled in amazement.

"Fries! They're growing!" She grinned.

"Does that mean-"

"No, not yet Pin." He raised his eyebrow.

"These are for me, and then, the rest is for all of you. I have to keep an eye out for Gelatin, because knowing him.." he grunted. Pin nodded, already understanding what he meant.
Gelatin was very sneaky when it came to stuff like this, but besides that, he was very witty and a bit gullible, especially when Firey was around.

Oh well, she has to figure out what she could do with him later.

She watched as Fries took care of the small plants, before she heard footsteps coming from behind. She turned around, and smiled when she saw Coiny walking up to her, grinning mischievously. She raised

an eyebrow, as she walked on over to him.

"What's with the smile?" She questioned. Coiny laughed a bit, before leaning close to Pin.

"Well, I did Golf Ball a favor and...well..." he grinned. Pin couldn't help but smile, as she began to hint towards what he did.

"I may or may not have forged a note to TB about her feelings-"

"You WHAT?!" She screamed out. Coiny quickly covered her mouth, snickering. She put a hand over his, and began to laugh a bit, muffling a few words that escaped her lips. She removed his hand, and looked up at him.

"Golf Ball is going to end you, you know that right?" She wrapped her fingers around his hand, interlocking their fingers together. He looked down at his hand, before looking back at her, smiling.

"Well, before I'm killed by a small ball who didn't even know what a kiss was, why don't you give your Co-Captain a kiss?" He winked. Pin's cheeks bloomed a deep red, as she rolled her eyes playfully.

"Fine, fine..." she whispered. She leaned in, and gave him a small peck on his lips. Coiny wrapped his arms around her waist, as he smiled, kissing her more passionately. Pin let out a muffled giggle, as she turned her face away from his.

"Coiny, that tickles!" She laughed out. Coiny smiled, as he held her in his arms. Pin sighed happily, letting her head rest on his shoulder.

"Also, Happy Valentines Day Captain~" He winked. Pin's eye widened as she shot up, confusion filling her mind.

"SINCE WHEN WAS IT VALENTINES DAY?!" She yelled out, her voice echoing through the city. Coiny flinched a bit, before putting his hand on her arm, calming her.

"Hey, hey, it's okay. You were out for a while..." he smiled. Pin grunted as she fell into his arms, hugging him.

"I'm so sorry Coiny, I didn't...I-"

"Don't." He smiled, holding her hand in his.

"It's okay, I promise."

Pin sighed sadly. Of course, on a day that was supposed to celebrate romance and relationships; she forgot.

She stayed his arms, before quick footsteps were heard in the distance. The two looked up, and noticed a small figure running towards them, telling angrily.

"COINY!! I'M GOING TO KILL YOU!"

Pin snickered.

"Yikes; is she really that mad?"

She looked towards her side, and noticed that Coiny was already scuttling away, laughing. Golf Ball quickly caught his eye, before she rammed herself against him. The collision sent the two flying onto the ground, as Golf Ball quickly stood up and put her foot on Coiny's stomach, keeping him down. He didn't mind; his laughs echoed through the streets as Golf Ball glared at him.

"WHY DID YOU DO THAT?!" Golf Ball screeched. Her cheeks were as red as a rose bush, as she pressed her foot harder against his stomach.

"WHY DID YOU WRITE THAT?!"

Coiny wiped his eyes, before looking at her, trying to contain his laughter.

"I TOLd You that the cure to what you have is TENNIS BALL! *But,* if you want to stay sick, then just..." he shrugged. Golf Ball pressed her foot down, and he winced a bit. Her eyes were blazing with rage as she stared down at him, her cheeks becoming more redder and redder.

"Oh, come on Golf Ball." Pin commented, as she came up to the two.

"I'm sure TB likes you that way-"

"I don't have TIME for this Pin!" She growled, as she lifted her foot off of Coiny. He took a deep breath in, as he sat up, putting an arm around his stomach. Golf Ball stood beside him, angrily.

"I just-" she paused.

"I don't know- I think..I-" she tried to think of the words, but her mind was blank. As she let out a heavy sigh, she looked up.

"You know what? I can't think about this right now."

Can't think about it? Pin looked down at Coiny, before looking back at Golf Ball, confusion in her eyes.

"What do you mean?" She crossed her arms. Golf Ball looked back up at her, her eyes gleaming with exhaustion and stress.

"Oh, haven't you heard?" Golf Ball dusted herself off.

"Flower is ill. Extremely ill, to the point she can't even move. She is confined to bed rest until I find out what happened to her, and maybe, how I can help cure her." She rolled her eyes.

"Ruby isn't helping; she's freaking out, to a point where I just want to lock her OUT of the room." She lamented.

This made Pin's heart drop, and spill all over the pavement below her feet. The petals. The lilies.
Her plan.

She put on a worried expression, as she looked down at Coiny. Coiny had the same expression, before he looked back at Golf Ball.

"Is she...gonna be okay?" His voice was soft, concern filling his tone. Golf Ball rubbed her temples, before looking up.

"I'm pretty sure she'll be okay; maybe it's some sort of severe stomach virus? Or a flu..."

"What are her symptoms?"

The three turned to face Fries, who overheard the conversation and

decided to come and join in. He crossed his arms, as Golf Ball closed her eyes in thought.

"She's showing the common symptoms of the flu..vomiting, a very high fever...but what's strange is that her heartbeat is abnormal..." she opened her eyes.

"She's been complaining about a migraine, and she freaks out at moments, saying that some objects are different colors..."

"Color disturbances, huh?" Fries muttered. Golf Ball nodded.

"And whats weird, is that she's extremely unresponsive..." She began to ramble to the three.

"I've run multiple tests, but every time I've tried to get a response, she just...doesn't."

"What did she eat." Fries voice was stern, as he was trying to analyze the symptoms that Flower had. Golf Ball thought for a moment.

"Well, from what I remember...she ate the sandwiches and tea we gave her. But, I don't remember what else, since Ruby told me this afternoon that she wasn't feeling well..."

Fries shook his head, as he looked back towards Coiny and Pin.

"We have to go see her."

"Why?" Coiny tilted his head, confused as to why they would go see someone as snarky as Flower. Pin nudged him, quickly shutting him up.

"I think I know what's wrong, but I have to see her first, and know what she ate." He looked back at Golf Ball.

"Where is she?"

"She's back in the clubhouse; I couldn't bring her back to the lab, she couldn't even WALK." She sighed in frustration. Fries grabbed Coiny and Pin's arms, and began to walk ahead.

"Well, what are we waiting for? Let's go."

The wrenching sounds of vomiting echoed through the house as Pencil opened the door, concern written all over her face. Flower clutched the small bucket that she had wrapped in her arms, as she continue to heave up nothing but bile, and a few off-colored liquids. Ruby sat beside her, her arms shaking as her eyes were shining with tears. She noticed Pencil, and looked towards her, struggling to keep her tears inside of her eyes.

"T-This is the seventh time." She muttered, her voice trembling from fear. Pencil glanced over at the small clock that hung on the wall.

"She threw up seven times...in the span of fifteen minutes." Pencil turned back towards Ruby, disbelief rising in her tone. Ruby nodded, her face turning a bit pale after hearing the terrible sounds escape from her girlfriend. But...

The sounds had stopped.

Flower held out the bucket, her arms trembling wildly. Pencil quickly took the bucket, and looked away in disgust.

"I'll...take this out. Don't worry about it." She offered, and Ruby nodded, quickly grabbing the small, pink handkerchief from her bedstead and carefully wiping Flower's mouth from the drool that was going down her chin. Her eyes immediately filled with tears as she looked down at her girlfriend.

Her face was cadaverous; beads of sweat were clearly visual, and her petals were all tattered and wrinkled; pale, and very, very dry. Ruby wiped her eyes, and put down the handkerchief. She looked back, and gently took Flower's hand, caressing it gently.

Flower's eyes were closed, yet her breathing was heavy, and awfully

raspy. The pain was unbearable; she couldn't handle any more of it. She felt something soft brushing up and down her hands, and as she slowly opened her eye, it revealed to be Ruby. A weak smile grew on Flower's face, as Ruby looked at her.

She didn't smile back. Instead, tears began to pour down her cheeks, as the gem began to feel sobs bubbling up in her throat. She carefully put her hand on Flower's cheek, and let the soft touch of her hand console Flower. She cleared her throat.

"S-So..." Her voice was quiet. Flower continued to let out wheezes of pain, but she left her eye open, letting Ruby know that she was listening.

"D-..." Ruby paused.

"Do you need anything...?"

Flower looked at her, and after letting out a soft sigh, she slowly shook her head no. Ruby nodded, as she looked down, letting more tears roll down her glimmering cheeks.

"I..I'm sorry I wasn't a good girlfriend to you..." She whimpered out. Flower's eyes widened a bit, as she continued to listen.

"I'm sorry I was so fearful, I should've been the one watching over you and taking care of you, I should've been more mature, I shouldn't have acted like an idiot, I-"

"Ruby." A hoarse voice croaked out, making Ruby jump a bit. She looked down, and realized that it was Flower who spoke. Her voice..

"Don't...you dare..." She wheezed.

"Say that..."

She closed her eyes, and slowly took a deep breath in, trying to collect her jumbled thoughts from her numbed mind. Ruby held her hand, letting her fingers close around hers. They sat in silence, the wheezing being the only thing that wouldn't break it.

The others? Well...they were outside. Occasionally, they would all

check in, but they would leave, feeling the worry eat at them more than before.

But a sudden knock at the door made the two jump. Ruby looked down at Flower, and Flower slowly nodded, giving her approval to let whoever was on the other side of the door, in. Ruby slowly got down from the bed, and trudged over to the door, opening it slowly.

"Ruby?"

The small gem looked through the crack of the door, and saw the small scientist standing there, with three more objects behind her. Ruby opened the door, and saw that it was Fries, Pin and Coiny.

"Oh.." She quickly stepped aside, as the four walked in, their eyes immediately going towards Flower's direction. Flower's eyes greeted them back, as she let out a sigh. Golf Ball turned towards Ruby.

"How long has t been since she puked." She asked lowly.

"About...five minutes.." Ruby whispered.

Fries went up towards her, and looked down at Flower. Flower gulped a bit, as she noticed him standing over her, inspecting her face. Her vision suddenly tilted, as her eyes began to go downwards. She mumbled in confusion, before coughing a bit.

"Flower?" Fries's voice made everyone in the room turn towards him. Flower struggled to make eye contact with him, her eyes drooping down and going dark. She mumbled, as her entire body began to tremble.

"G-Golf Ball?" Fries stepped back a bit. Golf Ball quickly ran over, and quickly began to listen to her heart using her a stethoscope. Her face fell, as she looked down at Flower.

"Abnormal heartbeat..." She whispered.

"I..Its so slow..."

Ruby shook her head, as she quickly climbed into the bed beside Flower, tears stinging in her eyes.

"Flower..? F-Flower, please..." her voice began to fade away, as she grabbed Flower's hand and held it close to her.

"Please, don't...don't die, please..." She cried out. Her fingers closed around her hand, as she began to sob. She repeated those words, as she held her hand close to her chest, refusing to let it go. Flower's body began to twitch even more, as blood began to trickle out of her mouth.

"WHAT'S WRONG WITH HER?!" Pin cried out, stepping back from shock.

act.

Ruby began to shake her head even more, sobbing.

"FLOWER, STOP IT! STOP!!" Tears began to splash down onto the sheets, as Flower continued to violently jolt and twitch, her eyes beginning to roll into the back of her head. She let out choked wheezes and painful coughs, as everything around her began to fade away. This lasted for a good minute, before Flower finally collapsed onto the bed, breathing heavily. Ruby looked down at her, shock and fear glimmering in her eyes.

By this point, everyone had come in to see what was happening. The freesmarters, coiny, pin...

Everyone.

"R-..Ruby..." Flower let her fingers interlock around Ruby's hand, as she gave it a gentle squeeze. Ruby shook her head, as she scooped up Flower with her free arm, holding her close. Flower let a small smile grow on her face, as she looked at Ruby. Her free hand slowly went up, and wiped a tear from Ruby's cheek, shaking.

"H..Have you ever...met someone...who.." She coughed a bit.

"Changed...your life...for the better.."

Ruby nodded, and let a smile grow on her face.

"Y-Yes, yes, I have, love! I met you! Y-You made my life so much

better!" Her voice was trembling, as she looked down at her girlfriend.

"W-Well.." Flower winced a bit, a sudden wave of pain hitting her. Ruby panicked.

"F-FLOWER?!"

Flower let out a small whimper, as she began to shake her head, tears beginning to roll down her cheeks.

"R-Ruby, please-" she rasped out.

"I-...I don't want to die..." She looked up at her, her eyes widened and bloodshot, yet filled with pain and fear.

"I-I'm so scared..."

Ruby held back a sob, as she hugged her close, holding her hand tightly.

"D-Don't say that love..." She sniffed, rocking her gently.

"I-I'm here with you..."

She continued to rock her, not even noticing that she was starting to hum, and soon, sing.

"I-...If I could..begin to be...half of what, you think of me..." She looked down at her lovingly, feeling her heart pound with sadness.

"I could do about anything..."

"I...Could even learn....how to love..." Flower whimpered out, slowly finding her pitch. She looked up at Ruby, tears rolling down her flushed cheeks, yet, a sad smile was growing on her face.

"W-When I see..the way you act..." Her throat began to close up, as she felt Flower wince harshly once more.

"Wondering w-..when..I'm coming back...." Her grip on Ruby's hand began to loosen, as Flower let out a choked whimper.

"I-I could..do about anything..." Ruby closed her eyes, rocking Flower ever so gently.

"I-I could....even...l..." Flower's voice began to fade away.

"learn...h..how....to love..." She took a shaky breath in, the room around her suddenly glowing white.

"t-..to...l*ove*..."

Silence suddenly filled the room, as Flower let her final breath escape her lips. Her hand slipped out of Ruby's grip, as her body went limp in Ruby's arms. Ruby stared down at her girlfriend, her eyes widened in shock. A stream of tears began to pour down her face, as she began to tremble. She looked up.

"L...Like...You...."

A loud sob suddenly escaped her lips, as she scooped up the limp corpse of her girlfriend, and sobbed into her soft, delicate petals, her world around her, crumbling into pieces.

---

holy moly this was the LONGEST chapter I've written (also very very. poorly written I'm sorry guys i,,cant write)

but happy valentines day! i hope you guys had a good day of love

honestly, I'm not.,,fond of the holiday, so just. ehfndh it was just a oof today

anyways enjoy ur suffering in part 20 of this series kasjdhgfdhsj

see ya!

~Ice

~X~

"So, uh..Ruby told me that you wanted to speak to me, what's up? I hope you're not mad or upset, I just wanted to hang out with her since we haven't hung out in a while, a-and-"

"Book."

"I-I-..uh, Yes?"

"I feel...so damn sick right now. I...it hurts to just...breathe. A lot. I feel...high? GB's medicine...Its gross..."

"What? Flower, you're going off topic here..."

"I...feel so weird....I don't know if...I'll be okay..."

"Flower-"

"Book, please, just listen to me, just..for a moment, please..."

"Alright, Alright.."

Silence.

"If anything happens...today, or..tomorrow...."

"..."

"Take care of Ruby for me...*please*."

Awkward 'Happy Accidents'

The door slowly shut behind the three, as they stood in complete silence. Their heads were flooded with questions, as they tried to grasp at everything that just happened. But instead, they began to walk, walk back towards the city and away from the clubhouse.

It was Fries who broke the silence first.

"Poisoned." He uttered, his eyes filled with shock and disbelief,

"She was poisoned."

When she head this, Pin didn't dare look up from the ground. She rubbed her wrists, as she squeezed her eye shut to prevent a tear from slipping down her cheek, not wanting to show any kind of weakness towards Fries.

"Poor Ruby...I always knew that she was just...annoying, but..." he sighed.

"She didn't deserve this. At all."

Coiny glanced over at Pin, and then looked back up at Fries, his eyes shimmering sadly.

"What are they gonna do now...?" He whispered pitifully. Fries looked down, as he rubbed his forehead, his face exhausted and worn out.

"Well, knowing how the Freesmarter's...and Ruby, are...they're gonna do a full-out funeral. Golf Ball might perform an autopsy on her body before anything else, to see how she was poisoned."

"But how do you *know* she was poisoned?" Pin interrupted, still staring down at the pavement. Fries looked at her.

"Listen. Since I started to work on my garden, I had to learn about the

things that could go into a garden, and what couldn't. I had to learn about poisonous plants so, if there's one in my garden, I can get rid of it." He took a breath.

"I learned about the weeds that could grow, I learned about the way my plants could die, especially in conditions like this. I learned about poppies and sunflowers, but what intrigued me was the poisonous flowers. Those symptoms she had...were eerily similar to...lilies of the valley flowers?" He thought for a moment.

"But this wasn't an accident. Someone...*she*....is after all of us. They're hunting each and every one of us down, staring with the frail and weak..."

Pin held her breath.

"And finishing...with the toughest."

Coiny clenched his fist, and mumbled angrily. He shut his eyes as he felt tears sting in his eyes, as he began to remember the dumb flame that he wanted to...apologize to. The small commotion caught Fries's attention, as he raised an eyebrow towards the small coin-creature.

Pin broke out of her staring, and carefully let her hand wrap around Coiny's hand, letting her warmth melt and permeate away into him. This seemed to calm him down, as he loosened up, and gave her a small, sad smile. She returned the smile, and looked up, as the three continued to trudge back towards the city.

"Ruby?"

Book knocked gently on the door, as she stood patiently, a tray of food in her hands. She waited for the gem to open the door, and speak, but, as in the words of everyone who has *tried* to speak to her..

No response.

Booked sighed, as she put the tray down, putting her hand on the doorknob.

"Ruby, I'm coming in now...it's just me, ok?" She reassured. She turned the doorknob, and slowly let the door creak open. Light bursted into the darkened room, as the gem laid in her bed, covered in her blankets and sheets. She hasn't moved from that spot for at least five hours now.

Book quietly walked over to her bed, and sat on the edge of it. She looked over at the heap of blankets.

"Ruby?"

Nothing.

She scooched closer, as she gently put a hand on Ruby's leg. This made the gem twitch, as she grumbled angrily.

"What do you want." She growled. She snatched her leg up, hiding it in the large pile of blankets that was already hiding the rest of her. Book sighed, as she looked down.

"I..." she paused.

"I brought you...food..." she looked back over towards her.

"You have to eat, I'm starting to worry about you..."

"Then stop it." Ruby replied coldly. Book looked down, as she slowly got up from the bed.

"...I'll bring your food inside. Try to eat a little...it'll help you feel better." She walked over, and brought the small tray inside. She placed it on the nightstand beside the bed, as she began to walk out.

"..Book..."

Book turned around, at the sudden quiet voice that called her back. She slowly approached her, looking down at the sheets.

"Yes?"

"...What did she tell you."

Book tilted her head a bit, a slight confusion digging up in her mind. She came a bit closer, so she could hear what she said once more.

"Pardon, uh...what?"

"What did Fl...." Ruby's voice trailed off as she grumbled and shook her head.

"What did she tell you."

"O-Oh..." She rubbed her arm.

"Well...she..uh...apologized to me, about..what happened before, you know..." she lied for a bit, feeling a bit scared to tell Ruby what she really meant. She took a deep breath.

"And...she wanted...me to...take care of you, when she..." she whispered.

Ruby's eyes were now fixated on Book, tears already pouring out of them and spilling all over her red sheets. She clenched her sheets tightly, as she felt many emotions rush through her darkened mind. Is she hurt? Happy? Angry..?

Book shook her head, as she began to walk out.

"I know this is all too much, but...please, try to eat something...for her..."

And for me.

She slowly made her way back towards the door, but something suddenly made her pause. She felt...hypnotized. She turned around, and looked back towards Ruby, and with a heavy heart, she whispered,

"I love you Rub-"

Her eyes widened as she slapped her hand over her mouth. As soon as she saw the covers moving, she quickly ran out and slammed the door behind her. She quickly scrambled out of the clubhouse, and stood by the door, her hand clutching her chest. Sweat dripped down

her cover as she slowly let her trembling hand touch her lips gently, as she stared down at the floor.

She couldn't believe she said that.

She SHOULDN'T have said that.

"Ohh gosh..." Book began to fan herself with her free hand, as her heart began to pound harshly in her chest. She made a mistake.

She looked around, looking for ANYONE she could speak to and vent to, but...

Aha!

"ICY!" Book cried out, as she dashed over towards the small cube. She carried a bag in her mouth, filled with a couple of food items, before she was tackled by Book. Small cans and boxes spilled everywhere, as Book hugged Ice Cube close, crying. Ice Cube looked up at her.

"Book? What happened?" She asked, concern in her tone of voice. Book wiped her eyes and look down at her small friend, shaking.

"I told her- I told her I loved her!" She buried her face into Ice Cube, sobbing.

"THIS WAS THE WORST TIME I COULD'VE TOLD HER!"

"Book, breathe." Ice Cube wriggled free from her grasp, as she looked at her friend. Her eyes were widened and filled with regret, as she quickly let out panicked breaths. Ice Cube took slow breaths, and soon, Book began to follow, her panicked breaths becoming longer, and slower.

"That's it..." she whispered.

Book shook her head, as she covered her face with her hands.

"I made a mistake....." she whispered pitifully.

"Now, Book..." Ice Cube frowned.

"Not everything you do is a mistake...how about we just call it...happy accidents?"

"I- Wait."

———————-

"Hey Coiny?"

"What?"

"Do you remember....back in season one..when I mentioned how I liked you?"

Coiny's eyes widened as he slowly scooted away from Needle, a nervous feeling sitting in his chest. Needle noticed, and rolled her eyes.

"Relax, you dummy, I'm not gonna steal you or anything."

Coiny sighed as he went back, continuing to walk around the city. The two usually did this back when everything wasn't...as chaotic as it was right now. A friendly stroll between two pals, something the two always enjoyed to do together.

"Anyways, I just have to apologize about that." She laughed a bit, as she put a hand on her face in embarrassment.

"I was so weird."

"Hey!" Coiny frowned, shoving her a bit. She stumbled back a bit, laughing.

"I didn't mean it that way!"

Coiny's frown slowly turned into a smile, as she continued to laugh. She crossed her arms, and looked around the quiet city, letting the cool air swiftly blow on her.

"Well, for starters, I forgive you." Coiny chuckled, as he looked ahead.

"Only because I may have had the same feelings for you back then."

"YOU WHAT?!" Now it was Needle who quickly backed away, her hand poised in the air, ready to strike a slap if he dared to do anything. He backed away, his hands raised in mercy.

"Woah, easy there Needle, I'm not gonna 'take you away', I'm with someone, remember?" He crossed his arms. Needle grinned nervously, as she put her hand down.

"Haha...Sorry."

Coiny rolled his eyes, and looked at her.

"But yeah, I did have those feelings for a while, but as we got more into the game, they just slowly...vanished. I was more focused on winning and slapping Firey all of the time." He casually explained, as he leaned against a large building. She nodded.

"I totally get you. When I was eliminated, I started hanging out with TD more, and we eventually became close friends!" A wide grin began to grow on her face, her eyes shining with joy as she mentioned Teardrop.

"She's really...Sweet. Understanding, a great listener, and she has a calming aura around her..." she sighed dreamily.

"Soft hands...pretty eyes...soft..lips...."

By this point, Coiny was smirking as he watched a blush grow on Needle's cheeks. It was only a matter of seconds, before Needle snapped out of it, and stared down at Coiny, her eyes widened in shock.

"How much of that did you hear." She asked, lowly.

"Enough for me to go over AND TELL HER FOR YOU!" He laughed evilly, as he began to run towards the forest. Needle shrieked as she quickly ran after him, her face already burning with blush.

"COINY, DON'T YOU DARE!" She screamed out, as she continued to run after the small coin. He quickly dodged all of the branches and rocks, as he began to dart around trees to try and confuse her. He looked around, and then he decided to roll down towards the TLC,

which was nearly in sight. His heart pounded from the adrenaline as he went on his side and began to roll down the hill, the world spinning around him.

Needle, however, had her ways. She's a fast runner; the fastest in the city. She managed to quickly follow Coiny's path, and quickly caught up to him as he began to roll down the path. She growled as she began to run even faster, her heart pounding the adrenaline through her body. She could see him, he was right there!

She's getting close, she can stop him...

Suddenly, Needle quickly stumbled over her foot and fell, her body slamming onto the ground below her. She cried out from the impact, feeling her ankle throb harshly in pain.

At this point, Coiny had stopped rolling, and was now at the TLC. He was far ahead of her, and he smirked with pride as he gently knocked on the large, metal wall, hearing it echo through the air.

"Who's there?" A deep voice rang through the box. Coiny's face lit up with pure ecstasy.

"Blocky! Is that you?!"

"Coiny? Dude, it's been so long! How have you been?!" The voice quickly rushed over towards the wall, where Coiny was standing. Coiny leaned against the wall, sighing.

"Things have been getting out of control here, man. A lot has happened, and it's just exhausting, but also a bit..." he paused.

"Scary."

"Are you talking about what happened with Firey?" Pen's voice chimed in, as he went over to the side where Blocky was put.

"Well, yeah, there's that, but; hey, how did you know about Firey?" Coiny raised an eyebrow, as he leaned into the wall.

"Well, a while ago...more like, days ago, Tennis Ball came by and asked if Rocky was near. He wasn't, as after asking what was wrong,

he explained what was going on."

"Did he find Rocky by the way?" Pen asked, as he sat down.

"The poor dude was freaking out about him, he's like...his kid or something."

Coiny's face dropped, as he sat down on a soft patch of grass, clearing his throat.

"W-Well, uh.." he stuttered.

"We...found him..but...he was gone..."

"Gone?" Eraser's voice was heavy with concern.

"You mean....dead?"

"...Yes." Coiny replied quietly.

Small whispers began to echo through out the box, as the eliminated contestants began to chatter about the deaths of Firey and Rocky.

"Not only that..." Coiny added on.

"But..Woody was found as well, slaughtered and really beaten up, and today, Flower fell ill, and she...died." His voice went quiet at the mention of Flower.

Panicked whispers and mumbled began to erupt from the TLC as multiple voices began to shout.

"Murder!" Cried one of them.

"We have to escape! They're coming for us!" Another one yelled.

"Escape?! We can't escape, then it'll be easier for them to get us next!" A voice growled.

"Alright, Alright, calm down." Coiny patted the metal walls gently, as the fearful chatter began to come to a close.

"TB and GB are trying their best to figure out what's going on, but as

of right now, we're just keeping an eye out for-"

"YOU!"

Before he could even cry out, Needle tackled Coiny over, and slammed a hand over his mouth angrily. He was kicking frantically as he had his eyes shut in fear, trying to push her off of him. She growled angrily, as she lifted her hand, and gave him a clear slap across his face.

"YOU ARE HORRIBLE!" She screamed out.

"COMPLETELY, UTTERLY HORRIBLE!"

Coiny quickly scrambled back, as he held his stinging cheek.

"Needle! Needle I didn't even say anything, calm d- woah, what happened to YOU?" He suddenly noticed her ankle, which was swollen and red. She grunted angrily, as she dragged herself over to the TLC, giving it a specific knock. She made a small rhythm with seven knocks, and she slowly slid down, letting her back rest against the metal wall. A few moments passed, before small, rushes footsteps were heard.

"Needle?" A light, yet broad voice was heard.

"Is that you?"

"Eggy....." Needle gasped, feeling a sudden rush of pain from her leg.

"Where's...Teardrop...."

A moment of silence was heard, before another pair of footsteps was heard, quickly running towards the wall. The same rhythm of knocks came back from inside, as Needle gasped.

"TD!! WHAT DID COINY SAY?!" She cried out, feeling her cheeks glow with blush and embarrassment.

Silence passed once more, before Eggy spoke out.

"She said that..'He only told us about what has been happening so far,

with everyone dying and such'."

Needle let out a sigh of relief, as she put her hand on her forehead. Coiny slowly approached her, as he began to examine her ankle.

"She asked if you're alright, Needle." Eggy exclaimed. Needle waved her hand tiredly, as she shook her head.

"N-Nonono, I'm fine-"

"Ok! I think I can pop it back into place Needy!" Coiny placed both of his hands on her ankle, and gripped it hard.

"Don't call me NEEDY! And what are you-"

A loud crack echoed through the air, as Needle let out a loud scream. She gritted her teeth, as tears began to pour down her cheeks, more pain erupting from her leg. Coiny winced.

"Sorry Needle..." he whispered.

At this point, frantic knocks were coming from the TLC. The knocks became louder and louder, before they began to turn into loud bangs.

It was Teardrop.

"T-Teardrop..." Needle took a breath.

"I'm okay-I-I'm okay..."

The knocking died down, as TD turned towards Eggy.

'ASK HER WHAT HAPPENED.' She frantically signed.

"She asked you 'What happened', Needle." Eggy translated.

"O-Oh-" she felt a blush bloom on her cheeks.

"I- Um.."

"She decided to race me to the TLC, and I managed to beat her! Only because she...tripped, and uh..her ankle.." Coiny chuckled nervously. A moment passed, before Eggy snickered.

"She said 'If it weren't for the metal walls that were keeping her in prisoned, she would've killed you Coiny'."

Coiny sighed, before he looked back up at Needle, concern shining in his eyes.

"Hey, are you feeling okay...?" He whispered. Needle looked at him, exhaustion painted all over her face. There were still tears of pain that dropped down her face, but Coiny gently put a hand on her cheek, wiping her shining tears off of her stained cheeks. Needle sighed, and looked down at the grass below them, plucking a few blades off of a small patch.

"I...It still hurts, but, I can manage." She grumbled. Coiny smiled, as he put an arm around her.

"Well, at least I didn't- you know-"

"Shut UP!" Needle interrupted him, angrily. Coiny snickered, as he looked back at her ankle.

"Oh, and Coiny?"

"Hm?"

A loud slap echoed through the air, as Coiny yelped in pain.

"Don't call me NEEDY!" She cried out angrily. Coiny sighed, before he rested his head on her shoulder. She rolled her eyes, but stayed still, letting him rest on her shoulder. They stayed that way, watching the wind blow against the grass, the blades swiftly flowing with the breeze.

"Coiny?"

The voice made both of them jump, as they looked over to the source of the voice.

Pin.

Coiny quickly scrambled up, brushing himself off nervously.

"P-Pin!" He grinned.

"H-How long have you been standing there?"

Needle face palmed. Pin stared at him, and then stared down at Needle, her eye empty and foggy. Coiny let out a sigh.

"L-Look...this isn't what it looks like-"

"No."

The sudden tone sent chills down Needle as she watched Pin closely. She shook her head frantically, as she scooted back a bit.

"Pin, I swear, w-we weren't doing anything wrong-"

"No."

Coiny looked at her, confusion hanging heavily over his mind.

"What?"

A smile slowly stretched over Pin's face, as she looked at the two. A...odd smile.

"No. It's okay." She gritted through her teeth, oddly calmingly.

"I promise it is perfectly fine."

Coiny mentally sighed in relief.

"I was just here to tell you that I made some cake, if you wanted any." She continued to stare at Needle.

"IF. You wanted any."

The three stayed in a heavy silence for a minute, before Pin swiftly turned around, and began to walk off.

"I'll be at my place! Come find me if you need me." She let her hand ball up into a fist, as she turned back a bit.

"Have, 'fun', you two."

And with that, she walked off, disappearing into the woods. Coiny felt his hands beginning to tremble, as his heart began to race.

"Needle, we- I- have to head back- please-"

"Hey." She put a hand on his shoulder.

"Go ahead. I'm...sorry about this, I'm sorry about all of this. Just go, before she explodes again."

She gave him a kind smile.

"Besides, I can make it back myself. I'll be okay."

Coiny looked at her, feeling himself calm down.

"Are you sure?"

"Yes, I'm sure. I'm gonna be fine, you're gonna be fine..."

A apparition slowly faded in besides Needle, mimicking her every move. Coiny's eyes widened as he suddenly became as still as a statue.

Needle opened her eyes, as well as...

Flower.

They both smiled, blood trickling down Flower's chin.

"We're going to be fine."

Ahh, mistakes, aka, happy accidents

Anyways hellooooo

I hope you all are doing okay today!

Let us bless the awkward gays because honestly???? Me too sis

Welp! Here we are. In this....kind of a cliff hanger ? But not a cliffhanger. Maybe? Possibly.

Also!! I have a headcanon that Needle visita TD a lot since she's in the TLC, and yknow. I feel like TD speaks in sign language, so while Needle is visiting, Eggy translates what TD is saying to Needle. She doesn't mind; it's entertaining.

Anyways, enjoy part 22 of the story!!

See ya later!

~ice

Welcomed with Open Arms

"Pin?"

Coiny slowly opened the wooden door, as he peeked inside. Sunlight poured into the room through the open blinds, as a sweet, sugary smell danced through the air. Coiny sniffed, and a smile grew on his face.

Cake.

He slowly crept through the hallway, as he followed the sound of clinging pots and pans, as well as the sweet melody of someone humming. He looked through the doorway, and saw Pin, humming quietly as she was mixing a bowl of her delicious homemade icing. Coiny cleared his throat quietly, and this caught her attention, as she paused, and gently put down the bowl. She turned, and smiled when she saw Coiny standing in the doorway.

"Hi..." Her voice was warm and calm. Off, in a way...

"Hey there..." he chuckled, as he made his way inside.

"Is everything okay...? You ran off a bit early there..."

Pin's smile faded away a bit, before she shook her head. She looked at him, exhaustion in her eye.

"Yeah, everything's fine..." she mumbled. She grabbed her bowl, and continued to mix the bowl of light, fluffy sweetness that she would soon place onto the cake. Coiny sighed, and out a hand on her shoulder.

"Look....if this is about Needle, then-"

"No! Coiny, it's alright!" Pin forced out a laugh, as she rested her head

on Coiny's shoulder. She opened her mouth to say something, but... Nothing could come out.

Coiny sighed, and put a hand on her cheek, stroking it gently.

"Are you sure..?" He whispered.

"I know...you haven't been feeling your best lately, but..."

Don't get angry anymore Pin. This will only lead to your own demise.

Become nicer! Become ignorant. Don't be your bossy, sassy self. You don't want to end up being stuck in a loser chamber again, don't you? Be different. Be sweeter. Be someone...

Unrecognizable.

Pin slowly nodded, as she let a soft sigh escape her lips. Coiny smiled, as he wrapped his arms around her, hugging her close.

"How do I always find myself, melting in your arms like a goof?" Pin snickered, as she continued to stir. Coiny dipped his finger into the pink mixture, as he scooped out a small bunch. He quickly licked it, and his face brightened, as the icing quickly melted on his tongue.

"Pin; this is amazing! How do you do it?!" He complimented, his eyes sparkling in awe. Pin giggled, as a blush of embarrassment glowed on her cheeks.

"Oh, it's nothing, really..." she mumbled. Coiny scoffed, and wrapped an arm around her.

"Nothing?! Aw cmon sweetheart, this is anything BUT nothing!" He grinned. Pin stared down at the floor, smiling and her cheeks burning with blush.

Such a great actress, aren't you?

This genuinely feels nice, just...let me have my moment.

Did you check the icing?

Pin's heart stopped. Her face went pale, as she slowly looked down at the silver bowl in her arms, beads of ooze forming at the top of her head.

Was this batch...

Her world became fuzzy and numb, as the bowl slipped out of her hands. She felt herself collapse on her knees, as she quickly shoved the bowl away, her entire body trembling like a *leaf*.

Oh Pin, did you forget?

Was it this batch, or was it the other?

Look at what you've done....
His death was inevitable, but, there's nothing you can do now, is there Pin?

No....

No no no, stop, I didn't....I made sure...

Is he alright? Or has his time come?

Pin held her head, as tears began to pour out of her eye. Her heart began to beat even faster, as she continued to mumble in fear.

Look at you...so fragile and scared. I can feel the pity in the air.

But, who would give pity to someone like you? Definitely not me...

She shut her eyes.

Pin.

PIN.

"PIN!"

Pin's eyes snapped opened as she quickly looked around her kitchen. The bowl was on the floor, it's contents spilled out everywhere. And Pin..

"Are you okay?? What happened?" Coiny cupped his hands around Pin's cheeks as he looked closer at her.

"Are you sick? Ill? Tired?"

Pin let her eyes close, as she let out a sigh.

"I-..I'm sorry you had to see that." she mumbled out, staring at the floor.

"I just..." her eyes closed.

Coiny looked at her, then back at the cakes that were on the table. Some of them were frosted, and two, were not. He looked down.

"Do you want me to finish frosting the cakes for you?" He suggested, as he helped lift her up.

"If you aren't feeling your best, I can help..."

Pin shook her head slowly, as she balanced herself with the help of Coiny.

"No...No, it's okay, I can manage..." she breathed, as she gave Coiny a kind smile.

"Thanks for helping out, though..."

Coiny smiled back, as he leaned in and gave her a quick peck on her lips. He watched as her smile grew even more, before she gasped and looked down at the icing that was on the floor.

"Coiny? How do you feel?"

Coiny's head tilted. What did she mean by that?

"I feel...alright...why? What's the matter?"

"How much icing did you eat?" She looked back at him, her eyes filled with fear and concern. He shrugged.

"Probably just a..drop? A really small pile..." he lifted his finger.

"Enough to cover the tip of my finger."

Pin looked down at the icing, then back up at him. She shut her eyes, and quickly took in a deep breath.

How much did you bake.

'Enough for everyone, of course.'

Did you poison all of them?

'...no.'

Pin quickly put on a smile, as she picked up the bowl and placed it back onto the table. She brushed herself off, before walking over to the fridge.

"I-I had to make a lot of frosting, since I made cakes for nearly everyone in the city..." she laughed out nervously.

"But...hopefully I still have an extra batch in here-"

"What?"

Pin looked over, and shrieked as she saw Coiny eating the rest of the frosting in that bowl. She ran over and slapped his hand away, making him gasp.

"Pin?? What was that for?!"

Pin looked at her hand, and then looked back at him, her eyes widened.

"Oh- I- Um-..." she began to panic.

Act Pin. If he hasn't keeled over, simply act. What could possibly make you sooo panicked over the icing?

*"*Th-...The icing...I realized that..."

Coiny listened, rubbing his stinging hand.

"The..eggs! The eggs I used, were...expired...and I...had to get rid of

it." She grinned, quickly wiping away a bead of ooze that was beginning to form on her head.

Coiny's eyes widened as he spit out the remaining frosting from his mouth, wiping it.

"PIN! YOU SHOULD'VE TOLD ME! NOW I'M GONNA GET SICK!" He cried out.

"No no!! Hopefully the amount you ate wasn't enough to get you sick..."

He paused, and looked back at her.

"Are you sure..?"

She nodded.

"Besides, that can be easily cured...with the help of GB and TB, of course."

Coiny sighed, as he leaned onto the wall.

"Good."

Good indeed.

"EVERYONE! IT'S TIME TO BRING BACK A FELLOW OBJECT FROM THE TINY LOSER CHAMBER!"

Golf Ball's voice echoed through the city as the others quickly ran towards them, eager to figure out who will be next to join them.

"We need to do some sort of voting system so we can keep things fair, so I've decided to do it this way!" She motioned towards Tennis Ball, who put down a box of paper slips (lol) and a few pencils. Match nudged Pencil gently and pointed towards the pencils, which made Pencil giggle.

"You all will be given a paper slip, and your job is to write down the

name of the object you would like to see come back! The object with the most votes, gets to leave the Tiny Loser Chamber, and come back with us!" Golf Ball stomped her foot, beaming with pride.

"Go ahead guys, the quicker we started, the quicker we can finish." Tennis Ball pushed the box towards the others, as he quickly went over to Golf Ball's side. She looked up, and quickly looked away, mumbling. Tennis Ball smiled.

"Not bad.." he whispered. This made her grumble even more, but, he didn't mind.

Everyone was in thought, thinking about who they'd like to see again. Pin, Needle and Coiny all exchanged glances, as he sighed.

"Okay; I don't know who to vote for." He threw his hands in the air out of defeat. Pin simply shrugged, as she continued to think about who'd she like to see again.

"Well, My vote is going for TD..." Needle sighed out.

"Probably won't make much of a difference, but, at least I tried..."

Coiny glanced over at her, and quickly scribbled something down onto the paper. He then raised it into the air, and yelled.

"HEY! LOVEBIRDS! I FINISHED!"

This made nearly everyone snicker, as Golf Ball began to stomp over towards Coiny's direction.

"Why you little-"

"OKAY! Let's continue!" Tennis Ball laughed nervously as he gently moved Golf Ball away from Coiny. He took Coiny's paper, as well as Needle's, and placed it back into the box. Golf Ball stuck her tongue out at Coiny, and he laughed.

Pin stared at the blank sheet of paper in her hands, as thoughts continued to swirl around in her mind.

Teardrop.

What?

Teardrop. Vote for Teardrop.

She'll help with the garden, won't she?

Or will she keep Needle away?

Pin sighed, as she wrote the name onto the paper. She walked over to the box, and let it flutter on top of the other paper slips.

Moments passed, before the box was filled with the slips. Golf Ball turned around, and looked back towards everyone.

"Me and TB will count these up. You all can go over to the LOL now; we'll see you there." She announced. Everyone began to make their way out, talking amongst each other over the possibilities of who could return.

Needle was falling behind, since she had a cast on her ankle, but Coiny and Pin stayed by her side.

"Well, if Teardrop doesn't rejoin, I hope it's someone nice!" Needle smiled.

"I hope SB makes it back! He was my best friend!" Coiny threw a fist in the air triumphantly, as he laughed. Pin smiled, as she felt butterflies in her stomach. Why was he so...cute?

"What about you Pin? Who'd you vote for?" Needle turned her head to face Pin, her face painted with curiosity. Pin shrugged, shaking her head.

"I mean...I voted for Teardrop, figuring you'd be more happy if she were here-"

Pin's words were suddenly cut off as Needle gave her a huge hug. Needle had a huge grin plastered on her face, as she gave her a gentle squeeze.

"OH, THANK YOU PIN!" Her high pitched voice squealed. Pin chuckled, as she patted her arm gently.

"No prob."

Coiny cleared his throat, as the two looked over at him curiously.

"I may or may not have voted for TD too-"

Needle gasped, and quickly scooped him into her arms, hugging them both.

"You two are the best!" She cried happily. But soon, her smile disappeared, as she let go of the two.

"Though, I don't think that's enough for her to make it back..."

Pin sighed, and looked up.

"Hey, at least we tried, hopefully next time, she'll make it back?" She patted Needle's back, as they began to notice the TLC in the distance. Needle took a deep breath in, before she looked back up, her eyes shining with hope.

"Hopefully..."

"ALRIGHT EVERYONE! MOVE OUT OF THE WAY!" Golf Ball's voice made everyone jump. She bursted through the small crowd, with Tennis Ball following close behind. He carried the wall teleporter on top of him, as he gently placed it down onto the ground. He quickly flipped a few switches, and suddenly, the device began to glow. Tennis Ball looked up, and nodded towards Golf Ball.

Golf Ball nodded back, before banging Her leg onto the metal walls, seemingly 'knocking'.

"TEARDROP! GET OVER HERE!"

Needle's eyes widened in shock, as she felt her heart skip a beat.
Teardrop...
Was chosen!

Pin glanced over at Needle, and rubbed her arm, a bit anxiously.

Something was itching at her; she just couldn't shake it off.

But what could she do?

Needle clapped her hands happily, but soon noticed Pin's expression. Dazed and worried. She looked up, and saw Golf Ball scanning the area, making sure everyone was clear of the devices path.

She had time.

Needle tapped on Pin's shoulder, and this made Pin jump. She quickly turned her head towards the taller object, as she plastered on a fake smile.

"Yes, Needle?"

Needle frowned.

"Pin, are you Okay? You look...antsy." She put a hand on her shoulders calmly, as she gave her a reassuring smile.

Pin opened her mouth, but was quickly cut off.

Tell her.

Bring her out of the area, and tell her.

Pin gulped.

"C-Can I..tell you something?" She leaned in closer.

"In..private?"

Needle looked at her expression, and felt immediate guilt upon seeing it. She had to help her, she just couldn't leave her in a state.
And since TD was coming back in less than a few, she had to give her at least a few more bits of care.

She nodded, and looked over towards Coiny.

"Hey, were gonna head back. Pin needs a moment.." She stated. Coiny looked at Pin, and walked over to her side.

"Do you want me to go with you..?" He asked, taking her hand.

"I don't want you getting hurt.."

Pin smiled nervously, as she waved her hand towards him, ooze dripping down her face. Something clawed at her, luring her away from the crowd.

"HERE GOES NOTHING!"

Tennis Ball flipped the small switch, and the device began to tremble. In less than a few seconds, a beam zapped through the air, slamming against the hard, metal wall of the TLC.

A few moments passed, before a swirling, glowing door-like aura surrounded the area. Golf Ball turned, and banged her foot against the wall.

"NOW!"

Pin stared down at the ground, holding her head in pain.

Hmm, a personal conflict?

Who would you like?

Teardrop? Or Needle?

Pin shook her head, all of the sounds around her were beginning to ring.

Who will have the greater impact?

Who?

You have to keep doing this Pin. It's what's best for you, isn't it?

Let's-

Wait, where are you GOING. GO BACK THERE, NOW.

DON'T COWER AWAY IDIOT!

WHERE DO YOU THINK-

Pin's eyes suddenly snapped open, as she quickly looked around. She realized that she was deep into the woods, trees blocking all of the sunlight that could touch the ground. She could hear the sound of chatter in the distance, and she quickly began to find the path that could lead out of the darkness.

"So, Teardrop? How does it feel to be back?" Coiny nudged her arm. She smiled.

'It feels great. I don't have to listen to the constant arguing that went on in there.' She signed.

Coiny smiled, and looked up at Needle.

"What did she say?" He peeped, smiling nervously.

Needle rolled her eyes, and quickly smacked Coiny upside the head.

"She's just happy to be out of there. Right, TD?" She smiled sweetly. TD quickly flapped her arms, a dark blue blush glowing on her cheeks. Needle giggled, as she continued to walk. Coiny followed close behind, careful to not disturb the two. He casually listened to the chatter that was going on behind him, from the others.

"Thank goodness TD was chosen back, she's the most tolerable out of EVERYONE in the TLC."

"I kind of wanted Donut to come back...."

"Gelatin, What is WRONG with you?"

"How do you think Ruby is doing..?"

The sudden somber tone of the voice made Coiny slow down. He listened.

"Hopefully she's doing okay...she hasn't left her room for a good two

days now. I'm starting to worry..."

"I'm sure she'll be, like, fine, Pence-Pence. Besides, Book is, like, taking care of her. Those two are so close..."

"Yeah, Book is smart and caring. I'm sure she can help Ruby get through all of this, she's great at that kind of stuff."

Coiny looked ahead, noticing the opening of the forest. Teardrop sighed, as she looked back up a Needle.

'Isn't this the spot where Woody was found.'

Needle nodded, before turning back.

"Lets....hurry ourselves out of here. This place is giving me the creeps."

"Needle, show some respect! Someone DIED here!" Golf Ball sneered. Needle stuck her tongue out at her, before turning away.

Coiny.

The sudden voice made Coiny jump, as he quickly looked around to try and find the source of the voice.

"Wha...?"

I hate you Coiny!

I'd barf, if you won Dream Island!

Firey.

Coiny's eyes began to fill with tears as he quickly looked around, his heart beginning to pound in fear.

"This ISN'T FUNNY GUYS." Coiny growled beneath his breath, as he continued to stomp forward. Everyone exchanged glances, before Needle put a hand on his shoulder.

"Coiny?"
'Coiny?'

"WHAT DO YOU WANT?!" He yelled out, looking up. His body froze, as he realized that it wasn't Needle that was standing in front of him...

Coiny, you need to run.

A scream echoed through the woods, as a knife was thrown against a tree. Everyone turned around, and noticed a figure standing in the darkness, a blade shining in their hands.

"Now, now... Wouldn't it be a shame if someone were to end up like Woody, here?~"

"RUN!"

SORRY GUYS

anyways this. Was a toughie to write tbh,,,,,I was thinking for a good day to figure out what should happen next

this may or may not be a jumbled mess but?? i try i really do try ok? wack

Well GOOD NEWS! I know what's gonna happen next dksjhgdhjshgvhfjdk

But I hope you guys are doing alright, and I have to mention it here so:

THANK YOU SO SO **SO** MUCH FOR MAKING STUFF FOR THIS STORY!!!! Whether it's art, fanfics within this one or just plain headcannons (?) or stories based off of this one???? **you all are talented and I absolutely love all of you**
It means so much to me??? Y'all like my writing and handndndndnshsb it's just like "THANK YOU"

Anyways, hope you enjoyed this part of the story! Stay tuned for more 👊😎

~Ice

Pluck and Snap

Everyone quickly began to scatter, as knifes began to fly through the air. The others quickly sprinted around and behind trees, to help avoid the knifes from stabbing at them. But some saw this as an opportunity, to catch her and make her pay for the sins she had brought upon the land.

"Now, who were they again? Woody..? Rocky..? My two dear acquaintances...." Leafy stepped out of the darkness, twirling a blade in her hand. Her eye gleamed with anger as she looked up, her hand now clenching the knife.

"Murdered, and thrown away, just like THAT!" She flung the knife forward, where it aimed towards someone who was trying to flee.

Coiny.

He quickly ducked as he heard the blade hurl past him, before he stood up and turned around.

"WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS?!" His voice nearly cracked, genuine anger coming from it. Leafy scoffed, before she took out another knife, twirling it in her hands just like before.

"You all are so pathetic. More so than you used to be..." she chuckled.

"But more...dumb. You all think I would do something like this?"

Coiny slowly began to approach her, his fists clenched and his eyes fixated on her.

"What...are you saying."

"Sure, I'd love to see you all die, but do you think I'd be the ones killing you? You think I killed Woody? Rocky? Or F-"

Her voice trailed off, before she could even finish saying his name. Her eyes began to glimmer with tears for a moment, as she clenched the knife. Coiny paused. He'd...never seen her like this. Well...

Not for a while.

She looked up, as a small tear escaped her eye and began to trickle down her cheek. Her eyes shined, a small tint of green glowing from her pupils.

"I...never even.." She looked down, feeling more tears spill out of her eyes. Coiny felt a wave of sympathy drown him out, as he continued to approach the leaf.

"You too huh...?

Leafy's eyes widened, as her head shot up to look at him. He had a sad smile on his face, as he now stood a few feet away from her. Her head tilted towards the side, as the green began to outshine the dull grey color in her eyes.

"What...?"

"I know how you feel." He sighed out.

"When you want to apologize to someone for the stuff you've done...only to realize that...-"

"They're gone..." Leafy's lip trembled as a sob began to bubble up her throat. Coiny looked down, a heavy silence hanging over the two.

That is, until the sound of metal hitting the bark of a tree broke it. Coiny looked up, to see Leafy holding the knife which was now stabbed into the tree, as she sobbed silently. Coiny shook his head.

"I'm...sure he missed you. He just-"

A sudden yell made Coiny jump.

"Agh- WHATEVER!" Leafy forcefully yanked the knife out, wiping her eyes. She turned back towards him, her eyes losing its bright, green color and returning to the emotionless grey shade that they once

were.

"All I want now is to see all of you DIE! I DON'T CARE ANYMORE!"

Before Coiny could even react, she swiftly took out a knife and hurled it towards him. He quickly ducked, but yelled out in pain as he felt the knife slice past his head. He put a hand on his head, as he looked up.

"Y-You think you can-..."

She was gone.

Coiny's eyes widened as he quickly stumbled away, trying to look around for any familiar face or any sign of help.

Luckily, they weren't very far.

"Where did he go?!"

"Don't tell me he went after her; he's gonna get himself killed!"

"Who cares?! He's probably dead by now, we have to run!"

Coiny winced, as he felt a warm liquid slowly trickle down the side of his head. Blood.

he carefully made his way towards the group, his head stinging, as he let out pained grunts and breaths. It was only a matter of seconds before someone noticed him. Which, in this case, was Gelatin.

"WHAT HAPPENED TO YOU?" He blurted out, quickly running over towards him. Coiny waved him off, covering his gash.

"I'm-...I'm fine, Gelatin." He muttered, as he held the gash. Blood was pouring out, as he could feel himself growing weaker.

Golf Ball rushed up towards him, and yanked him down to her level. He cried out in surprise, as she began to inspect the open wound that was on his head. She sucked teeth, before looking down at Coiny.

"You'll be fine." She let him go, causing him to stumble back.

"Thankfully, it wasn't that deep. A few bandages and some disinfectant will do." She turned back towards Tennis Ball, who nodded. Coiny grunted, as he leaned on a tree.

"Then...why am I so..dizzy..?" He put a hand on his head. Tennis Ball walked up to him, and inspected him closely.

"Probably the anxiety of the moment? Or the bleeding..." He paused, looking back up at the bleeding cut on his head.

"B-But it'll go away, lets just take care of that wound first." He shot a glance towards Golf Ball, who nodded in agreement. Tennis Ball then looked back at the others.

"Let's get everyone out of here. We need to get Coiny taken care of, and Needle Can show Teardrop around, maybe find her a house to live at." He winked. Needle rolled her eyes playfully, as Teardrop grinned, leaning on Needle's side.

"Freesmart, let's head back. Let's make sure Ruby and Book are alright..." Pencil ordered. The others nodded, as they began to walk out of the forest, making their way back into the city. Fries dusted himself off, and looked up.

"I'm gonna go back to the garden. Make sure to check up on Pin later, I saw her head back early." Fries told Coiny. He nodded, before Golf Ball stomped up towards him, suspiciously.

"What do you MEAN? Where did Pin go?!" She raised an eyebrow, as she questioned the taller object. Fries rolled his eyes, before slightly pushing her out of his way.

"Relax, will you? She went home. She wasn't feeling well, from what I heard." Fries glanced up at Coiny, who nodded.

"Yeah! She just went home. Get your head out of the clouds, GB..." he uttered dizzily. Golf Ball sighed.

"Alright, Alright. Let's just head back, I'm beat."

"Agreed."

———————————*a few days later*———————————-

"Um, BOOK?"

"What is it now Pencil?"

"Where's Flower?"

Book angrily glanced over at Pencil, who was staring out of the window.

"Pencil, Knock It off." She mumbled angrily. Pencil looked back at her, her hand shooting up in confusion.

"What?! What did I say?"

Book pointed towards a door, which, was the door that belonged to Ruby's room. Pencil mumbled angrily, before she marched over and grabbed Book's wrist, yanking her out of her chair. She marched over towards the window, while Book was struggling to get free from her grip.

"Pencil! Let go of me!" She protested.

"JUST LOOK!"

"I'm NOT giving into another one of your STUPID-"

Book suddenly went silent as she glanced outside.

A large, gaping hole was buried into the ground, as a pile of fresh dirt laid next to it. Book's heart dropped as she felt panic creep up her back.

"Pencil. P-Put her back." She gritted through her teeth. Pencil scoffed as she looked down at her.

"You seriously think WE did this?!" She mumbled. She shook her head, as she looked back up.

"J...Just go check up on Ruby. I think I have to go talk to Golf Ball about this..." She sighed, as she began to walk out of the kitchen. Book nodded, as she began to head towards the door.

She held her hand up towards it, but paused as she heard a noise come from the closed room. She leaned in, and began to listen.

Soft sobs and whimpers broke the silence in the room, as the dull gem looked down at the photograph in her hands. The photo was glossy and clean; taken a long time back, while everything and everyone was feeling fresh, and new. She had taken good care of the photo, since it was a token to her.

The photo was of herself and Flower, back when the two had just got together. The photo had Ruby in Flower's arms, Ruby grinning and sticking her tongue out playfully. Flower rested her head on Ruby, a beautiful, genuine smile glowing on her bright face. Her eyes were a bit shy, yet filled with the joy and love she had felt towards her small girlfriend. Ruby whimpered, as she slowly rubbed her thumb over Flower, feeling the glossy paper on her skin.

"I remember how soft you felt..." Ruby giggled out weakly as she continued to rub the photo.

"You were so beautiful...." She paused.

"So..So beautiful.."

Ruby let out a quiet sob, as she hugged the photo and sulked into her sheets.

What she didn't expect to hear, was a knock on the door.

"Ruby...?"

Ruby froze up.

Book.

Ruby slowly peeked out of her sheets, staring at the door. Another knock echoed through the room, before Book sighed.

"If you need anything, just...let me know."

Ruby hesitated, before she spoke out.

"Book?"

Her eyes widened, as she put a hand on her throat. Her voice was scratchy and hoarse, weakened from all of the weeping she had done. The door opened, as Book looked over towards the bed.

"Yes, Ruby?"

Ruby felt a warmth bloom in her chest. Book's voice filled her with a feeling of safety and comfort, and for some reason, her mind went blank. She was no longer feeling despair.

Book walked closer towards her, raising her eyebrow in curiosity. Was she ok?

"Do you need anything? Food, Water..." She suggested, smiling in sympathy. Ruby simply stared at her, her eyes darkened and dull, and red from all of the tears she had let out. Book felt her smile falter a bit.

"I'll...just g-"

Suddenly, Ruby quickly tossed her arms around Book, hugging her close. Her eyes stung with tears as she felt Book's arms softly wrap around her, as she held her in her arms. Ruby let out a shaky sigh, as Book stroked her back gently.

"I know..." Book whispered. Ruby buried her face in Book's chest, making Book hug her closer. Ruby no longer cried; she simply closed her eyes and sank into Book's arms. Book whispered comforting words towards her, as she continued to rub her back.

The photo was still in her hand, still shining, and with Ruby's thumb

on Flower.

-

Pin scrambled around, grabbing jumbled up piles of blankets and pillows. She quickly brought them all into a room, as she dumped them onto the bed. Coiny looked up at her, smiling nervously.

"Pin, you really don't have to-"

"HUSH!" She shouted, as she quickly fixed the sheets over him and softened the pillows. Coiny sighed, as she dusted herself off.

"How are you feeling?" A nervous tone flooded her voice as she held Coiny's hand. He shrugged a bit, looking down at her hand.

"I'm fine...really, I'm fine." He smiled a bit. Pin kissed his cheek, as she wrapped her arm around him.

Ever since he returned with a large gash on his head, Pin has quickly cared for him, helping him clean up and bandage his wound, as well as putting confining him to bed rest until he's feeling better once again. Coiny kept denying; but she still continued to help.

"You worry too much..." Coiny frowned. Pin sighed, as her arm loosened around him.

"I'm sorry..." She whispered.

"No, no Pin, its alright." He quickly held her hand, and gave it a gentle squeeze.

"Thank you for caring for me, really, but take a moment to look after yourself..."

Pin thought for a moment, before looking down at her hands.

Bloodied.

Flower's hand.

Flower's body.

Garden.

Beautiful.

Pin put a hand on her head dizzily.

"Not again..." She mumbled, quietly. Coiny quickly sat up, holding her hand closer to his chest.

"Whats wrong? Are you okay?" He asked.

Pin shook her head, beads of ooze forming on her forehead.

"I-I'm fine, I just..." She paused.

"..Need a moment."

She turned back towards him, her eyes now dim and filled with exhaustion.

"I'm gonna go get some more berries for tea...I'll let Needle know to check up on you." She quietly uttered. Coiny nodded in understandment.

"That's fine. Just...be careful, please..." He pointed towards his wound. Pin scoffed.

"Please, Coiny. I think I can manage...I'm the W.O.A.H Bunch Captain, after all!" A grin spread across her cheeks, as she swiftly grabbed a basket, and left the room. Coiny chuckled a bit, as he began to look around the room. Pin's room was always kept neat and tidy, but recently, its been getting a bit.....

Disorganized.

He continued to look, until..

What was that paper on Pin's desk?

"NEEDY!" Pin cried out. Needle's eyes darkened as she turned, and quickly slapped Pin across the face.

"DON'T CALL ME NEEDY!" Needle yelled.

Teardrop, who was beside her, crossed her arms in annoyance. Pin rubbed her cheek dizzily, before looking up at the taller object.

"Needle- Do you mind watching Coiny for a bit, while I head out to get a few Yoyle Berries? I want to make some tea for him and I..." Pin explained, a blush slowly growing on her face. Needle smirked playfully.

"Oh, really?" She sniggered. Pin rolled her eyes.

"Oh, shut up."

Teardrop suddenly perked up, as she quickly tugged on Needle's arm for her attention. Needle looked down at her, confused.

'Why don't you go ahead with Pin? I'll watch Coiny.' She signed. Needle looked at her, a blank expression on her face.

"Why?"

'I...kind of wanted some Yoyle Berries too, but I also want you two to catch up. Yknow, friends!" She smiled happily.

Needle sighed, as she nodded in agreement.

"Alright.." she agreed.

Teardrop quickly jumped up, as she gave her a small peck on her cheek.
A wobbly smile grew on Needle's face, as she put a hand on her cheek.

Pin chuckled.

'I'll see you later, love.' Teardrop signed, as she walked off towards

Pin's house. Needle's cheeks were now a darkened shade of grey, as she watched her.

"Isn't she just..perfect..." she sighed out.

Pin rolled her eyes, as she shoved the basket into her arms.

"Alright, Needy, lets go."

Slap.

"So, you come up here all by yourself?" Needle picked a few purple berries from the small bush in front of her. Pin shrugged.

"Yeah, its...kinda what I do."

Needle nodded, as she plucked one more berry from the bush.

"Okay, I think I'm all set! How about you?" She smiled. Pin lifted up the basket, which was now filled with berries, grinning.

"Alright, let's go back! I can't wait to see-"

Coiny.

Pin's eyes widened.

"I'm sorry...what did you say..?" She muttered. Needle looked down, startled by the sudden change of tone in her.

"Uh...I said..-"

I can't wait to kiss Coiny.

Pin dropped the basket, the berries dispersing all around the ground. She began to approach Needle, her eyes blazing with fury.

Needle quickly backed away, her heart racing.

"Pin, Pin; STOP!" She quickly swiped her hand down.

What made her heart drop, was when Pin blocked her hand from hitting her. She quickly reached over, and grabbed Needle by the neck, clenching it hard.

"P-PIN-" Needle gasped out. A smirk slowly grew on Pin's face, as she clenched harder.

"You think you can get off that easily, huh..?" A crazed giggle escaped Pin's lips. Needle struggled, as tears began to pour down her face.

"P-PLEASE...P-ACK!" She wheezed. She grasped desperately at Pin's hands, and this made Pin laugh.

"He's MINE. HE IS MINE! HE ISNT YOURS.." she yanked her downwards, inspecting her face.

Needle shut her eyes painfully, choked wheezes escaping her lips. Her silver face began to lose its color, as tears streamed down her face.

This made Pin smile.

"You still look so...pretty, don't you know that?" She whispered into Needle's ear.

"I wonder how Teardrop will react....you love her so much, don't you..?"

Needle's shaking began to die down, as she let out desperate whimpers and whines.

"Oh, my, leaving so-"

C r a c k.

Teardrop flinched, as she wrapped her hands around her neck. Coiny sat up, concern hitting him as he saw Teardrop's sudden change in her attitude.

"Teardrop? Are you okay?" He quickly began to climb out of bed, but Teardrop held her hands out. This made him come to a halt, as she took a deep breath.

'I'm okay...' She signed.

'My neck just hurt. But...I'm okay.' She smiled.

Boom!

Sorry guys but hmmfnfndns i hope this is well written
I haven't been feeling to good, but....I'm trying to provide to y'all, y'all need this content !!

Another cliffhanger, maybe? Idk nansnssn, what do y'all think (;

I hope you guys like this next part!!.

Enjoy

~ice

Trying to Speak

"N...Needle..?" Pin uttered, the feeling of shock preventing her from moving at all. Needle's eyes were still widened with fear, but they were now lifeless. Pin slowly loosened her grip around her neck, and Needle's body immediately slinked down to the ground, collapsing on top of the scattered Yoyle Berries. Blood began to drivel down Needle's mouth, as she laid there, her limbs now cold and limp.

Pin slowly clasped her hands over her head, as her breathing became more shallow and quickened. She began to shake her head in disbelief, as she stared down at the dead body. Beads of ooze were now dripping down her forehead, as tears were already stinging at her eyes.

Murder.

Wh...What did you do..

What did I do?

WHAT DID YOU MAKE ME **DO**?!

Oh, honey...
I helped you, didn't I? Now she's gone, now you can have Coiny all to yourself..

"SHE HAD A GIRLFRIEND GOD DAMMIT!" Pin screamed, clasping her hands tighter. Tears began to slip out and slowly trickle down her cheeks, as she carefully kneeled down besides Needle. She scooped up the limp body into her arms, her tears blurring out her vision, and her surroundings, crumbling to bits.

Well, that's ONE less object you have to deal with, isn't it?

We can finally continue the PLAN!

You can simply take off her hands; it'll be quick! Oh, where shall we put them? By the sunflowers?

Ooh! Ooh! Or the snapdragons!

Or better yet, by FLOWER! That way she'll have some company!!

Pin simply stared down at Needle,not daring to speak against that...thing.

She began to observe Needle's facial features closely, squeezing her corpse a bit more. Her cheeks were soft and light, besides the tears that have stained them before. Her eyes, which once shined with joy and sparkled with life, were now dull and cold, slowly losing her grey color. Her lips looked pale, yet they were soft, formerly belonging to Teardrop, and only Teardrop.

And Coiny.

"STOP IT!" Pin screamed out in fury, anger bubbling up inside of her chest

Big mistake.
Footsteps began to approach from her side, as she clutched Needle even closer, squeezing her eyes shut.

"Pin?" The voice made Pin's body freeze. She slowly looked towards the direction of the voice, letting out a guttered sigh.

Gelatin.

"What are you doing here? I thought you were- WHAT THE-?!" He jumped back, his face distorting and becoming pale. Pin shook her head, as she looked down at Needle, sadly.

"D...Did you...?" Gelatin's voice gasped out as he slowly took a step back, ready to race away if needed to.

Pin's heart froze up, but this didn't stop her from rapidly shaking her head 'no'.

He looked around, before kneeling down besides Pin, and grabbing

Needle's wrist, giving it a squeeze. After a few seconds, he looked up.

"Yup..she's dead.." he mumbled.

"STOP THAT!" Pin hisses as she yanked his hand off from Needle. He quickly recoiled back, out of fear.

"Sorry..."

The heavy feeling of despair that was once drowning out Pin's mind, was now hidden away in a tiny jar in the corner of her mind. She no longer fear afraid.

She felt...empty.

Blank.

Was it because she wasn't alone...?

Was it because she wasn't questioned...?

"What happened to her...?" Gelatin slowly poked Pin's cheek, noticing that she was beginning to space out. She blinked, quickly coming to, as she glanced over at him.

"Leafy." She whispered, emotionless.

"It..It was Leafy."

"But how? She didn't stab her, because I don't see any huge wounds, but..."
He sat down, squinting at Needle's body.

"There's blood coming from her mouth..."

Pin sat in silence, before she turned back towards him.

"Well...we were picking yoyleberries, since Coiny and..TD wanted some tea..." her voice was barely above a whisper.

"And..?"

"I was growing a bit...distant, from where she originally was.." she

looked down at the lifeless corpse in her arms.

"And...?" Gelatin leaned closer, interested in hearing the details of the scene.

"I...heard a scream..and as I looked over, I saw Needle...Leafy..." her voice trailed off.

"I tried to..I couldn't.."

Gelatin sat poker-faced, looking down at Needle, then back up at Pin.

"...And...?"

"OH FOR PIN FACTORIES SAKE GELATIN, SHE WAS DEAD!" Pin snapped back him, angrily. He quickly jumped back in fear, his mouth twisted and his heart racing.

Pin blinked, before she let out a heavy sigh.

"Look, can you just...go get help? Be useful..? Please?"

Gelatin nodded, before cautiously standing up, brushing himself off. He turned around, and he began to walk off, glancing back at Pin every now and then until he was eventually out of sight.

Now, cut her hands off.

"With what? I don't have anything on me at the moment." She rolled her eyes angrily.

What are you?

"Someone who needs more sleep, and a hug possibly."

Nono, WHAT, are you?

"Uh...A Pin...?"

Aren't you...sharp?

"Oh..Oh FUCK OFF." Pin shook her head, before standing up, still holding Needle in her arms.

She looked down at Needle's hands. She *could...*

No.

Pin sighed, before slowly trudging away from the berry-covered bushes, her feet stepping on a few, and releasing the purple liquid all around her.

———————————————————-

"SHE'S DEAD?!"
Golf Ball screamed out as she looked forwards to see Pin, carrying Needle with her. Gelatin stood behind her, nodding slowly.

Golf Ball, Tennis Ball and Gelatin quickly ran up to her, inspecting Needle closely and questioning Pin.

"What happened?!"

"How did she do it?!"

"Did she attack you too?!"

Pin shook her head, seemingly numb from what was going on around her. She only wanted to do one thing and one thing only.

She trudged through the three surrounding her, seemingly heading back to her place. Golfball scoffed.

"And where does she think she's-"

"Golfball..." Tennis Ball cut her off, following her with his eyes.

"I think she's..going to look for Teardrop..."

Golfball looked back up at him, and looked back towards Pin, who was farther away from them. She shook her head.

"Well, she can go ahead and do that. Should...we perform an autopsy on Needle to figure out how she was killed?" She began to walk forward. Tennis Ball stopped her, putting his foot in front of her carefully.

"Nono...let her do this. Teardrop has a right to know..." Tennis Ball responded. She looked up at him, and leaned against him, sighing.

Gelatin looked at the two, before he walked off. He decided to go and tell Fries what was going on; he was his only pal.

Well..he hoped, he was his only pal.

"Fries?"

"Gelatin? What are you doing?" Fries asked, putting a trowel down. He wiped his forehead, as he began to walk over towards him. Gelatin shrugged in response.

"I just...wanted to stay here." He added.

"There's too much going on..and honestly, I just want to stay here. With a friend, right?" He smiled and put an arm around Fries, yanking him downwards to his level. Fries winced, and cursed silently, before he removed himself from his arm.

"What's going on *THIS* time?" He raised his eyebrow, as he crossed his arms. Gelatin scratched the back of his head, looking down.

"Well..."

—

"Teardrop, are you sure your okay?" Coiny walked over to the smaller object, who was still rubbing her neck. She shook her head.

'This stupid pain has gotten more sharp. But it keeps fading away...and then coming back.' She signed, shaking her head. Coiny raised his eyebrow, as he looked out towards the window, fiddling with his hands.

That paper...

"Hey, Teardrop?" Coiny looked towards the desk, eyeing the piece of paper that laid there, folded neatly. Teardrop turned around, and looked at him, tilting her head.

"Can you get me that piece of paper?" He pointed at the desk. Teardrop crossed her arms, and simply stared at him, seemingly waiting for...something.

He seemed confused, but a lightbulb went off in his head.

"Please?" He grinned.

Teardrop nodded in agreement, as a smile slowly grew on her face. She got up, and rolled her neck around for a bit before making her way towards the desk. She grabbed the paper, and tossed it towards Coiny, who caught it with one hand.

"Thanks TD!" He exclaimed. She wiggled her arms happily in response, as she sat down on the chair besides the desk, putting her head down.

Coiny smiled, before he looked down at the paper. It was...folded in a odd way. Blotches and drops of a dark substance were covering bits of the paper, as well as ink scratches and marks. He raised his eyebrow, as he slowly began to unfold the paper.

What was on this?

It smelt...weird.

As he tried to figure out how to unfold the piece of paper, weak, yet loud knocking began to come from the door in the house's entrance.

Coiny looked up, as he felt a smile grow on his face.

That must be Pin!

He tossed the paper aside, before he carefully got out of bed, balancing himself. Teardrop was happily waving her hands, a soft blush growing on her face.

"Excited to see your *girlfriend*?" He sneered playfully. Teardrop

slapped his arm, her blush becoming more darker. He laughed, before he made his way to the door.

He took a small breath in, as his eyes sparkled with joy. He opened the door, and let a smile burst on his face.

"Pin!"

"C...Coiny..."

He looked down, and his smile quickly dropped. His eyes widened as he stumbled back, clasping his hands over his mouth in shock.

Pin stood outside of the house, her eyes darkened and dull. She stared blankly at Coiny, before looking behind him.

"Where's Teardrop." Her voice was quiet and weakened, as her eyes began to shine with tears.

It was only a matter of seconds, before Teardrop came running towards the door, a bright grin glowing on her face. She was about to jump, until Coiny carefully blocked her from doing so. She shook her head, before looking up at him angrily. She slapped his arm, before Coiny sighed and held her hand from hitting him again.

"Look."

Teardrop turned, and the color from her face quickly faded away. She was now pale, as she slowly made her way towards Pin, her arms beginning to tremble. Pin looked down at her sorrowfully, before looking back up at Coiny.

"She...I tried to...I.." she could barely make out a sentence, before tears began to spill down her cheeks. Teardrop stared at Needle's corpse, her entire body going numb, and her heart beginning to beat faster. She shook her head, before she looked up at Pin, breathing heavily.

A few seconds passed, before Teardrop rammed herself into Pin. Pin cried out in pain as Teardrop slammed her against the sidewalk, grabbing her neck angrily. Tears poured down her face as she attempted to scream, to cry, to let out anything, to ask her why?!

Why didn't she save her?!

She tightened her grip around Pin, gritting her teeth. Pin's eyes were squeezed shut from fear, as she slowly lifted her trembling hands in the air.

"I-It was Leafy!" She gasped out.

"I-I tried to-!" She let out a painful cough, as Teardrop took her hands off of her neck. She clasped them over her head, before looking back.

There was Needle.

She scrambled over towards the body, her breaths becoming shallower and weaker. She scooped Needle into her arms, as she looked into her eyes.

Lifeless.

Scared..

With a trembling hand, she slowly closed Needle's eyes, and gave her a small peck on her soft, cold cheek. She put her forehead against hers, as she let a few tears slide down her face.

Coiny rushed towards Pin, squeezing her hands gently.

"What happened..?" His voice was quiet. Pin shook her head, before looking back towards the woods.

"Leafy." Was all she was able to say, before she buried her face into his arms, quietly sniffling. Coiny hugged her close, as he glanced up towards the woods.

So...she really is a liar, huh..?

Pfft. I should've known. She's still bitter about what happened in bfdia. And in bfdi.

"I..."

A soft, raspy voice made the two jump, as they looked around.

Teardrop.

"I-...I..." she winced, scrunching her eyes in pain. She shook her head rapidly, trying to get the words out of her before she wasn't able to.

Rasped squeaks and sighs erupted from her mouth, as she balled up fists in anger. Taking one deep breath, she looked down at Needle, caressing her cheek gently.

"I-.....l-..love..." She coughed harshly, as she desperately opened her eyes.

"You...."

Her voice...wasn't, a voice. Raspy, quiet, scratchy...

It was there to replace her 'true' voice.

If, she had one.

Teardrop broke down, sobbing silently into Needle's corpse as she held her close.

Pin and Coiny looked back at each other, shocked and saddened bu what had happened.

Pin stared blankly at him, as she slowly wrapped her arms around him.

Well done Pin.

You didn't even need me to remind you, huh?

I know.

-

"Thats...a lot." Fries mumbled in disbelief, watching from afar. Gelatin nodded in agreement.

"I just want everything to...stop." He kicked a small pebble.

"Sometimes I wish I was in the TLC, do I don't have to deal with this."

Fries gave him a pitied look, as he hesitantly Pat his back.

"Hey...don't say that." He mumbled.

"Golfball And Tennis Ball are probably hard at work, trying to figure out who did this mess. I know it's terrible, and i know there's just a lot of...drama, with it as well, but...It'll end soon, I promise."

Fries didn't notice Gelatin staring up at him, his eyes shining with tears.

"Promise...?" He mumbled.

Fries nodded, patting his back before looking back down.

"I promise."

Hellooooo

I bring you: big sad

Big gay has left the IDFB Chatroom

Anyways, thank you all for just supporting me and the story ahdbjajdnsbshsb
It means so so so SO much to me, yknow?

I love all of u fools, y'all are talented and sweet and I hope you get something good today ;;

Seeya!

~Ice

Words of Hidden Comfort

"THIS DOESN'T MAKE SENSE."

Golfball shoved the pieces of paper down her desk, shaking her head in anger. She stared at the desk, confusion boiling her to the core.

She couldn't figure this out;

For the first time in her scientific career, she simply couldn't figure this out.

Tennis Ball rushed in, concern in his eyes as he heard his small friend scream out so suddenly. He looked around, until he noticed the smaller figure hunched over her desk, papers and pencils scattered all around her. She was breathing heavily, as she didn't even notice him rushing in.

"Golfball...?" Tennis Ball whispered out, as he slowly walked towards her. She didn't move; she simply stared at the blank area of her desk, keeping her head down. Tennis Ball frowned.

Not again... he thought to himself. He sighed, as he sat down next to the smaller ball. She didn't respond; a heavy silence crushing the atmosphere around the two.

"Are...you okay?" He asked, nervously. This made Golfball hunch over even more, her teeth gritting visibly. That is, until her blanked face slowly lifted up to a darkened grin.

"Am I okay?" She rasped out. Tennis Ball slowly moved back, cautious about what would erupt from her.

"Am I OKAY, TENNIS BALL?!" She laughed out, tossing her head back. Dark bags hung under her eyes, as her face, mixed in with the odd grin, was covered in sheer exhaustion. A bullet of sweat rolled

down Tennis Ball, as he heard the cold laughter erupt from her.

"SURE, sure, I'm PERFECTLY FINE! I'm ALWAYS fine, you know!" She looked over at him, gesturing her foot towards his face. He gulped.

"G-GB, listen-"

"It's not like-..It's not like I'm responsible for finding out who this messed-up fuckery of a "*murderer*" is..." she made air quotation marks, moving her feet a bit.

"GB-"

"It's not like I'm in charge of fixing the Recovery Center too!" She laughed out once more. Tennis Ball sat up, trying to maintain his patience with her, but also, listen to what she had to say.

"And, it's not like I have to find a way to make sure this DOESN'T HAPPEN AGAIN! Nope!" She laughed harder, turning back towards her desk. Her smile slowly fell, as her eyes darkened, staring at the blank spot of her desk once more. The silence hanged over their heads once more, as Tennis Ball cleared his throat.

"W-..Was that all..?" He looked at her, his eyes filled with concern and panic. Golfball turned and glared at him, her eyes now shining-

Wait, shining?

Tennis Ball leaned in, his concern getting the best of him, yet also, shock.

"Golfball...you're-"

"I'M WHAT, TENNIS BALL." She yelled out, quickly snapping her head back down. She angrily squeezed her eyes shut, trying to prevent you-know-what from coming out of them. Tennis Ball sighed heavily.

"Listen, I'm starting to think that this is all getting to you. Why don't you take a break, and-"

"TENNIS BALL, LIVES ARE ON THE LINE HERE!" She moved her

head and body towards him angrily, still trying to keep her eyes closed. Tennis Ball rolled his eyes. She was stubborn when it came to stuff like this, but...

"Golfball."

"I DON'T HAVE TIME FOR THIS, LALALALALA-" she covered her ears, trying to ignore her taller friends words. But he didn't care.

"You have to rest. All of this is getting to you, and you look so much worse than you did back in experiment #36, hell.." he paused.

"You look even worse than you did back at the science museum..."

Golfball froze. Her lips shut, as she slowly looked up to stare at Tennis Ball, her eyes shining even more than they were before. She tried to speak, to think of some possible sentence to spat out at the larger figure sitting across from her, but...

Nothing could come out.

What did slip out, was a shining tear from her eye, slowly trailing down her cheek. Tennis Ball gasped silently.

"Oh..."

Golfball grumbled louder, turning around to face the wall. She tried to hold the tears back; she wasn't the one to be emotional, but...

"Golfball, it's okay."

She jumped a bit at the sudden voice, as she slowly turned around to face Tennis Ball. He smiled a bit.

"I know that this is too much to handle; and I know you're in charge of everything, but it isn't mean to take a break. I mean, look at you. This is the first time I've ever seen you...uh..." He looked up nervously.

"Emotional...but, that isn't your fault. Its the stress."

Golfball stared at him, a few more tears beginning to spill down her

cheeks. She only felt...

Numb.

Tired, and numb.

This was...strange.

She began to pant heavily, as she slowly wiped the tears falling down her cheeks with her trembling foot. She looked down at the small stain of water on her foot, before she looked up at Tennis Ball.

"Wh...What's wrong with me." Her voice was trembling, as she rasped out the sentence.

"Why am I crying. I never...I never cry. I'm not supposed to cry. Tennis Ball, Tennis Ball, HELP ME."

Her body began to tremble as she slowly stood up, dragging herself towards the smaller figure. She shook her head, as Tennis Ball watched her, silently.

"I-I can't...I'm not allowed to....I..." She spat out sentences, as she stood hunched over, staring down at the floor intensely. All of these new feelings swirled in her mind, crashing against her skull and stabbing into her brain. A migraine began to slowly grasp at her more and more, forcing more tears to creep out of her eyes and spill down her cheeks.

The thoughts suddenly blanked out, as she felt a foot rub on her back. She looked up, and saw Tennis Ball, rubbing her back comfortingly. She tilted her head, her tears going down the side of her face.

What was he...

"Listen." He began.

"I know these feelings are...conflicting, to you, especially since you don't feel them often, but that doesn't mean you aren't allowed to feel them."

"B-But they-...he-..." Her voice trailed off, as her breaths began to quicken. She began to mumble incoherently about....something. Tennis Ball thought for a moment, before he realized that...

She was speaking about the museum now.

Her eyes darted around the room in fear, her face was dangerously pale, her body was trembling...

"Golfball- Golfball, look at me." He lifted her chin up to face him, and her mumbles suddenly cut off as she looked at him.

"I...don't know what happened, and I don't need to know about whatever happened, but, you have to understand that this is okay. These feelings are scary to you, I know they are, you've never experienced them. But that doesn't mean you have to repress them." He glanced over at the papers that were still scattered all over the floor.

"Just let them out. You're a great scientist, a hard worker, and the smartest object I know. You're busy a lot, but letting this out will make you feel better. Take a break, I'll take over the investigation for all of this. And you know what..?" he smiled a bit. Golfball's eyebrows furrowed together, as she tilted her head.

"Wh..What." She sniffed out, angrily.

Tennis Ball leaned in, and gave her a small kiss on her forehead, wrapping his legs (arms? idk man) around the smaller ball.

"I think the recovery center can wait..."

He rested his forehead against her's, and held her close and tightly. Golfball's eyes widened, as the sudden expression of confusion shined in her eyes.

"What did you do..." She mumbled, staring ahead blankly. Tennis Ball looked down curiously.

"Hm?"

"What was that." She made a gesture towards her forehead, pointing

towards the spot he kissed. A smile grew on his face, as he let out a small chuckle.

"That's something called affection, GB."

"Gross." She grumbled, before buying her face into his chest. He smiled, as he held her close, letting her rest on him.

"But...I like it."

'It made my headache...not feel as bad as it did.'

-

"*PIN, NO!*"

Pin's eyes snapped open, as she shot up from the ground, gasping for air. Her heart pounded in her chest, as she clasped her hands over her head. The memories of the dream raced around in her head, as she slowly looked up.

The sun was just beginning to rise over the horizon, the sky giving off a soft, orange glow. She heard a few soft voices coming from outside, and closed her eyes, taking in a deep breath.

Just a dream.

Just...a dream.

A frantic knocking from the door made Pin drag herself from her bed. The knocking continued, becoming louder and louder, making Pin's eye twitch in annoyance.

She unlocked her door, and swung it open angrily, staring down at the object who was banging on her door.

"Can I HELP you." She muttered sleepily.

"Pin! Oh- uh- Sorry to wake you, but, have you seen Ruby anywhere?"

Book.

Her eyes were filled with worry, as she held her arms, trying to warm herself up in the cold, winter morning. Pin sighed.

"No, I haven't. Why, where did she go?"

"I-I don't know! She wasn't in her room when I went to check on her, and she's no where to be seen! I-"

"BOOK! CHECK HER HOUSE!"

The two turned around, to see Pencil, angrily pointing towards Pin. Pin's eyes widened, as the sleepiness that previously clung onto her, spilled out from her, leaving her with a empty, panicked echo.

"Wh-What?! What do you mean by that, Pencil?!" Pin shouted, crossing her arms. Pencil rolled her eyes.

"Oh please, we know it's you! I know it's you! Now step out of the way, or we'll make you get out of the way." She cracked her knuckles, smirking devilishly.

Match quickly rushed towards her, putting her hands on hers.

"Pence-Pence, calm down.." she muttered nervously.

"Let's not let, like, things get out of hand again, please..."

Pencil looked towards her, before sighing, gently taking her hands and rubbing them gently.

"Match, I love you, more than I can ever say, but SHE, has our alliance member." She pointed towards Pin, angrily.

"And I'm NOT letting her KILL SOMEONE ELSE!"

"OKAY, OKAY, WHAT'S GOING ON?!" A raspy voice yelled out.

Fries.

He stomped out, rubbing the sleep out of his eyes. Gelatin followed behind him, his eyes spacing out, and his body hunched over.

"SOME of us are trying to SLEEP!"

"And SOME of us are trying to SAVE LIVES!" Pencil snapped, stomping forward.

Ac-

Don't.

Pin's eyes filled with fear, as Pencil stood over her, staring her down. Without thinking, she grabbed Pin, and harshly shoved her out of the way, making her fall onto the pavement below. This seemed to wake Fries up, as he quickly rushed over towards Pin to help her up.

"Pin, what's going on." He lifted her body up, facing her towards him. She quickly clung onto his arm, shaking her head.

"I-I don't know!" She cried out.

"I only woke up to hear someone knocking, and next thing I know, I'm being called a murderer!"

Gelatin's head lifted up as he looked over at Pin. He may have been sleepy, but something about that made....sense...

"WHERE DID YOU HIDE HER?!" Pencil screamed from the inside of her house. Fries cursed Pencil silently, before he looked down at Pin.

"Hey, calm down, it's okay. Just let them do their stupid game of hide n' seek, and they'll go away."

This made her clutch his arm even closer. He let out a heavy sigh, as he rubbed his temples with his free hand.

"BOOK! FIND ANYTHING?" Pencil's voice shook the entire house. Book shook her head, as she opened the door that led to Pin's room. She walked in, and quickly began to search for her friend. Worried thoughts and memories filled Book's head, as she looked up and down, left and right, under and over...

But nothing.

She sighed, as she felt tears sting at her eyes.

What if she was really...

Wait.

Book looked down at the small object that was on the floor. It was quite stained; but, it was folded uniquely, and it was still neatly tucked away beneath the bed.

She picked it up, and examined the small paper in her hands, trying to figure out how she could unfold it.

"Goys! I found Ruby!!"

Book's eyes widened as she heard Bubble's voice come from outside. She tucked the paper inside of her pages, before she darted out of the room.

"WHERE IS SHE?!" Book cried out, as soon as she made it out of the house. Bubble rubbed her arm, before she looked back.

There stood Ruby, her eyes still darkened with bags, but now shining with...
Hope.

Next to her, was Teardrop, who was carrying a small book in her arms. She looked up at the small crowd, her eyes red and puffy, with tear stains on her cheeks.

'She's helping me through this.' She signed weakly.

'She's the only one who knows how I feel.'

Ruby nodded, before she looked over at TD.

"You know where you can find me, ok? Go take a break...I'll.. see you later.." Ruby gave her a sad smile. Teardrop nodded, a saddened smile growing on her face.

Book watched as Teardrop trudged away, before she looked back at Ruby.

"You...You managed to get out of bed.." she said, weakened, yet enthusiastically. Ruby nodded.

"I couldn't let Teardrop go through that alone...."

Book smiled, looking down at the small gem.

"Well, you did great...."

Pin watched the two, before she was suddenly snatched out of Fries's arms, and lifted off from the ground. She yelped.

Pencil clenched her neck, as she brought her in, closer to her face.

"We're gonna expose you, and make you pay like the soulless monster you are..." she smirked. Pin coughed, her eyes shutting from the pain and coldness from Pencil's hands on her neck.

That is, until Fries shoved Pencil away from her, forcing her to release Pin.

She coughed painfully, holding her neck as Fries stood in front of her, shielding her from Pencil.

"Alright, you maniacs, get out of here.
Before I make you." He glared towards the group. Pencil rolled her eyes, before she turned away, walking away from the three. The rest of them quickly followed, soon disappearing out of their sight.

Fries sighed, before he lifted Pin up carefully.

"You okay..?"

"Yeah..." she nodded. She looked around, and made eye contact with Gelatin, who was staring straight at her. She shivered a bit, before she looked back at Fries.

"I'm...gonna head back to bed. I'm still a bit tired, being woken up at this time and all..." she stretched, as Fries nodded.

"Go ahead, then. Me and Gelatin are gonna head back, we'll check up on you later, okay?"

Pin nodded, as she waved towards the two, making her way back towards the house. Fries waved goodbye, before he turned around and began to make his way back towards the garden. He just wanted to check the plants, just to see how they were doing.

They were beginning to grow even more...

Hopefully they grow even faster. He can feel his last fry beginning to dry up...

But a hand suddenly grabbing his arm made him stop in his tracks. He turned around, and noticed that Gelatin was the one who had a tight grip on his arm.

"Gelatin? What are you-"

"Fries, we have to talk."

Fries's eyes widened at the sudden change in Gelatin's tone. He stared at him, Gelatin's eyes staring at the ground and not moving up. Fries crossed his arms.

"What's the matter now, Gelatin?"

His eyes darted up to meet his, his eyes beginning to shine with tears.

"I...I don't think Pin is telling the truth."

"...What?"

"I...." Gelatin's voice began to cut off, as he tried to think about what he could say.

But nothing could come out.

Fries sighed, patting his back.

"Let's just get some sleep, okay..? This must be getting to you..." he mumbled. Gelatin shook his head, but...

Sleep did sound nice.

Wack

I am so sorry for the absence?! School has been killing me let me tell ya
I'm also in the musical so, my time? Very limited

But!! Here's the next part of the story! I hope you guys like it aaa

And tengolf is kinda cute so let me,,,,throw it in here

And don't worry, Coiny's there he's just. Sleepin' in his own home

also let's welcome the 'my tall girlfriend just died and I have never felt so empty' squad, feat. Teardrop and Ruby

Enjoy! (:

~Ice

Ghostly Treats

A few hours passed, and the sun was high in the air. The air was cool and refreshing, as sunlight permeated through the city. Everyone was now off doing their own thing; some were exploring, while others were simply resting, taking a break from the chaos that had unfolded earlier.

Book walked alongside Ruby, as the two traveled around the city. The team was in need for more food, so Book decided to go along and get some, and Ruby hesitantly volunteered to go along with her. The two walked in silence, as they walked by the abandoned science museum, expecting to see a certain someone there. Book looked up, and raised her hand to wave towards Needle, who usually-

Oh.

Book slowly put her hand down, as she looked away from the empty area. Ruby shot a glance towards her, before she cleared her throat.

"So..." She whispered.

"How's life...?"

Ruby mentally winced at the terrible conversation starter, but, hey, it was a shot. She just wanted to break the silence. Book blinked, before she looked down at Ruby, shrugging.

"Life's...weird."

Ruby nodded in agreement, as she looked down at her hands, slowly clasping them together.

"Life's just been all over the place. It's like it doesn't want us to relax in a way..." Ruby let out a weak chuckle. Book's eyebrows furrowed together, as she looked down.

"Honestly, this is all just chaos. I want it to end..." She looked away. Ruby nodded, as she looked ahead.

"It was hard. I've...never seen Teardrop that way."

"How was she...after..." Book uttered. Ruby rubbed her arm.

"Uh...Not so good. She was like me; she didn't want to see anyone, she was sobbing, angrily pacing around, snapping...It took me a while to calm her down."

A small smile grew on her face.

"But..I managed to do it. I helped calm her down, and we just...talked. Cried, laughed, talked...It felt..."

"Refreshing?" Book smiled. Ruby nodded in agreement, as she put a hand on Book's arm.

"Refreshing."

The two smiled, Ruby's face filled with a little bit more life than before, but the bags were still beneath her eyes. The two continued to make their way down the street, continuing to look for a nearby store that they'd always go to.

That is, until Book froze.

Ruby looked back, confusion clearly painted on her face.

Why did she stop?

"Book...?" Ruby called out. Book didn't respond; her face was growing pale, as she slowly wrapped her arms around herself. Her eyes darted around the area, as she slowly began to back away. Ruby looked around, confused as to what Book was freaking out about, and why it had this much of an effect on her.

She looked around, until it suddenly hit her.

Hard.

"Oh gosh, Book..." she cautiously put her hand on her shoulder, and looked into her eyes.

"Book, breathe, it's okay..." she mumbled, as she slowly led Book away from the area. Book was still out of it; letting out incoherent mumbles and gasps of fear.

Ruby...has never seen her like this.

But it should be understandable...

She could've died back there when it happened.

"Breathe Book..." Ruby gently moved her hands into Book's, squeezing them gently. Book broke out of her small, anxious state and looked into Ruby's eyes, tears prickling at the corners of her eyes. Ruby took a deep breath in, and slowly exhaled, nodding towards Book.

After a few seconds, Book finally caught onto what she was doing, and began to take slow, deep breaths. Ruby led her towards the opposite direction, cautiously making sure she didn't look back.

Because not only was that the "area" where it happened...

But *she* was nearby, too.

"Are you sure you're okay, Pin? They didn't hit you, or try to..."

"Coiny, I'm okay. I promise..."

Pin leaned in, and gave him a soft peck in the lips. Coiny lifted his hand up, and slowly stroked her cheek, sighing.

"If you say so..." he whispered. Pin smiled, slowly cupping her hand over his. They stayed that way for a moment, before the two broke apart and began to walk back into the city.

Pin looked up, and felt her smile curl downwards into a frown, as she slowly looked around the nearly-abandoned city.

"Things are so...different now..." Pin uttered, letting her eyes well up with tears.

Well..."fake" tears.

Coiny looked over at her, and then looked at the sky. He felt his heart sink a little, as he could no longer see the large, metal cage that dangled freely in the air.

Things were so much...

Quieter?

Without him...

He didn't like it. At all.

He sighed, as they walked past the entrance of the Yoyle Needy, by a familiar scene...

She.

"Wha...?" Coiny blinked, as he quickly looked around in alarm. That...

That was a voice...

His..

"Are...you okay?" Pin looked over at him, squeezing his hand gently. Coiny looked around once more, before nodding slowly.

"Y-..Yeah, I just.." he coughed a bit.

"I thought I heard something..."

Oh! This is a perfect time to act, Pin!

Pin let her eyes widen as she quickly looked around as well.

"What did you hear..?!" She whispered fearfully. Coiny shrugged slightly, before he looked around once more, holding Pin close to him.

SHE.

Suddenly, everything around Coiny quickly melted into darkness. A sharp, icy pain jolted through his body, as he no longer felt...

Anything.

His eyes widened in panic.

Why couldn't he move..?!

He shut his eyes in fear, as the small voice began to get louder, reverberating through his head and shaking him to the core.

SHE.

RUN.

DIE.

GET HER!

REVENGE!

Suddenly...

Get in here, Coiny!

I like COINY more!

Bleh!!

Ehhhh..!

Out of my way, Coiny!

Coiny!

Coiny!!

Coiny..

Coiny.

"COINY!"

Coiny winced as another sharp jolt stabbed through his body, but quickly began to subsede.

"W-Wha...?" He mumbled dizzily, as he slowly began to adjust to his surroundings. He looked around slowly, and then looked down.

His eyes widened.

He was on top op Pin, her eyes slowly dimming as she let out weakened gasps and coughs. Her hand was on his, which were slowly sliding off.

They were wrapped around Pin's neck, and he was..

"PIN!" He cried out in alarm, as he managed to snatch his hands away from her neck. She rolled to her side, holding her neck in pain, and gasping for air. The air that filled her lungs stung, but it was a relief to her.

Coiny held his hands close, as he watched her fearfully. The color returned to her face, as she finally managed to look up, and look at him, exhaustion and fear gleaming in her eyes.

"P-Pin, I'm so sorry, I didn't- I wasn't-" Coiny tried to find a way to explain what had happened..

But, he didn't know.

He didn't know what just happened.

Pin put a hand on her head, as she moved away from him.

"Why..." She rasped out. Coiny shook his head, moving closer to her.

"Pin, Pin I didn't mean to- I didn't do it-" he felt his eyes water. Pin shook her head, wrapping herself with her arms.

"I didn't do it.." she whispered.

"I didn't kill them.."

Coiny's eyes widened. Why...did she say that.

"Pin..." he knelt down, and slowly put a hand on her cheek. She flinched, but looked up slowly.

"I know you didn't Pin, I know you didn't. You're a sweet, loving and charismatic leader...and girlfriend.." he added.

"And I know you would never do something so...inhumane to them. But I need you to understand, that I don't know what happened to me. One moment I was talking to you, and the next, I see that I was-" he paused.

Pin looked back at the area, and back at Coiny.

"I wasn't in control of myself.."

Her eyes looked down.
Something had taken control of him.

When he was strangling her, his eyes...

They were almost...

Grey..?

Then black...then orange...then pink...then..

"Possessed." She whispered.

Coiny looked up at her.

"What..?"

"Oh, u-uh...I don't know..."

Coiny nodded and looked away. Pin grunted as she tried to stand back up, but suddenly fell back down. Coiny gasped, and quickly helped her back up, maintaining her balance. She smiled weakly.

"Th-Thanks, Coiny..."

He nodded, as he looked around, leading the way back towards their

place.

"Let's just head home.."

Well done Pin! You didn't even need my help, you're getting the hang of it, aren't ya?

Now, how about we try something a bit...different?

-

"Gelatin! Stop it!"

"I'm hungry Fries! Can't I just have one?! Or maybe-"

"No! I'm so close to finishing them, I'm so close to saving my *life* for taters sake!"

Gelatin stood up, as he reached out towards the last fry that dangled from Fries's container. He wrapped his fingers around the fry, and began to tug.

This made Fries twitch. With all of his strength, he swiftly turned around and slapped his hand away.

"STOP!" His voice broke.

Gelatin jumped back, his eyes widened in shock. He watched as Fries stumbled over towards the fence, leaning on it for support. His face was slowly losing its color, as he reached up and touched his fry.

It soon hit Gelatin.

That fry wasn't just a...fry.

It was basically his life....system?

He watched, as Fries began to shove it towards the side, wincing from the pain that had risen from the movements. He took slow, deep breaths, as he let his eyes close. The color soon began to return to his face, and, soon enough, he managed to stand back up.

"I-I'm...uh..." Gelatin's voice was quiet. He didn't really know what to

say...

"I-I'm, sorry-"

"Hey."

Fries walked over towards him, patting his head. This made the jello...jiggle. He looked up, and saw that Fries was giving him a sympathetic smile.

"Its okay."

Gelatin nodded, as he stared back at the ground. Fries chuckled, before he made his way into the garden, looking over each of the tall, green plants.

The two stayed in silence, until...

"Hey Fries! Gelatin!"

The voice made the two look up, as they saw Coiny walking their way, Pin beside him. Her head was on his shoulder, as she gave them a small wave. Fries waved back, as Gelatin...

Simply stared.

Pin looked away, as Coiny ran up towards the fence, looking at all of the plants.

"Fries, these look great! When will they be ready?" His eyes sparkled in adoration. Fries walked towards him, sighing.

"If everything goes smoothly, I suppose...in a few weeks. Two, maybe even three." He smiled, as he looked back. Coiny raised his fist in the air, triumphantly.

"YES! Soon we'll all be getting some REAL food around here!!!!"

Pin laughed a bit, as she walked closer towards the group. Gelatin still didn't take his eyes off of her, and it was a bit...

concerning.

" You..okay?" She smiled towards him, her voice still soft and hoarse. Gelatin raised his eyebrow.

"What's up with your neck?"

She winced at the question, as she looked down at the ground.

"Its...a long story."

"Well, I have the time." He crossed his arms. Pin's eyebrows furrowed together, as she saw the sudden change in his attitude.

Why was he acting this way?

Pin sighed, as she shook her head.

"Well, I'm gonna head back. I have to see TD, so..." She turned around, and began to walk away, rubbing her arms.

She didn't need to look back; she could still feel his eyes on her.

"Teardrop?"

Pin knocked on the door, holding a small basket in her hands. A few seconds passed, before a small click was heard, and the door slowly creaked open. Teardrop peeked through the crack, her eyes darkened and wet.

She had been crying...

"Mind if I...come in..?" Pin gave her a smile, holding up her basket.

"I brought you some treats..."

Teardrop looked down at the basket, and back up at Pin, slowly nodding as she opened the door. Pin smiled, as she walked in, placing the basket on a small table. Teardrop closed the door, and turned back towards Pin, sighing.

'Sorry about the mess. I haven't been able to clean up, I just don't feel well.'

Pin shook her head.

"No, don't apologize TD, I understand." She smiled.

Teardrop walked over to the couch, and patted a cushion, as she sat down. Pin sat down beside her, as she fiddled with her thumbs. A silence hung over the two, as none of them dared to speak a word.

Ever since her death, they haven't spoken much.

TD blaming Pin...

Pin trying to explain...

Thats why she was here.

She looked around at the darkened house, admiring the light blue walls, and the soft colors of all of the furniture. Things were scattered around the floor, sheets, pillows, papers..

Her eyes trailed back towards the small table in front of them, and her eyes came across...

Needle.

Photographs of her were scattered on the table, photographs with other objects, Teardrop, and Needle. A scrapbook sat, opened to a blank page out of the filled pages it already had. Pin tilted her head, as she noticed that one of the pictures had...

Her.

Pin was smiling in the picture, one arm around her co-captain, and the other around...

Needle.

On the bottom of the picture, in a bright, bubbly font, were the words:

TEAM W.O.A.H BUNCH, EPISODE 3

'You remember that day, don't you?' Teardrop signed towards Pin, smiling a bit. Pin nodded, as she picked the photograph up.

"That was when Coiny...forced Needle onto our team.." She laughed nervously, scratching the back of her head.

"If she didn't switch, he'd call her you-know-what three times,"

'In a row.' TD signed back, smiling a bit. Pin nodded, looking back down at the photo.

"Good times..."

The silence returned. Pin rubbed her neck, tracing her fingers over the red marks that Coiny had left. Teardrop looked at her, and her eyes widened.

'Are you okay?' She signed, a bit frantically. Pin noticed, and waved her hands towards her nonchalantly.

"I-I'm fine, it was just..." She looked down.

"Something happened earlier."

Teardrop nodded, as she looked over at the basket that sat on the table, away from the photographs. She tilted her head, as she got up and walked over towards it. Pin noticed, and a smile grew on her face.

"I figured I'd bring some treats for you...since you haven't been feeling well.."

Teardrop took the small cloth off of the covering of the basket, and her eyes gleamed for the first time in days.

There, in the basket, were an array of cupcakes, small cakes, and muffins; all having bright colors and wacky designs to them. A smile grew on Teardrop's face, as she carefully held up two of the cupcakes. The one she had chosen had magenta-colored frosting, small sugar pearls covering them. The wrappers were bright green, and the

cupcake itself was a vanilla-cupcake, with small blotches of purple inside of it.

A good yoyle-berry cupcake, Pin's specialty.

The one that she reached out to give to Pin, had white, fluffy frosting that ended in a swirl on the top. Red sprinkles were scattered over the frosting, and the wrapper was white. The cupcake itself was red, and Pin licked her lips.

Her very own, red-velvet.

She thanked Teardrop, as she took the cupcake, gently peeling off the wrapper on it. Teardrop did the same thing, before she licked her lips, and took a large bite out of it. This made Pin giggle, as Teardrop's eyes began to sparkle even more.

'Pin! This is so good! When did you make them? How?' She quickly signed, licking the purple frosting off of her lips. Pin looked away bashfully, before she answered.

"I made them...not too long ago? I think it was the day before...'that' happened..." She looked up.

"But I didn't want them to go to waste, so I brought them here, to give to you.."

Teardrop took another bite, nodding happily. She put the cupcake down, before leaning in and wrapping her arms around Pin. Pin jumped a bit, before she slowly let her arms wrap around Teardrop, as they stayed in that hug for a bit.

"I'm...sorry about not being able to save her. I did everything I could, but..." Pin weakly lamented. Teardrop slowly broke free from the hug, as she looked up.

"But Leafy... I was far from where it had happened.."

Teardrop frowned, her eyes darkening once more.

"I managed to break Leafy away, but...it was too-"

A hand suddenly grabbed Pin's wrist. Pin looked up, and her heart sank as she saw Teardrop.

Her eyes were fixated on the ground, her face growing dangerously pale. A drop of blood trickled down her chin, as she tightened the grip on Pin's wrist.

"T-Teardrop?" Pin made her voice shake. Teardrop let out a horrible, raspy wheeze, as she collapsed onto the floor. More blood began to pour out of her mouth, as she let out guttered screams and cries, clutching her stomach. Pin stood up; her heart racing, and her mind swirling with panicked thoughts.

Now, don't try to comfort her. Don't make this hard for yourself.

Thats what you do.

I make it easier.

Pin felt her body grow stiff, as she stood over Teardrop, watching her let out disgusting sobs of pain, blood drooling out of her mouth.

You have to learn how to NOT get so attached to them, especially when they're going to die.

You just have to get it done.

Do what you have to do.

And then? You have your result.

Teardrop's limbs were trembling, as she turned onto her back, wheezing painfully. Her eyes trailed over to Pin, who stood over her, silently. A sudden burst of rage exploded in her chest, as she weakly lifted her arms and signed,

'He won't forgive you.'

Pin felt tears sting at the edges of her eyes. But a smile grew on her face.

"Oh, he won't, won't he?"

Teardrop's arms collapsed, as the room suddenly began to grow more fuzzy, and light. Her eyes squeezed shut as she coughed harshly, more blood spewing out of her mouth. The pain was growing more and more unbearable, until...

'Teardrop..?'

She weakly opened her eyes, and the room was glowing more and more, as she saw a familiar figure coming down towards her.

'T-Teardrop, its...its you! I-It's me...'

"N-....Needle....?" Teardrop croaked out, her voice soft and hoarse. Pin's eyes widened as she heard her say that, a tear making its way down her cheek.

A few more seconds passed, before Teardrop's eyes suddenly gazed away, her limbs finally coming to a rest. One final sigh escaped from her mouth before....

Silence.

"Teardrop..!"

She wrapped her arms around the smaller figure, letting tears pour down her pale cheeks.

"I missed you, I missed you so so much love...."

THERE IS A HUGE SNOWSTORM HEADED THIS WAY AND IM PUMPED

anyways hello everyone, I'm back and I'm here to bring you: the big sad, part 27

small gay has left the idfb chatroom

actually, big gay couple has left the idfb chatroom

i hope you guys are enjoying the story! like I've said so many times before, literally everything you guys make for this adds 1029837645 years to my life, and i cherish it and i cherish you forever. thank you so so so much for making stuff for this, id never imagine that this story would come so far

anyways, enjoy your suffering!

~ice

What Would She Do?

"SHIT!"

Pin broke out of her stiffness, and slammed her fist against the wall. Hot tears poured down her face, as she clenched her teeth angrily.

"THAT ONE WAS GELATIN'S! WHY DID I LET HER TAKE IT?!" Her voice broke.

She punched the wall once more, not caring that small cracks were being made. She didn't want to kill her, she didn't want to kill her at all...

Yet.

Oh Pin, you need to toughen up. Everything is just sooo hard for you, and it's time to let go and become who you're destined to be.

Me! Of course.

"Shut up." She gritted through her teeth, angrily.

Hmm...

Alright then.

Have it your way Pin. Since you want me to leave soooo badly, I might as well obey your commands.

You can deal with this; Find out what Can work, and what can't.

I'll be watching you, alright hun?

Have fun~

"NO, WAIT!..." Pin's voice was trembling, as silence poured into the

room.

Nothing.

She shook her head, as she slowly turned herself around, looking back down at Teardrop. Her body laid stiff, as the blood continued to pour out of her mouth, forming a small puddle on the floor. Pin shook her hands, trying to figure out what she could do.

"O-Okay, what can I do...what could lead up to this..." she mumbled to herself. After a few seconds of silent thinking, she began to pace around nervously, anxiety eating away at her heart. She had to cover this up; no one was around to help her.

She was on her own.

She weakly leaned against the wall, holding her chest. She looked around, her eyes darting back and fourth to see if she could find anything that could quickly cover this up.

Her eyes trailed back towards the table, towards the small scrapbook...

Still open on a blank page.

Pin slowly approached the book, as she carefully picked it up. She flipped through all of the pages, her mind shutting down completely, and going numb. Smiling pictures of the girls stabbed into her, guilt flowing into her veins.

How could she be so...

Clueless?

She continued to flip, until a certain page made her freeze.

'I should have appreciated you more.
You were so bright, so sweet, so...amazing. You were like a shining star to me; you've made me see that there really is a good out of a crappy show with...some crappy people.
I don't think there's ever gonna be a day where I don't miss your laughs, your voice, and just...you.'

Usually, Pin would be tearing up at such a written piece. But for some reason..she felt no pity. All of the anxiety and sadness that was haunting her before...

It was gone.

Instead, a small smile curled up Her lips, as her finger gently rubbed the page, over Teardrop's clean handwriting.

This was it.

She finally had an IDEA!

Pin looked around, and grabbed a blue pen from a small cup on the table. She looked down at her handwriting, analyzing it once more become carefully etching down the following words:

"But, the pain has grown worse. I can't feel much, I can't...do much anymore. You were the reason why I kept trying to go at life.

But now you're gone.

So, is there really a good reason for me to keep fighting?"

Pin paused, shaking her head while trying to figure out more possible ways she could paint out the message.

What would Teardrop say.

Or, sign.

Wait.

" I thought I could go through life, I thought I could beat this. But it doesn't help that I can't say a word. Having no voice is hell; it's the fucking worst.

Which is why, I'm leaving.

I can't find any reason to keep living anymore, no one really knows that I'm...here. I constantly feel worthless, I know that I'm not a great object, but when Needle was with me, I felt...

Hope.

But why battle when you know that hope is gone?

All I can say now is, thank you.

Thanks Ruby, thanks for trying to help me through this. But I just can't do it anymore.

Thanks Coiny, for introducing me to Needle back then; you didn't know, but you gave me a reason to live when you showed me...her.

Thanks Pin;"

Pin wanted to finish right there; she didn't want to mention anything else, she didn't know Teardrop that well. She would've added more people, but...

All of those people are dead.

She continued.

"I know you tried to save her. I know you tried your best. I'm sorry if I didn't believe you, but, I know you tried to do everything you could...

And I forgive you.

I would thank more people, but, as you guys know, they're gone.

So, at this point, I think it'll do us all good if I join there.

That's where I belong. With Needle, with Flower, with...them. Just to let them know that they're safe now.

Plus...I'd rather die by my own hands, than by the hands of the object who killed Needle.

And Firey.

And Rocky, Woody, and Flower.

And everyone else who she'll get, too."

Pin felt a bullet of ooze drip down her cheek, as she took a deep breath.

"Well. I'm running out of space to write. Wonderful.

Thanks for being by my side guys, but my time on the show, as well as here, has ended.

I'll tell the others that you say hello.

So, this is it.

Goodbye everyone.

~Teardrop"

Pin slowly lifted the pen off of the page, as she looked back down at the table. The photo that had the original team sat on the edge, it's plastic making it gleam with the sunlight hitting its edge.

On it, was the new Squashy Grapes, after the separation. Leafy stood in front, giving a high-five to Teardrop happily. Her eyes sparkled with joy, while Teardrop returned the smile, confidence and determination within it.

That was the one.

She grabbed it, and placed it onto the page, shutting the book gently. The picture stuck out from the top, acting as some sort of bookmark for her.

With trembling hands, yet a small smile on her face, Pin knelt down and placed the book on Teardrop's chest. She grabbed Teardrop's left arm, and slowly wrapped it around the book, making it look like she was holding it close to her heart, and tightly, so she wouldn't let it fall.

"How cheesy." Pin muttered, as she got up. She quickly grabbed the unfinished cupcakes from the table, and shoved them back into the basket, covering it with the small-checkered handkerchief she had. She looked back, and shook her head at the scene that had splattered before her.

This wasn't enough.

"Okay, Pin..." She wrapped her arms around herself, as she began to walk around the house, examining each room and cabinet.

"How would she do it...How would Teardrop do it..." she whispered beneath her breath. It felt like every move she made would make a large, crashing sound that would echo through out the city, and crush her, exposing her and what she's done.

She made her way into the bathroom, opening the small cabinet with a mirror on the front. She scanned through the inside of it, looking for the right thing that would lead up to this.

"Bandages, toothpaste, floss..." Pin shoved things out of the way, causing some items to fall into the sink below her.

"...Pills.."

She grabbed the small bottle, and examined it closely. The bottle was a bright orange, with purple capsules filling up the inside of it. On it, the label, "YOYLE-LENOL" (Jesus Christ I'm sorry about that name.) were printed on the front in bright, blue and yellow letters.

"Perfect."

Pin popped the cap off, and poured a large amount into her palm. She looked over, and dumped the capsules into the toilet, each one plopping into the water and beginning to break apart. She slowly shut the lid, before flushing the toilet, watching all of the purple capsules get pulled away into the sewers.

After finishing, she quickly placed everything back into the cabinet, shutting it ever so gently. She walked back towards the living room, holding the bottle tightly in her hand. A few pills still remained on the inside, as she took two, and scattered them around Teardrop.

"Okay, one more time..." Pin shut her eyes, before taking Teardrop's right hand, and placing the uncovered pill bottle in her hand, wrapping her cold, stiff fingers around it.

But something made her pause.

"How am I supposed to steal her hands..." she looked up.

"This is a suicide...and if I do it, they'll know that this wasn't an 'accident'."

She shook her head, grunting angrily.

"Screw it; I'll find my way eventually."

And with that, she quickly got up, grabbed her small basket, and made her way towards the door. As she touched the handle, she turned back to look at the scene.

Pictures were scattered on the table, pencils and pens from here to there. The book, was now in Teardrop's arms, and a bright, orange bottle immediately caught Pin's attention.

Well done, Pin.

She sighed, as she quietly slipped out, locking the door from the inside, leaving the house darkened, and heavy, lost thoughts and words now swirling around in each and every room, unable to be heard, and unable to be acknowledged.

"Who the hell do you think you are, coming into our clubhouse?" Pencil sneered as she looked down at the smaller figure standing in front of her.

Gelatin shrugged.

"I mean, I wanted to talk to you guys; didn't know that this was the castle to the city."

"Whatever, Gelatin. Go away, go try to steal Fries's fry or something." She rolled her eyes, as she began to shut the door. Gelatin tutted.

"Fine, guess you won't hear what I have to say to you."

"Whatever it is, I don't want to hear it!" Pencil chirped from inside. Gelatin crosses his arms, as he stood in front of the door, stubbornly.

"Are you sure you don't?"

"POSITIVELY. NOW GO AWAY!"

He rolled her eyes. What would he do, to get her attention...

Ding!

He smirked, as he began to waddle off slowly, looking back every now and then.

"Fine! Guess you don't wanna hear about.." he jumped back, wiggling his arms.

"The *murderer*....."

A moment of silence hung between the two, before a small click was heard. Pencil peeked out, raising an eye towards the green jello.

"The murderer."

"Yep!" He crossed his arms proudly. Pencil sighed angrily, rubbing her temples before swinging the door open.

"Just get in." She grumbled.

Gelatin grinned, as he walked inside, hearing Pencil shut the door behind him.

"Sit down." She pointed towards the sofas, as she walked into another room, assumably the kitchen. He took a seat, as he observed the house. Multi-colored tiles let off a soft glow, as a disco ball swung in the air, glimmering from the sunlight that came in through a window.

"So, jel-for-brains, what do you know." Pencil walked in, slamming her hands on the sofa cushion beside him. He jumped, before he looked back at Pencil.

"I mean...what do YOU know?" He asked, fiddling with his thumbs.

"Because I know you have something, and I think I can...connect? Or go off with that..."

Pencil thought for a moment, before she leaned in, clasping her hands together.

"Pin." She whispered.

"It has to be her."

-

Coiny walked towards the house, carrying a small flower he had plucked from Fries's garden.

He didn't know how it got there; but he wanted it gone.

So, Coiny took it.

He continued to walk, before he heard footsteps coming from behind him. He looked, and he saw Book and Ruby, the two lower-ranked Freesmarter's. He rolled his eyes, as he turned away from the two.

"GET AWAY FROM US, YOU...MURDERER!"

Coiny took a deep breath, trying to contain his rage. He turned around, and began to walk towards the two, clenching his teeth.

"For the last time, she is *not* a murderer. And neither am I, Ruby." He leered down at her, his eyes darkening.

"So why don't you keep your dirty little mouth, SHUT."

Ruby flinched, quickly reaching down towards Book's hands and squeezing it gently.

Meanwhile, Book was completely out of it. Her eyes were glossy and exhausted; coming from the previous panic attack she'd had.

Coiny looked towards her, and raised his eyebrow.

"Is she okay?"

"It's...none of your buisn- actually, no, wait, it IS your business." She snapped.

Coiny stepped back a bit, growling a bit in anger.

"Remember your lovely, innocent "girlfriend", nearly beating her to death?!" She tightened her grip on Book's hand.

"Did you know it left her HURT? She can't even go NEAR the spot anymore!"

"Well, did you know that Pin is hurting TOO?!" Coiny snapped. Ruby rolled her eyes angrily.

"Not as much as Book is. I've never...seen her like this." She rubbed her thumb over Book's knuckles, and this seemed to make Book wake up; she smiled tiredly, as she interlocked her fingers with Ruby's.

Coiny 'gagged' in disgust, while Ruby began to wave him away.

"Just leave us ALONE. We're going to HELP someone, something your amazing 'girlfriend' could never do!"

"Whatever!" Coiny tutted, as he began to walk off.

What did she know?? All she knew is how to cry in t-minus ten seconds.

And eat too many berries.

Way too many.

Besides, why would Pin murder someone..?

How would she....?

He shook his head, as he made his way back towards Pin's house, letting a smile grow on his face. He knocked on the door three times, before it swung open, Pin standing on the other side.

A wide smile was plastered on her face, as she gasped from surprise.

"Coiny!"

"Hey, Pin!"

They embraced, Pin melting into Coiny's arms. Coiny smiled, as she held her close.

The two stayed in silence for a bit, Pin beginning to let Coiny into her house, when suddenly...

"I'M COMIN' IN TD, WHETHER YOU LIKE IT OR NOT!"

Ruby slammed herself against the hard wooden door for the third time, feeling the wood give out beneath her. Splinters of wood flew in random directions, as Ruby stumbled inside, hitting her head against the wall. She flinched, as she felt a tiny crack form on the back of her head.

"Ruby..? Ruby, are you okay?" Book carefully came in, her eyes still lost in another world. She didn't know where they were; but she knew that Ruby was hurting.

Ruby shook her head, as she stood up dizzily.

"I-I'm fine Book, it's-"

"Oh..my god..."

Ruby looked up, and Book was mumbling in fear, slowly stepping backwards. Ruby looked over to where she was looking at, and she felt her heart stop.

There laid Teardrop, a empty bottle of pills in her hand...

The scrapbook, closed and neatly tucked in her other.

Was this a boring chapter....?

Yea

Im sorry guys hhhh

Anyways hello.... it's me, ya boy

Im in rehearsal right now and I fiNISHED this part of the story

Im. Kinda tired but ah well

Also, small thing! I noticed that the story is getting a bit popular on Instagram, so if you. Post anything about it, go ahead and tag it as #idfbfeargarden ?? Yea.,,thank u guys so much I'd die for all of you

Anyways, we leave off with a cliffhanger now, eh? Yea

Anyways, enjoy, love ya Guys <3

~ice

Hushed Whispers

"Oh..."

Ruby covered her mouth, as Book slowly stumbled towards the scene. She felt her throat close up, as she looked down at the smaller figure, sprawled on the floor below. The book was in one arm, a bottle of pills loosely clutched in the other.

The book had some sort of a...

Bookmark..?

Book carefully lifted Teardrop's arm, as she grabbed the book, her breath becoming more heavy and shaky. She looked at the paper that stuck out from the book, and slowly opened it to the page.

It was a photo.

A photo of the...

"Squashy...grapes...?" She whispered, her voice faintly shaking. She inspected the picture, looking at all of the figures in the sunshine-filled scene.

Leafy stood in the middle, her mouth curled into a large grin. She was looking towards Teardrop, who was beside her, giving her a high five. Teardrop was smiling; her eyes sparkling as she returned the gesture.

She removed the picture, and was shocked to see...

Writing.

Teardrop's writing.

It was shaky, and a bit scratchy, but Book quickly scanned through it,

trying to figure out...anything.

Anything that could answer her questions.

Why.

Why did she do it.

"No... No, no, Book...."

Book looked up, and her eyes trailed over to Ruby, shock beginning to numb her entirely after she had read the note. But she quickly snapped out of it, as she noticed Ruby hunched over, holding her head, with tears spilling down her cheeks. Her face was dangerously pale; her eyes widened in pain and panic, as she stumbled back, not able to break her stare with the floor.

Book looked down, and placed the book back onto the table, rushing over to Ruby's side. She couldn't say anything; she was silenced, her mind now heavier than before. She felt a darkness that dragged her lower and lower below the grounds...

But she couldn't feel this right now.

Ruby's hurting.

"T-T...Teardrop-" Ruby wheezed out, as she clasped her chest. A tear squeezed out of her eye as she began to lean backwards. Book quickly caught her, and put a hand oh her cheek, caressing her thumb around it. This didn't help; Ruby was still whispering and crying, not being able to break out of the shock that was hitting her.

This happened once...

But now it happened again.

With someone she could've...saved..

Suddenly, a shift in the atmosphere around the two made Book lean in and give Ruby a small peck on her lips. She didn't know why; or what...made her do it, but she swore she felt something..push her to do so. The atmosphere had a strange, airy feeling, and it didn't feel

calm; yet it wasn't chaotic either. Book shook her head, and looked down Ruby, a bullet of sweat rolling down the side of her head.

Maybe this would calm her down...

Nope.

A deep red blush bloomed on her cheeks, as she began to panic even more than before.

"I-I..You...Y-You Kiss-" Ruby blubbered.

Book felt tears prickle in her eyes. That was...a mistake.

Well...she didn't know. Ruby wasn't in the right state to grasp the situation...maybe she could figure out how she felt later.

"I-..I know this is scary..." Book whispered, gently sitting Ruby back down. She cupped her hands around the gem's face, caressing her cheek soothingly.

"But...We have to stay strong..We can't give up, s-..she wouldn't..want that for you..." Book hiccuped, feeling herself nearly burst into tears.

But this seemed to calm Ruby down; she was no longer shaking, nor mumbling, and her breaths were slow and soft. Her eyes were locked onto Book, refusing to let anything break the connection between the two.

"We can get through this..." She used her free hand, and gently picked up Ruby's, letting her thumb do a gentle, rubbing motion on the back of it.

"Together."

"Together...?" Ruby whimpered out, as she gently grasped Book's hands. Book felt a sad smile creep up onto her face, as she nodded, helping her back up on her feet. She shot one last glance over at the lifeless body on the other side of the room, before she shook her head, and looked back down at Ruby. Her head was resting on Book's shoulder, as she clung onto her arm, not wanting to let go. Book gave her another kiss, whispering her final word...

"Together."

-

"Aren't you hurt?"

"She kissed Ruby...I thought you'd be more...upset?"

"Do something Flower!"

All eyes turned towards the taller figure, as she shook her head and sighed quietly.

"I'm...Not angry."

"WHAA-?!" The others gasped in shock. She rolled her eyes, before clearing her throat to gather everyones attention once more.

"Listen. Before I...died...I told Book to take care of Ruby for me. To try and...make her happy. I know Ruby; I know she would be hurting a lot after that..." A warm smile grew on her face, as she watched the two figures leave.

"She's keeping her promise. And you know what?"

She turned back towards the others.

"I'm proud of her."

-

A few hours have passed, and the city seemed...oddly quiet. Clouds loomed over the horizon, slowly floating closer towards all of them, threatening rumbles of thunder being heard from the distance.

Coiny gazed out of the window, his eyes foggy and gloomy. He was shivering, his arms wrapped around himself. He didn't feel well; it was beginning to get rather...cold, inside of the house, and he was in a terrible mood after what...they found earlier.

The word of Teardrop's suicide had quickly spread around; Coiny, being the first one to hear about it, after seeing the gem and the book trade out of the small blue house, both of them with tear-stained cheeks. Coiny couldn't believe it at first...

But after reading the note, and seeing the empty pill bottle...

This was hurting him. Damaging his state-of-mind.

The weakest and most frail objects, some he knew, some he wasn't fond of... were now...gone. Now, there was just him, his girlfriend, his friends...and the alliance...what if we don't-

NO.

'We're gonna make it through this, we can stop the murderer and make them pay, once and for all..!' He thought to himself.

'We can make it, together!'

But, even with the positivity he was trying to give himself, he couldn't help but feel...upset. Scared. No one knew who the murderer could be; Their inhumane ways of slaughtering and killing has made him wonder,

who would do such a thing?

Well, it couldn't be Pin. He knew her like the back of his hand...she was too loving, and amazing..to do such a horrific deed.

Leafy? He wasn't so sure...she sounded genuinely upset when she spoke with him not too long ago...

But she could be lying. Just like she has lied, many times before.

As he was thinking of who it could be, he felt a blanket wrap around his shoulders, a pair of hands squeezing them gently. He looked back, and felt his chest warm up when he saw Pin. A sympathetic smile was on her face, as she gave him a small peck on the cheek.

"Figured you might've needed this." She whispered. He thanked her, before he gently pulled her towards him, sitting her down beside him. He held her hands, giving them a reassuring squeeze.

"Pin..." His voice was low and quiet, seemingly exhausted from everything that had happened earlier.

"I need to ask you something...but I don't want you to freak out, get angry, get upset...I'm just curious."

Pin nodded. She knew where this would be going; but, of course, she had to keep up the *act.*

"Are you...the murderer?"

Pin froze for a moment, before opening her mouth, prepared to give him the proper response, but, for some reason...she couldn't speak.

Coiny, on the other hand, waited patiently. He knew she wasn't the murderer; but the question still must have hurt her in a way, after seeing...all of these deaths.

What do you think you're doing?!

'I..have to tell him. He has a right to know, doesn't he?'

He's going to ruin EVERYTHING for you!

'But...I love him. Doesn't he deserve to know...?'

But he WONT forgive you. Don't you remember how some of these murders AFFECTED HIM? He'll begin a riot for pin factories sake!

'He wouldn't. I know him..'

PIN, DON'T YOU-

'I'm gonna tell him.'

"Coiny.." Pin clasped his hands, taking a small breath. He looked up, listening to what she was about to tell him.

"I...I-"

Suddenly, she felt the room beginning to vanish. Her eyes widened, as she began to feel her body go numb. She was surrounded by the familiar void that she had grown used to, back when she would have these constant night terrors.

She could hear mumbling; low and high. She couldn't move; she could only look around, panicking, until....

Tell him, and we'll KILL him.

Pin's heart nearly stopped. She shook her head frantically, as she felt tears building up in the back of her eyes.

'N-No! What do you mean?!'

You telling him, will lead to him telling everyone while you're trying to run off. Don't you remember, Rule #11? "Do not hurt your best friends"..? Well, haven't you thought of how much life, and...love, his hands could bring to the garden...?~

'No...No, I-I CAN'T KILL HIM, I-'

Then its simple. DON'T TELL HIM.

Pin shut her eyes, as she felt a chill run down her spine. White noise filled her head, as she collapsed onto the ground, hearing the voice become softer, and softer.

Don't tell him,Pin. It'll only be a matter of time....

Before he gets to know.

She opened her eyes. The world around her shifted, as she sat up, rubbing her head sleepily, as she began to look around.

She...was back home!

It was darker, no later than...

She looked up at the small clock she had hanging over the wall.

8:00 pm.

The sound of raindrops tapping against the windows broke the silence, as she quickly looked around for Coiny. After a moment, she spotted him; on the couch, a blanket tucked over him, as he snored quietly.

"how..." Pin mumbled, confused and still a bit dazed from the wake. She didn't understand how...he went over there that fas, when they were just here, talking.

Don't worry; I told him we weren't. Told him rest.

Oh.

Pin nodded, as she slowly stood up, carefully moving her way towards him. She didn't want to wake him; she tried moving as quiet as possible. She made it, as she carefully laid herself next to him, trying not to break him from his slumber.

But, she did, as he shifted, beginning to wake up from the sudden movements he felt.

"Wh-..Wha...Pin...?" He drowsily whispered, turning his head to try and look at her, but was hushed by Pin. She placed a hand on his mouth, as she let a smile grow on her face. She leaned in, and gave him a peck on the cheek, moving closer to him.

"Sorry Coiny..." She whispered, as a low rumble of thunder echoed through the air.

"I just wanted to be with you..."

-

"SO? What are we gonna do?" Pencil placed a hand on her hip, as she looked around the room. Everyone in the room exchanged nervous glances back at each other, before Gelatin stood up from a chair.

"We could try to poison her, make it look like...food poisoning, or maybe a natural...cause?" He suggested, shrugging. Pencil raised her eyebrows, as she gestured towards the small jello.

"I like that idea, what do you guys think?" Satisfaction rang in Pencil's tone, as she looked around the room.

"I think its a proper way to get REVENGE!" Ice Cube grinned. Pencil nodded in agreement, as she turned towards another object on the sofa.

"Bubble?"

"Well.. Oi don't knoio..." She looked down, fiddling with her thumbs.

"Oi don't thoink death is a good...solution..."

Pencil rolled her eyes, as she tapped her foot impatiently, waiting for Bubble's thoughts on the matter. A heavy silence hung over the room for a moment, before Ruby stood up, her eyes puffy and dark.

"We can avenge Flower, and Needle, and Firey, and everyone else who died by her hands..!" She exclaimed, as she felt Book patted her back, helping er sit back down. Ruby sniffled, as she laid her head back on Book's shoulder, staying as close as she could. Book looked up.

"Ruby's right. None of them, not even Rocky, deserved to die that

way! We have to help avenge them!"

Pencil nodded, as she turned towards the last object n the room.

"Match?"

Match didn't respond. She sat on the sofa, her posture hunched over. Her eyes were foggy, and she seemed very out-of-it. Pencil cleared her throat, trying to get her attention.

"Uh...Match?"

"O-Oh, uh..." Match jumped a bit, snapping out of her daze. Her voice was frail and stuffy, almost sounding a bit..ill.

"I agree-..."

Pencil's eyebrows furrowed together, as she sat beside Match, concern sprawled all over her face. She took Match's hands into her own, and this made Match look up.

"Match, are you feeling okay..?" She whispered. Match hesitantly shook her head weakly, a cough escaping her lips.

"I-..I think I'm getting sick..."

"SICK?!" The room bursted into panic as everyone quickly ran towards the sickly figure, spontaneously asking question after question.

"WHAT DID SHE DO?!"

"DID PIN GIVE YOU ANYTHING?!"

"DO YOU NEED ME TO GET GB?!"

"GUYS!" Match raised her hands, coughing more harshly.

"I-Its okay, P-Pin..like, didn't do..anything..."

Pencil put a hand on her cheek, tears threatening to crawl out of her eyes.

"Match, are you sure...?" Pencil's voice was quiet, as Match nodded, letting her forehead touch Pencil's gently. Pencil flinched; she was burning up...

"Eeew, gross, they're in love!" Gelatin snickered. Pencil shot him a nasty glare for a moment, before turning back around to face the alliance.

"Girls, help Gelatin find ANYTHING that'll work for this plan. I want that monster gone." She gritted through her teeth.

"I'll take care of Match..."

The others nodded, as Pencil helped Match up. The two began to walk towards the stairs, heading for one of the rooms that they had, leaving everyone else behind.

"So, Freesmart..." Ruby looked up, wiping her eyes.

"What's our plan?"

"Well, we can try to look around for some poisonous plants, or berries..." Ice Cube suggested, scooting closer towards the group.

"I don't...think that would work. I think we should try to make this look like natural causes; a "accident", per say." Book added.

"So, what can we use...?"

The room filled with silence, as everyone thought of ways they could finally put Pin in her place. The silence continued for a good minute, before Bubble spoke out.

"Book, aren't you a IDFB Guoidebook?"

She nodded, before Bubble thought once more.

"Do you thoink we could try and use...the bugs?"

"The bugs?!" Book snapped up, shivering at the sudden thought. Those bugs haven't been seen for a good year now, and Book wanted to keep it that way. They were multi-legged arthropods, covered in

bright, luminescent red or purple spots. Purple spotted bugs were harmless, while the red spotted ones..were deadly.

"Why bugs, though? Aren't we going to poison her?"

"Well, if I'm remembering correctly, the bugs are POISONOUS. We could make this look accidental, if we just capture a few and let them run free in her home!" Ice Cube chimed in.

"Well, yes, but, what does that have to do with me?" Book pointed to herself.

"Why would you need the guidebook?"

"Do you think it says where the bugs can be found...?" Ruby whispered. Book looked down at Ruby, before she looked back up, sighing.

"Alright...open me up, lets see where these guys can be found..."

"And once we know where they are, we find them..." Ruby held Book's hand, and squeezed it gently.

"And we put a end to this murdering spree."

Helloooo

why do i feel like my writing is getting...worse. what is this

anyways I bring you: the lesbian team brings a plan : part 2

also. rubook,,,,,,I'm sorry that ship is cute and hmnvmdnbf

anyways i hope you enjoyed this part...i am feeling a bit sick, and I am not feeling so BRIGHT but i will try my best to be positive for y'all bc ily and you guys leave some nice comments for me ksjdhghsjkjdh

also I will possibly be making other stories? this one will be a top priority but the others....i wanna write m o r e

anyways, enjoy....ill talk to you guys in the next chapter~

~ice

Its Raining, Its Pouring...

"I MANAGED TO MAKE A HOLE!"

"You did?!"

"Well....its a bit, small-"

Angry grunts filled the metal box, as the objects glumly collapsed back into their spots, the remaining hope that they had quickly disintegrating. Saw huffed, as she looked up at the hole she had managed to cut through, after months and months of doing so.

It was tiny. Tiny enough to let Firey Jr. Pass through, but...

"FINALLY! I'M FREE!"

The sudden voice made everyone jump, as they looked up. They noticed the figure quickly squeezing out of the small hole, and soon, everyone began to speak at once.

"WHERE DO YOU THINK YOUR GOING?!"

"COME BACK HERE!"

"HELP US OUT!"

The object turned around, and panicked as everyone began to gather around and try to stop them from leaving. But...this didn't stop them from squeezing out of the small hole, happily stretching and zooming around.

"I'm...free! I'M FREE!" They cried out happily, as they began to make their way back towards...

Wait, towards where?

They paused and looked around, trying to absorb the surrounding areas. Rain was pouring down onto the earth, but this didn't stop them; they had to find their way back to the other contestants.

After looking around, they saw...a city?
City, means civilization. And that means...

They quickly dashed upwards, and flew out of the area, leaving the disgruntled and angry shouts of the others behind them.

"Page 234: Yoyle-Insects." Ruby read out loud, as they walked through the forest. She kept Book open, as she held her in her arms. Book, on the other hand, was feeling the world around her shift and spin quickly; she wasn't used to being opened for a long period of time like this. But, she managed, just so she could help the team out.

Umbrellas were raised in the air, as the rain continued to pelt down onto the ground and the umbrellas. They had decided to search for the bugs quickly; they didn't want to waste another minute. Otherwise, someone...

No. No more deaths, no more murders.

They could do this.

"Okay, so it says here that the bugs can be found by the clearing over...there!" Ruby pointed towards a small clearing, which also had the....

"The TLC?"

"Oh man, I feel bad for them already. Well...not so much, because

they can't go in there..." Gelatin shivered at the thought.

Ruby flipped through the pages, until a small piece of paper slipped out of her, and collapsed onto the ground. Ruby tilted her head in confusion.

What was that doing inside of her?

Ruby gently put Book down, and gave her the umbrella to help shield her from the rain. She leaned in, and gave her a tiny kiss on her forehead, caressing her arm gently.

"Stay here, ok? We'll get the bugs, we'll be okay.." she whispered. Book giggled a bit; ditzy and out-of-it from being opened for longer than she expected. Ruby smiled a bit, before she turned back around to face the others.

"Alright, do you guys have everything ready?" She asked, looking around. The others held out small buckets with lids, and Ruby nodded.

"Good, good. Remember, we only need one of each. So...two is good for now."

"Well, let's hurry up and do this! It seems like the longer we stand out here, the heavier this rain is gonna get!" Gelatin whined. Ruby sighed, and waved her hand towards them, making them scatter around and beginning to look. Ruby quickly picked up the small piece of paper, before she began to scan the area around Book; just to keep her safe from any kind of unexpected critters that would bring her harm.

The paper was now crumbled up; Ruby held onto it, curiously twirling it in her fingers.

What was on it?

Meanwhile, Ice Cube was wandering around the TLC. She held the small pail with her mouth, as she looked in between small rocks and patches of grass that were around the corners of the small box.

Nothing.

She frowned, as she began to dig at the mud with her foot. They could...possibly be underground...

She continued to dig, until she moved forward, causing her to slip on the wet mud. This sent her slamming against the hard metal wall, as she slid down, wincing. That was definitely gonna leave a mark.

"WHAT WAS THAT?!"

The sudden voice made Ice Cube jump. She looked around, cautiously standing up and keeping an eye out for anything...suspicious.

It spoke again.

"HELLO?! WHO'S OUTSIDE???"

"Is that HER?! YOU BETTER LET US OUT OF HERE!"

Ice Cube turned, and was shocked to realize that the voices...

Were coming from the TLC.

She pressed her foot against the cold, slippery wall, as she gently kicked it.

"Uh...hello?" Her frail voice echoed.

"WHO ARE YOU???" The voice was loud enough to nearly blow her ear drums out, but, she shook it off.

"Oh..uh...I'm Ice Cube..." she said out loud.

"I'm just looking for...uh..."

Should she even say what she was planning to do?

Well, the object who was speaking to her didn't mind.

"OH! WHAT ARE YOU LOOKING FOR?"

"...a bug."

"WHY?"

Ice Cube paused.

"...for..research.."

"WHOA!" The voice gasped, in awe at the small figure.

"YOU MUST BE REALLY SMART, LIKE A SCIENTIST!"

A small blush glowed on Ice Cube's cheeks, as she shyly shook her head.

"O-Oh no, the scientists are back in the city...I'm just..a plain old nobody." She laughed awkwardly.

"NO? I BET YOU'RE REALLY SMART! AND WHO CARES IF YOU'RE A LOSER! YOU'RE STILL YOU!"

"Really...?" Ice Cube felt a giggle bubble up in her throat.

"OH DEFINITELY! YOU SOUND VERY NICE AND SWEET, AND YOU SOUND LIKE YOU HAVE A BIG HEART!"

Ice Cube smiled, as she leaned against the metal walls that kept the two separated.

"Do I...?"

"OF COURSE! EVERYONE HAS A HEART, EVEN YOU! THATS WHAT MAKES YOU FEEL THINGS!"

"Oh..." Ice Cube looked to her side.

"Well...I don't really feel much..I don't think I'm allowed to-"

"WHY?!" The voice gasped in shock. Ice Cube shrugged, as she stared at the metal wall.

"WELL...YOU SHOULD FEEL! YOU CAN'T LET ANYONE TELL YOU OTHERWISE! IT'S YOUR'S AND ONLY YOUR'S; AND YOU NEED TO

FOLLOW IT! FOLLOW YOUR HEART!"

Ice Cube felt a smile slowly stretch across her face, as she giggled quietly.

"Well...I'll try to."

"GOOD!"

Silence. Just for a moment, until...

"OH! WHAT'S YOUR NAME AGAIN?"

"Ice Cube...how about you?"

"BRACELETY!"

"I found another one!" Gelatin raised the squirming insect in his hands. Ruby looked up from the paper in her hands, and nodded.

"Finally! Let's get out of here..." She quickly folded the paper, and slipped it back into Book. She kept her balance with the help of a tree, holding her head dizzily.

"Oh..uh..." Ice Cube stood up, shaking the water off of her. She looked back towards the chamber, smiling a bit.

"I have to go now...but, maybe I can come back tomorrow..?"

"THATS OK! I'LL BE HERE IF YOU NEED ME ICY!!"

Ice Cube giggled, as she said her goodbyes and caught up with the group. Ruby nodded towards her, before she looked towards the buckets in Gelatin's hands.

"Okay, now try to be careful...we can't let them loose, otherwise-"

"Oh, calm down you mineral." Gelatin snickered, swaying the buckets back and fourth.

"I totally got this."

"FRIES!"

"PUFFBALL?!"

Fries stumbled back in shock, as he saw the ball of fluff floating towards his direction. She happily collided with him, snuggling as close as he could to his body. He simply stayed quiet; he honestly didn't know how to respond to the situation.

Puffball snuggled closer to him, a rainbow aura surrounding her.

"I missed you so much!" Her melodic voice rang through the air. Fries patted her head, before gently pushing her off of him, separating the two.

"How did you..get out?" Fries asked. Puffball grinned nervously, and began to laugh.

"Um...well, you see...I-"

"Puffy!"

Coiny walked towards the two, as he rubbed the sleepiness out of his eyes.
Puffball's eyes darkened as she turned around, puffing up angrily.

"DON'T call me Puffy!"

Coiny rolled his eyes, as he looked towards Fries.

"Did you help her out?"

"What? No! I don't even know how she got here in the first place!" Fries shook his head nervously. Coiny snickered, as he looked back at

Puffball, who floated besides him.

"So hotshot, how did you do it?"

Puffball sighed, as she looked back towards the woods, regret suddenly pressing onto her.

"Well...while trying to figure out how to escape, Saw made a hole..." she looked back at the two.

"It was big enough for me to shrink, and squeeze through, but I kinda feel bad..."

"Kind of?" Coiny raised his eyebrow.

"Okay..a little."

Coiny facepalmed, while Fries let out an exasperated sigh.

"Okay, Well, let's go inside, shall we? I only came outside to get something from the garden." Fries shook his umbrella. Coiny nodded in agreement.

"I had to talk to you, Pin's back at the house sleeping. We...uh.." he laughed nervously, a small blush creeping onto his face.

"We had a moment."

"Well, FINALLY, you two are together. I thought you'd never notice." Puffball teased him, as Coiny crossed his arms, a blush burning his face.

"Alright, Alright, just get in." Fries muttered, as he held the door open. The two headed inside, while Fries carefully shut his umbrella, trying to keep his single fry protected from the water. He shook the water off of it, before shutting the door behind him.

"Is he gone?"

"I think so!"

"Okay, quickly, knock on the door!"

Gelatin carefully placed the two buckets down, before he knocked on the door. A few minutes passed after the knock, and he turned around to look back towards the group. He gave them a shrug, and Ruby waved towards him, as if she were telling him to try again.

He knocked once more, and once again, there was no response. He turned around.

"I don't think she's home!" He called out towards the group. They looked at each other, before Ruby began to look around.

If she were to go anywhere, she'd be at...

"Over there!" She pointed towards the house beside a small garden, a yellow glow coming from the windows. A silohuette was seen dashing back and fourth, a silohuette that nearly looked like...

Wait...

"FRIES, NO!"

Gelatin snatched the buckets up, as he began to sprint towards the house. Panic pumped through his veins, as he began to imagine what that monster could be doing to him. Tears stung his eyes, as he finally made it to the house, and kicked the door open. He uncovered the buckets, and looked up, a panicked expression painted clearly on his face.

"DON'T WORRY FRIES, I'LL SAVE YOU!"

"WHAT- GELATIN?!"

"NO!"

All hell broke loose.

The bugs suddenly darted out, a dangerous glow coming from their eyes. They raised their poisoned-arrows, as they crawled over to the objects nearest to them.

Puffball shrieked, as she quickly flew up from the ground. This sent her colliding with the ceiling, as she suddenly fell down, dizzy and disoriented from the sudden hit. One of the bugs quickly scuttled over towards her, raising its venomous arrows in the air. But before it could jab it's arrow into the object.

SMASH.

Fries held the shovel down, twisting and turning it as the hisses and crunches of the bug died down. He lifted it up; looking at the twitching legs that stuck onto the back of it, as well as a luminescent green slime sticking and dripping from the shovel as well.

Fries looked up at Gelatin, a death glare gleaming in his eyes. Gelatin simply stared in disbelief; he couldn't move, he couldn't think;

Because he saw one of the bugs, crawling over Fries's Fry..

It's arrow, poised into the air.

"FRIES!"

Clever, aren't they.

Trying to poison us, with those measly little creatures?

Pathetic.

Pin peeked from the window, carefully lifting up the shade that covered it. She watched as the Freesmarter's scrambled off; hearing screams of fear erupt from Fries's house. She slowly stood up, and winced at a sudden numbness that hit her legs.

What's your plan, Pinhead?

"I'm...not sure." Pin mumbled wearily.

"I'm still..feeling a bit weird..."

After...that? Seriously?

"Shut up. I just want to rest..."

So? Do something! It's time to put an end to all of these suspicions once and for all.

"But...how? If I do something to him, that makes me more guilty...

Grab some petals. Make some food.

Bring dinner over, and act. What happened here? Are you guys okay?

After everyone has settled down, lace ***his*** *food.*

Uh oh! What's this? BUG poison? Why, it must've gotten on his food!

"That doesn't make sense."

Pin, we must do something. Otherwise, WE'LL be on the chopping block.

"Can we Just do that instead...I'm-"

PIN. PAY ATTENTION.

WE MUST DO SOMETHING TO STOP THEM FROM ACCUSING US.

HOW Are we going to DO THIS.

"Listen, let's just check out what's going on..if I can even go over-"

"AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!"

The scream echoed through the house, as Pin felt her heart drop.

Coiny...?

ICELETY? IN M Y FANFIC? ITS MORE LIKELY THAN YOU THINK

DONT WORRY! It'll come into play as we get....further into the story. (:

ANYWAYS HELLO! THIS IS PART 30!!! OF THIS GOSH DARN BOOK

I'M HONESTLY SHOOK??? LIKE I GET SO MANY NICE COMMENTS SND KAKXJDJDJD

Thank you guys for sticking around for 30 PARTS of this story.

Im...not sure how I'll celebrate this achievement, but....I'll think of SOMETHING, I promise.

Im ALSO gonna start a new bfb story, Supernova! It'll be out sometime this week, and honestly. I hope it'll be good (DONT WORRY, THIS STORY IS FAR FROM OVER)

ANYWAYS! Follow your heart, lesbians, bugs, they're screwed, Freesmart has messed up: the sequel, blah blah blah

The bich.....is BACK in town (aka: puffball)

I was honestly gonna let Fries kill that bug with a chancla but I'm like.....would he even have one.....

Anyways, have a good evening everyone! Love you all, hope good things happen to you, aaaaaaaa

~ice

Basil Leaves

"GET IT OFF, GET IT OFF!" Coiny frantically ran around the room, his right arm flailing around everywhere. The bug was on his arm, trying to pierce it's arrow through his skin, as well as trying to hold on. But it continued to miss, with the rapid movements of his arms.

Fries ran after him, still wielding the shovel in his hands. He swung it hard, and missed, hitting the wall. It created a number of small cracks against it, ruining the tan-colored wall in the room. This made him growl in frustration, as he quickly followed Coiny, his patience and energy decreasing massively.

"STOP MOVING!" Fries yelled out, waving the shovel in the air. Coiny shook his head, shaking his arm more violently than before. The bug held on tighter; it's arrow now waiving in the air.

As the chaos unfolded before him, Gelatin hid under the small coffee table by the sofa. His eyes were stinging with tears of regret, as he hugged his knees close. If that bug fell on the floor, it would go directly towards him, since he was the closest and easiest target; and he knew it.

But he didn't care.

This was his fault.

Suddenly, the door busted open, as a strike of lightning ripped through the sky. The three whirled their heads around, and saw a silouhette in the doorway, it's hand clutching a knife. The shadow poised the knife up into the air, before they chucked it towards Coiny's direction angrily. Coiny screamed out in fear, and quickly shut his eyes, preparing for the worst, expecting to feel a knife puncture through his head, and lead him to death.

That is...until he heard a large thunk, soon followed by hissing from

his side. He slowly opened one eye, as he quickly looked around.

The room...was still dark. Nothing bright, or cloudy, or...

He quickly bit his cheek, and yelped.

Nope. Not dead.

He looked beside him, and saw the bug, twitching and jolting against the wall. The knife pinned it down, the organs and blood of the insect slowly drooling down the wall, and staining the carpet below it. Coiny winced, before he turned back towards the doorway, trying to see who the object was.

Pin let out a soft sigh, trying to contain her frustration, as she slowly made her way towards the three, her arms crossed.

"What were you guys thinking, Running around like that?!" She scowled, as she slammed the door shut. She was soaking wet; her cheeks flushed, and her eyes sunken and dark. Coiny quickly rushed over towards her side, as Fries rubbed his temples, tossing the shovel to the side angrily.

"Why don't we ask our friend Gelatin here, huh?!" Fries snapped, as Pin turned her head towards the green jello, his eyes widened as he trembled underneath the table he hid under.

"Well?! We're waiting!"

"I-I....uh..." he stuttered, as his eyes began to dart around the room. He tried to create a clever excuse to charm the three from blaming him, but his mind was blank.

Meanwhile, Pin was tapping her foot, awaiting the response from the object. Her eyes were filled with anger, as she slowly balled her hands into fists. Coiny noticed this, and gently placed a arm on her hand, rubbing her knuckle gently. She flinched, but quickly relaxed, her hands releasing from the fists.

"Well...I...thought the murderer..was in here..so I, uh...threw some bugs-"

"Throwing bugs, at a murderer, in a HOUSE?" Fries raised his eyebrow. Gelatin looked down glumly, and let out a defeated sigh.

"Okay, okay. I...we, planned to release the bugs into Pin's house, but I saw someone running around in here, and I..panicked...thinking that Pin..was in here.."

By this point, Pin was furious. Her cheeks were burning, as her hands quickly balled up into fists once more. Her body was trembling, as she took a deep breath.

"So, you too now, huh." She gritted through her teeth, stepping forward. Gelatin quickly cowered back, trying to shield himself from the taller figure.

"No! No please, th-theres Just...there's just so much evidence to 'Pin' you to the murder! G-Get it?" He laughed out nervously.

Coiny stepped back, his eyes widened in disbelief. This..wasn't going to end well...

Pin simply stood in front of him, her eyes now fixated on the ground. Her arms were trembling, as she suddenly scrunched her eyes shut, her breaths becoming more heavy.

Act, Pin. You got this.

Pin suddenly collapsed onto her knees digging her face into her hands. She let her eyes create fake tears, as she let her body tremble even more than it did before.

"Why...." her words were muffled, as she shook her head.

"Why am I being blamed for this...?" She began to cry, as she felt a pair of hands rub her back comfortingly. This made her cry even harder, as she whirled around and wrapped her arms around the object. She cried into their shoulder in defeat, screaming out words like, "Please stop", or, "Just kill me, please just kill me.". This made a wave of sympathy crash against Gelatin, as his body released all of the tensity it had.

Did Pencil...lie?

Coiny shook his head, as he looked at Gelatin, his eyes filled with disapproval.

"Who told you that. And why." Coiny uttered angrily. Gelatin flinched at the sharpness of his tone, as he looked away.

"P-Pencil."

A heavy silence hung inside the room, before Coiny spoke.

"That's IT. I'm going to talk to her, she has to stop." Coiny stood up. Pin recoiled, her hands still covering her face as she let out hushed sniffles and cries. Gelatin shook his head.

"D-Don't tel her! Please! Sh-She'll-"

"She'll WHAT." Fries loomed over him, a glare of fury shining in his eyes. Gelatin squeezes his eyes shut, as he hugged himself.

"She'll KILL me!"

This made everyone pause. Pin slowly lifted her head from her hands, her cheeks wet with tears. Coiny stepped back, his eyes widened in shock.

"So...she's the one, huh..." Fries sighed out, cracking his knuckles. Gelatin shook his head.

"No! No she isn't! She-"

"You were planning to MURDER me!" Pin cried out, pointing to him. Gelatin shook his head.

"No! She was planning to murder YOU!" He suddenly began to cry, as he looked around the three.

"She thinks PIN is the murderer! She wants her DEAD! Don't hurt me, please don't hurt me! Please!"

The three looked at each other, shock and concern painted all over their faces. He must have been telling the truth...

There's no way he could've been faking that reaction.

The silence hung over them once more, until...

"Can we...talk about this...peacefully." Pin uttered, wiping her eyes.

"This is too much...we can just bring everything to a subtle close, and we can try to figure this out together."

Gelatin looked at Pin, his head spinning with confusion. He was scared; he didn't want them to tell Pencil, or the alliance,

But she could be faking it. She could be faking everything, and maybe they'll be dead, maybe he'll get hurt, or...or...

He suddenly felt a hand on his shoulder.

"I think we'd appreciate that." Fries looked down at him, and gave him a sympathetic smile. Gelatin sighed, and patted his hand gently. A small smile curled up Pin's face, before she looked back at Coiny.

"I'm gonna cook some dinner, okay? You try to help Fries around here..." She whispered. Coiny nodded, as he lowered down to her level and gave her a small kiss. This made her giggle, as he run his hand over his cheek.

"How are you feeling...?" He whispered.

"Oh...uh.." She giggles a bit.

"J-Just feeling a bit funny, but I'm okay..."

Coiny smiled, as he squeezed her shoulder gently. A warm feeling bloomed in Pin's chest, as she slowly got up from the floor. Gelatin did the same, as he looked back towards the middle of the room, his eyes soon landing on the ball of fluff that was slowly hovering over the ground.

"Uhh..." she moaned out sleepily, as she managed to float up. She shook her head, as she let her eyes slowly flutter open. Fries rushed over to her, and gently held her cheek.

"You..doing okay?" He asked, concern rising in his voice. Puffball nodded, wincing at the sudden pats. Fries raised an eyebrow, as he gently took Puffball down from the air, and placed her onto the sofa by her.

"Okay, I'll get you an ice pack, alright? You relax." He then walked off towards the kitchen, while Gelatin sat down beside her, fiddling with his hands. His eyes continued to wander around the room, not sure of what he should do now...

He couldn't let Freesmart know. He was just...

wait.

Gelatin looked back at the ground, soon finding the crunched corpses of the bugs. Their arrows would've been laying there, squished and destroyed...

Right?

-

"Hey, Fries, I'm gonna go to my house for a bit, I need some more ingredients! Since YOU don't have enough of the ones I need..." Pin tutted, as she held a large, wooden spoon in her hand. Fries rolled his eyes, as he shouted back towards her.

"Go ahead, I'll keep an eye on the dinner!"

Pin nodded, as she began to walk towards the doorway, her heart beginning to pound harshly in her chest.

Notice me.

C'mon, notice me.

Coiny looked back towards her, and raised his eyebrow curiously.

"You're gonna go alone?" He asked.

Perfect.

Pin nodded in response, as she peeked outside of the window.

"Its not raining as much as it was before, so...I'll be fine."

She put the spoon down, as she put her hand on the doorknob, twisting it gently. As the door began to creak open, a cool breeze quickly permeating through the hallway. She shuddered, as she began to walk out, small droplets of rain splashing on her forehead. She clenched the spoon tightly, as she began to walk away from the house, slowly counting downwards with each step she took.

Ten...

Nine...

Eight...

Seven...

Six...

She suddenly heard a door slamming shut behind her, and soon, quick and gentle footsteps quickly made their way towards her. She looked down, and was shocked to see Gelatin walking beside her, an umbrella clenched tightly in his hands. He looked back up, a apprehensive look sprawled on his face.

"They...told me to come with you." He mumbled awkwardly, soon turning away from her once more.

"They didn't want you going alone."

Then why didn't Coiny come along? Or Puffball?

Whatever.

The two continued to walk through the rain, a silence stinging at

them. Pin looked down at her wrist, and was shocked to see that it was nearly healed. A bit swollen, but the bruises were completely...gone.

"He really cares about you."

The sudden words made Pin jump, as she looked back towards Gelatin, confused as to what he meant.

"What?"

"Fries." He looked ahead, his eyes filling with a calming feeling that made her feel...safe.

"He really cares about you. So does Coiny, obviously...but Fries? Pssh, he'd constantly worry about you, especially after the little fight you had with Book." He sighed out.

Pin smiled. She had always seen Fries as a brotherly figure, and this made her feel..

"We're here." He pointed towards the small house, and Pin nodded. She slowly walked up the steps that led towards the front door, and as she fumbled around with the doorknob, and after she managed to open the door, it came back.

Do you have them.

'Wha-'

Do. You. Have. Them.

Pin clenched her fist a bit, and soon felt the slimy texture of the arrows. She slowly nodded.

Good.

As the two walked into the house, Pin flicked on the lights. Gelatin slowly closed his umbrella, as he shook the rainwater off of it. Pin turned towards him, shaking off the excess water she had on her limbs.

"You can just hang tight here; I'm gonna go get what I need in the kitchen." She instructed. Gelatin nodded, as she turned around and walked towards the kitchen.

Gelatin sat down quietly, as he looked around slowly. Pin's house was neat and clean, photo frames hanging proudly on the wall. Houseplants bloomed around the corners of the house, as small succulents rested on the windowsills of a few windows. His eyes then trailed off towards a small bag in the corner of the room.

The bag was bruised up; tatters and rips covering each side of the bag, as well as a dark substance that stained the entire bottom of it. This made his head tilt in confusion.

What was that?

He got up, and he began to walk over, until...

"Gelatin, could you come here for a sec?"

Gelatin huffed, and he hesitantly walked towards the other direction, leaving the bag behind.

As he walked closer towards the kitchen, he began to hear...

Mumbling..?

"No...yes...I do..."

What?

"These are new...no, not yet...no..."

He peeked in, and what he saw made him only more curious than before. Pin stood by the table, sprinkling...something..over a small bowl. He stepped inside.

"What's that?"

"AH- oh!" Pin jumped, before she turned towards him, a large grin on her face.

"I just need you to try this for me...I'm not sure if I added enough spices to it, but I don't want it to be *too* overpowering, y'know...?"

Gelatin crossed his arms, as he stared down at the bowl. The liquid inside of it was a light purple, as small flakes floated over the top, the flakes having a light, green shade on them. He pointed towards the small flakes, and looked up at Pin.

"What is that?" He asked, his tone beginning to change. Pin's face brightened, as she lifted a small container of the similar types of leaves.

"They're just basil leaves I added in! It's a new recipe I'm working on..." She smiled kindly towards him. This intrigued him; he wasn't sure if she was telling the truth...everything Pencil had said about her could have been true, and maybe she'd...

"No, It's not poisoned"

Gelatin looked at her, a shocked expression on his face. How did she...

"I know what your thinking...and I understand. But I just need you to make sure this is okay for everyone, I don't want to kill their taste buds..." Pin laughed, putting a hand on her head. Gelatin laughed uneasily, as he took the bowl from the table, taking a slow, and deep breath.

'You'll be fine.' He thought to himself.

After a moment, he took sip from the bowl, bits of basil slowly getting into his mouth. As he swallowed, his eyes opened in awe.

This soup...

It tasted..

"Amazing, right?" Pin grinned.

"It's my very own yoyle-vegetable soup! I made a small batch here to see what I could add, and what I couldn't."

Gelatin continued to devour the soup, making sure not to waste a single drop of that heavenly dish. Pin clapped her hands, as she held up a small container filled with the spices she used.

"Alright, lets head back!"

Gelatin nodded, as he placed the bowl back onto the counter. He couldn't wait to have more; each drop of soup was the closest experience to heaven he could ever...

Well...

Experience!

He continued to walk towards the door, as he turned back towards Pin, smiling.

"You're great at cooking, Pin!" He complimented. Pin gushed a bit, turning her head from the smaller figure.

"Oh, stop it..."

"But it's true! You're so good at cooking!"

He continued to compliment more, his compliments growing more and more sweeter and kinder...

Until he couldn't say another word.

His throat closed up; his mouth agape, as he held his throat. He let out a few choked wheezes, until he looked up at Pin, fear gleaming in his eyes. Pin simply stared back, her face contorted into a horrified stare. He looked up...

And the arrow of a bug, was stabbed into his head.

He shook his head, as he suddenly saw Pin with an arrow stabbed into her side, his vision soon fading in and out. Panic overwhelmed him, as he suddenly collapsed onto the ground, his airways now completely swollen shut. Tears stung at his eyes as he could feel his face turning into a shade of blue.

"N-No-" He gasped out.

It couldn't be.

Those bugs were DEAD. They weren't even in the HOUSE.

He couldn't think about that now..

Blood began to pour down his chin, as he held his throat tightly. He could no longer see anything clearly; all he saw was Pin collapsing onto the ground, and then...

light.

He couldn't move; he couldn't feel, he couldn't breathe...

"Gelatin! Dude, it's been so long...but..." The voice paused.

"You're..d.."

Firey...?

Oh he dead

hello everyone, I'm back and I am just. sleeby

this chapter was kind a toughie, but otherwise I hope you enjoy it! a lot happens, and if it seems confusing...

don't worry.

pin will reveal everything.

if...she can.

also, supernova is out! go read it (if you'd like.....its ok if you don't sakjshdg)

anyways my dudes, I hope you enjoy this next part! thanks for reading...

EDIT: I know Gelatin is immune to bug poison, just look closely; he was poisoned by somethin else....

~Ice

Lying Heartbeats

Beep...

Beep...

Gelatin's eyes slowly fluttered open, as he softly patted the white sheets that were laid on him. Each breath he took was agonizing; it felt like his lungs were being filled with fire.

But...

He looked down.

His hands...Why couldn't he...

He raised his trembling arms towards him, and felt his heart and veins go cold.

His hands were gone.

How. How. HOW.

Panic began to bubble up in his chest. His arms itched, and felt rather stiff. He looked down, and noticed the IV tubes that snaked up towards a few IV bags that hung beside him. Hot tears began to sting at his eyes as he stared at the bandages that wrapped the numbs of his arms, and as his trembling began to increase, he felt the needle and tape shift and scratch at him.

He looked around, trying to let his eyes adjust to lighting of the room he was in. His memory was a blur; all he could remember...

Was the bug arrow.

Pin falling.

That soup...

As he continued to look around, the door swung open with two objects (well...Fries and Tennis Ball) rushing inside of the room. Fries quickly ran towards the side of his bed, his face pale with beads of sweat dripping down the side. As Gelatin slowly moved his head to face him, Fries let out a trembling sigh.

"You're awake..." he mumbled. Gelatin's vision blacked out for a moment, before he sat up in his bed, a tear slowly trailing down his cheek. He held up his han- well...a nub; and with a breaking voice, he mumbled..

"My hands..."

A look of sympathy suddenly painted over Fries face. He gently pat his back, as he whispered an apology towards the small figure.

Gelatin then threw himself onto Fries, wrapping his arms around him. Fries carefully hugged back, as he heard Gelatin repeatedly mumble,

"I'm okay..."

"What happened back there..." Fries uttered, his voice scratchy and oddly quiet. Gelatin let go, as he looked over at Tennis Ball, who was currently looking at some of the notes he had.

"Well, from what I found, he had eaten some kind of dieffenbachia leaves...his airways were swollen and clogged up, and he was..dead..for a good five minutes. But I managed to bring him back, and..." he looked down towards his arms, sighing.

"...I did my best to try...and bandage that up as best as I could."

"Where's Pin." Gelatin replied coldly, not caring about what happened to him. Tennis Ball looked up, putting the notes back down onto the floor.

"She's in a separate room. She's being treated because she was injected with bug poison..." he sighed out.

"She was found unconscious by the time we found you. A bugs arrow was stabbed into her as well...and her hands were nearly in the same state; the *murderer* must have gotten to her, and when they heard Fries coming..." he stopped speaking, staring away from the two.

"But how? For starters, There were only two bugs, and I managed to kill them!" Fries acknowledged, cracking his knuckles. Tennis Ball flinched, as he looked back up.

"W-Well, yes, but as I inspected the two...I found these stabbed into them." He turned towards a small cooler, and took off the cover. He raised up a small plastic bag, with a taped label over it.

There were the two arrows; crumpled and bent. A green liquid was clumped around one arrow, and the other had a few clots of blood frozen onto it.

Fries eyebrows furrowed together, as he walked towards him.

"Those bugs were in my *house*. I killed them with my own *shovel*. How the *hell* did that get into Pin's house?!" He uttered lowly. Tennis Ball shrugged.

"Someone must have taken the remains, or...there could have been two more bugs by her area. They could have scuttled away after..." he paused. What really happened down there...?

"But I'm...immune to bug poison..." Gelatin coughed out, wincing at the strange feeling of needles in his arms. This caught Tennis Ball's attention.

"You, were poisoned by the plant. Pin, was poisoned by the bug. This is all over the place, I'm not sure if it's an accident.."

"Or a frame." Fries muttered.

Gelatin coughed a bit, wincing from the sharp pain that erupted from his throat. Fries looked around, before he turned back towards Tennis Ball.

"Where's your little friend?"

Tennis Ball looked up, raising his eyebrow in confusion.

"What?"

"Where's Golfball?"

"Oh." Tennis Ball placed the bag back into the cooler, before shutting it, a small thunk erupting from the close.

"She hasn't been feeling well. She's resting, and I'm taking care of all of this for her."

"Really?" Fries rolled his eyes, laughing under his breath.

"Never knew she had a breaking point...for a bossy bot."

"Stop." Tennis Ball shot him a look, as he grabbed his notes from the ground and made his way towards the doors.

"I'm going to go check up on Pin. If she's awake, I'll ask her what happened. *Hopefully* she has some sort of answer for us.." he explained. Fries nodded, and watched as he left the room, the door shutting behind him quietly.

The heart monitor continued to let out occasional beeps, as Fries looked back down at Gelatin. His face was exhausted; darkened eyes and pale cheeks added onto the feeling. Gelatin looked up at him, and his eyes began to shine with tears.

"Fries...?" He whimpered out. He felt embarrassment flood over him, but..

"Yeah?" Fries responded. Gelatin clenched the sheets below him, struggling to not break down in front of Fries. He didn't want to cry, he didn't want to make a scene. But he couldn't help it; the more he thought about it, the more it rugged at his heart.

Fries waited patiently for his response, watching him struggle to speak out the words to say. He didn't mind;

He was his friend.

But what he said next, made chills crawl up his spine.

"I saw Firey..."

I'm coming for you.

Pin jumped at the sudden words, feeling goosebumps rise from her body. Her heart pounded in her chest, as ooze was dripping down her forehead. As she reached up to wipe some of it off, she noticed the IV that was stuck into her arm.

A smile crept onto her face.

It worked.

Now, we j*ust gotta act.*

She felt the bandages that were wrapped around her waist and wrists, and gently patted the spot where a faint red blotch was seen.

The *arrow* that was stuck in her.

She laid back down, as she let her mind adjust and recollect the memories of what had taken place earlier.

Before calling Gelatin over, she had squeezed out the poison of the arrows, and watched as the green, luminescent liquid slowly sloshed down her kitchen drain.

She didn't squeeze most of it out though.

A small amount won't do harm; only knock you out for a couple of hours.

You can be saved.

She then took out two small jars. One, contained the basil leaves she had used for the soup, to add more flavor.

And in the other, were a variety of toxic plants that she had managed to collect.

She went for the one that looked mostly like the basil; or any kind of spice for that matter. But, she went with the dieffenbachia leaves; leaves that could cause the swelling and closing of the airways inside of one.

And after the small 'incident'...

His hands are mine.

Hidden, tucked away...they're finally mine...

Footsteps suddenly began to rise from the halls, as Pin carefully laid back into bed. She let her eyes close, as she pretended to fall into a deep slumber.

"Pin?"

Quiet.

"You...awake yet?"

"Hmmm." She grunted. Tennis Ball walked towards her side, as he looked at her heart monitor.

"Hmm...your heartbeat is abnormally slow..." he mumbled, as he began to scribble down some notes. Pin smirked.

"Can you...move?"

Pin slowly uncovered herself, wincing at the pain that rose from not only her waist...

But her swollen, bandaged wrists as well.

Tennis Ball nodded, as he continued to write.

"Where's Coiny...?" She whimpered out, in the most pathetic, scared

voice she could create. Tennis Ball looked up.

"He's on his way. Fries told him to watch Puffball, but he's not leaving you behind."

Pin let her eyes close, as a soft sigh bubbled up from her throat.

You love him...

I do.

"Do you remember...anything that happened?" Tennis Ball looked up at her.

Act.

Pin let her eyes well up with tear, as she began to rub her wrists. She stayed quiet for a moment, before she looked back up.

"I was...just about to bring Fries, Coiny and Puffball the ingredients for a soup, and I let Gelatin try some back at my house...but as we were leaving...I felt something stab me..and..."

Tennis Ball raised his foot, as if he were telling her to stop. She paused, letting a few salty tears roll down her cheeks.

"What did you put in the soup?"

"Some tomatoes...potatoes...uh.." she paused, 'remembering' what else she had added to the soup.

"And...basil? I think.."

"Are you sure there was nothing else?"

Pin nodded slowly, as Tennis Ball looked back down at his notes, his eyebrow raised in confusion.

"That's strange, because as I was working on Gelatin, I found out that he had been nearly *poisoned,* with dieffenbachia leaves." He acknowledged.

Pin froze.

How did he know?

No time to ask, Pin. Act.

"Dieffenbachia...? But how?" She asked innocently.

"Ingested. From what he told me, he had eaten some of your..."soup"...and then, he fell cold. Not only that, that...bug arrow, was stabbed into him, even though he's IMMUNE to bug poison. What is your say on that?" He replied coldly. Pin flinched, as she began to shake her head wildly.

"I-I didn't do anything, I swear.." she whispered. Tennis Ball raised an eyebrow.

"Really?" He asked.

"Yes! I swear!"

He sighed, as he walked towards her.

"Than what did he eat?"

Pin felt her blood turn cold; her mind was becoming more blank at the second, and her mouth was losing the words it could say.

"I-...I don't know, I...I didn't..."

Silence.

"I swear, I went to get BASIL! It was basil, the jar said basil, a-and I-"

"Enough." Tennis Ball sighed, as he put the notes down, looking at her.

"Just... I know that this may be a lot...so I'm gonna let this go for now. We'll return to this later; but right now, you need to rest. You aren't doing so well, and I have to make sure that the poison is out of your system."

"But...isn't *she* gonna help?" Pin pointed towards the empty spot besides Tennis Ball, and he looked down.

"Golfball? She's resting. *I'm* taking care of everything here."

Pin nodded, as she laid her head back down on the pillow. As she heard Tennis Ball's footsteps become more distant, Pin dug her fingernails into her palms.

Well, you've messed up. Now everyone is gonna be on your tail.

I just have to cover this up...

You forgot that he was immune to bug poison?

I didn't KNOW!

Well, look at where that is going to lead us Pin.

Her heart began to beat more quicker, as she began to break out into a cold sweat. This was a slip up- there was enough evidence that they could find...they were going to see that it was her.

What are you gonna do? Huh?

You can't sweep this under the carpet this time, hun. You have to think smart. Think...

Leafy.

"Leafy...?" Pin's voice broke, as her eyes began to rapidly search around the room, afraid that a unexpected...visitor would be there, staring at her.

Smiling.

Leafy.

"What...do you mean by that..?" She responded quietly.

Ugh. You're just as dumb as everyone else, aren't you?

Whatever.

Here's what I got.

"PIN!"

"Coiny!"

Coiny bursted into the room, and threw himself onto Pin, tears now pouring down his cheeks. Pin held him tightly, her arms trembling as the pain in her waist grew more sharp and unbearable.

Coiny let go, and cupped his hands around her cheeks, carefully lifting her face and inspecting it, checking if she was hurt anywhere else.

"Are you okay?! What happened..?!" Coiny choked out nervously. Pin sighed, as she put a hand on his, caressing it softly. Coiny leaned in, and let his lips interlock with hers. She stayed still for a moment, before she broke away from the kiss, her eyes becoming dim.

"Can you get Tennis Ball for me...?"

He nodded, as he quickly rushed out of the door. She waited, letting her cheeks droop and wrapping herself with the white sheets that were on her bed.

Are you ready?

I...

Remember, this is our only chance. You have to act.

And you have to act good.

Otherwise...

*We'll be on th*e chopping block..." she mumbled sleepily.

"What?"

Pin looked up, and saw Tennis Ball walk back into the room, Coiny following close behind. Pin shook her head, as she stared away from him, letting her eyes well up with tears.

"I remember everything."

"You do?"

She nodded pathetically.

"I..."

Silence.

"I..."

"Spit It out, will you?!"

The three jumped at the sudden voice. Golf Ball marched in, her eyes looking more...alive.

"GB, why aren't you-"

"Hush." Golfball placed her foot on his mouth, before she turned back towards Pin. Pin's lip began to tremble, as it came back.

So?

Tell them.

"It..."

Keep going...

"It was..."

Pin.

"IT WAS ALL *LEAFY."*

'STOP!'

"I saw her! I saw her sneak in!"

'WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!'

"Bugs! Bugs everywhere! They're gonna get me!"

'NONONONONONONONO NON-'

"*And then....dark.."*

*'*So...muc*h...dark..."*

We just had a breakdown in choir what's up 😎

Anyways I bring you: part 32.....
Gelatin hands are GONE

hands? SNATCHED

anyways I'm in rehearsal so I gotta leave wack

Enjoy!

~ice

Choices, Choices

A few days had gone by, yet...not much has happened since. The atmosphere was heavy, the houses that formerly belonged to those who are...gone, now sit in abandonment. Of course, this hasn't affected Pin at the slightest. She had dumped out the entire story, framing her good *friend* Leafy for all of the events that had taken place before. And with that, Golfball and Tennis Ball were able to find enough evidence to point down Leafy...

And the case was closed.

Pin was now in her garden, her mind trailing off into the darkest parts of her mind. Her feet dragged along the steaming dirt, that had represented the hell she had been going through. Her intoxicated eyes slowly wandered around, drinking in the brightly colored flowers that greeted her happily as she trudged by.

This...evoked nothing from her.

As she walked into a slightly dimmer patch of the garden, she let her fingers trace over the tattered fabric of her shoulder bag. Her fingers felt the heavy, so-called hands that once belonged to Gelatin, as well as Needle and Teardrop, and she slowly knelt down and began to work.

She had remembered getting Teardrop's hands; after Ruby and Book had left, and after the others saw what had become of her, she quickly swung by and cleanly sliced them off.

As for Needle, she was back in the lab. Keeping an eye on her timing, she watched as Tennis Ball and Golfball had rushed out to investigate what had happened to TD...before, Golfball snapped, of course. And with that, she was able to chop her hands off, and bring them along to the dance of the dead, located in her very own secret garden.

She dug up small holes into the patches of dirt, and carefully placed each hand in the damp soil, keeping it upright. The lifeless fingers dangled towards the ground, and Pin let her own fingers interlock with a few of the hands.

Flower's hands were the softest. She couldn't understand how she had such luscious hands, but it truly helped with the garden, giving each of the flowers a delicate texture that filled Pin with the feeling of peace.

As she began to finish digging up the final pair of hands, she began to notice that her wrists have begun to grow...darker. The cuts that were originally from 'Leafy', had grown more swollen and clotted. This brought a frown to Pin's face.

So. What's next Pin.
Your cue.

Pin looked up, dusting herself off from the tiniest pieces of evidence that have engraved into her soul. She looked around, before she rubbed her wrist, shrugging.

"Well...I'm not sure. We could work our way towards the Freesmarter's, but...that would only bring the attention back to me."

What about the duo?

"No. I'm not sure if I should even do anything to them. They've helped out tremendously, and...it doesn't seem right to-"

It doesn't seem right to KILL people and cut off their hands, but here you are.

Pin flinched at the cold response.

"Well-"

What about Gelatin? What are you going to do with him, huh?!

You were supposed to kill him off, and sure, you had managed to succeed in getting his hands, but he is still alive and well. Is that fair to Firey?

"But, he-"

IS IT FAIR TO ROCKY?
TO WOODY?
TO FLOWER, TO NEEDLE, TO INNOCENT TEARDROP.

IS.

THAT.

FAIR.

Pin felt a shiver trail down her spine, as she shook her head.

"I-I'm just saying, that maybe we could kill him off after-"

After what?
Killing..Fries, perhaps?

"NO." Pin shouted sternly, refusing to even succumb to the idea.

"He is my friend. I..I don't want to hurt him."

But you're going to have to eventually.

Pin froze.

"Wha...?"

Who was I KIDDING. Rule #11? You would have given up on it. No more sparing your childhood sweethearts, no more sparing you're deepest connections with your so-called "family"...

You're going to kill EVERYONE in the city.

Pin felt her heart drop, and shatter into many tainted shards as she felt her blood go cold. Her heart began to ache, as she began to shake her head in denial.

"I-I can't do that, I CAN'T!" She cried out, slowly plodding away from the dimly-lit hand garden.

Why not?

"I specifically made that rule to protect them from..me! They don't deserve to go through what THEY.." She pointed towards the hands. "...have gone through."

But haven't you thought of the resources the could bring?

Fries's strength could help bring resistance to the plants, helping them withstand the drastic weather changes Yoyle Land could experience.

Coiny's charm and compassion could bring the garden to its highest peak of life. It could be radiant and sparkling, and if one were to step into the patches, one would feel the LOVE in the air.

"SHUT UP." Pin gritted through her teeth.

It's your choice, however.

You can kill Freesmart,

You can kill the duo,

You can kill Gelatin,

Or, you can bend and break Rule #11...

The choice is yours Pin.

"B-But, I can't..." her voice began to fade away. The situation hung heavily off her chest, as she could feel panic setting inside of her.

"Please.."

That won't work this time, Pin.

If you can't choose, I will.

"No..No, no no PLEASE!"

Don't you remember how GREAT it felt to be the center of attention?

DON'T YOU REMEMBER THE ECTASY YOU FELT WHEN EVERYONE WAS WORRIED ABOUT YOU.

DON'T YOU REMEMBER HOW YOU CRAVED POWER.

DON'T YOU.

Pin flinched, her eyes now letting droplets of tears trail down her stained cheeks. She began to revisit the countless situations she had gone through throughout the past few months, and she was so distracted by the pains of the deaths that...

You can embrace all of this power. You can enjoy being who you are.

Or I can. It's easy.

Tick-Tock.

-

"Pencil, do you need anything else?"

"No, I'll be okay. Trust me."

Pencil sat cross-legged on her bed, her hands wrapped around herself. Match sat beside her, trying to console her about the news she had received earlier, with Gelatin and Pin. The cold realization had hit her hard; she had made mad-dash to her room to try and escape the guilt that had begun to fog up the room.

"We...fucked up. We really did..." Pencil choked out, burying her face into her hands. Match held her close, rocking her gently as she shook her head.

"We were, like...scared, Pence-Pence, we didn't know what to think..." she whispered.

"But we...hurt Pin...and, I know I'm not fond of her, but..."

"Pence-Pence, the best thing that, like, we can do now, is apologize.

We've lost...so many others, and, like, we can't add on to the pain that we're already experiencing. I think the best thing we can do right now, is just apologize, and...let go."

Pencil lifted her face off of her hands, and looked up tearfully towards her. Match gave her a smile, and simply embraced her once more, making Pencil silently cry into her chest.

Match didn't mind; as long as she could let it out...

Fries carried a small plate of fries towards Gelatin, a sympathetic smile on his face. Gelatin sat emotionlessly on the sofa; his eyes foggy and unclear, and his entire body slouched and sulking.

"I brought you some..growtatoes..." Fries acknowledged, putting the plate down beside him. "Well, more like, fries made from growtatoes.."

Gelatin simply looked up at him, and then he looked down upon the warm, salty fries that were lightly sizzling in the dish. He mumbled something incoherent, and Fries leaned in closer to try and hear what he had said.

"I can't eat them." Gelatin repeated, a bit louder than before.

At first, Fries was startled; he had never imagined that Gelatin would deny the growtatoes, after begging and begging for months for the savory vegetable...

Until he realized that he couldn't pick one up. Fries cringed, and lifted the plate.

"Want me to..help.." he suggested awkwardly. Gelatin nodded, ever so slightly licking his lips. He had waited for ages to finally get his hands-

Well...
He had waited for ages to be able to try them, and now it was time.

Fries plucked a fry from the shining dish, and placed it into Gelatin's mouth. He quickly devoured the fry, and his eyes began to sparkle in awe at the fresh taste of it.

"Fries..." Gelatin mumbled, his voice beginning to grow. This made Fries's eyes widen; he hasn't spoken in such a joyful tone since...

"These fries are amazing! They're warm, and *not* over a year old!" A small smile began to grow on his face. Fries waved his hands towards him, flattered by the desserts kind words.

"It's nothing, really...figured it might've helped you feel a bit better than before.." he patted his head, before giving him a few more fries. Gelatin happily obliged; he ate each one, enjoying the savory taste of the growtatoes. Wasn't there supposed to be side effects..? Whatever.

As Fries continued to give Gelatin his fries, Puffball floated into the living room, sleepily. Fries looked up, and a kind smile came across his face.

"Hey PB." He greeted. Puffball looked down, and smiled as she flew over to him, and cuddled up against him in a friendly manner.

"You doing ok?"

"Just a little bit tired, I guess..." her auto-tunes voice gave Gelatin goosebumps all across his arms. She turned herself towards him, a sudden sadness flashing through her jubilantly colored eyes.

"How are you feeling...?" She asked, quietly. Gelatin shrugged slightly, munching on the fry that Fries had given him.

"I'm still a bit down...but these fries are pretty good.." a worn-smile spread across his face. Puffball sighed, and hovered over to him, giving him a soft snuggle as well.

"PB, do you mind if you could check up on the garden for me today? I have to help this little guy out for the day." He nudged Gelatin, and this made him pout a bit.

"Well, Sure, what do you want me to do?"

"Just water most of the plants, and maybe..pluck off he fresh grotatoes? If you can..." he smiled nervously. Puffball thought for a moment, deciding whether she would listen to him...or not, before nodding, her face vacant.

"I have nothing better to do, so..."

Fries smiled, as he thanked her and continued to feed Gelatin. By this point, he had forgotten about his near-death experience, he had forgotten about Firey, about his pained lungs, about his missing hands....

All he can taste and think about, is how *wonderful* these fries are.

"This is gonna be fun." Puffball mumbled sarcastically, as she began to float around the garden. She admired the brightly-green plants that swirled and twisted around each other, and sprouted with pride into the air. A few lucky ones had potatoes weighing a few of them down, but the others, had tiny little lumps that would soon blossom into the mouth-watering food that nearly everyone would go crazy over.

She continued to fly around, before she floated down towards a corner, and grabbed a small, empty watering pail. She groaned.

She needed water.

She wasn't gonna go back inside; she didn't want to ask Fries for help, since he already has his hands full with the now-handless Gelatin, so...she simply didn't want to make things harder for him. He was her friend; and she wanted to redeem herself, after what...had happened before.

When she saw Golfball for the first time, it didn't go well. She had begun to scream at her; names, sentences, you name it. GB was baffled at the fact that she was now out and about; and she wasn't about to let her backstab anyone else. For all she knew, she could team up with the murderer, and try to kill as many of the contestants as they could.

This...*scared* GB.

She continued to yell at her, and if it wasn't for TB, who pulled her away, as well as Fries, who was yelling back at her...she could've started something.

'But whatever...' she thought to herself, as she began to float away towards the large body of water that was not too far from the city;

The Goiky Canal.

It wasn't that long of a flight, and soon, Puffball found herself along the shoreline of the canal.

The water was fresh; the small waves and ripples shining from the sunlight as they crashed into the water. Small fishes scattered and swum along with the current, heading downwards towards the ocean. Puffball smiled, as she carefully tipped the water pail over, listening to the quiet ripples as the water gently danced its way into the pail. It filled up rather quickly, and Puffball set it down along the shore.

She floated upwards. She never noticed the beauty of the canal; only visiting once, but that time was only to collect Yoyle Berries.

Her stomach growled.

Fuck.

She sighed, as she knew that she had to leave. She didn't want to make Fries worry about where she was, but...

She took a deep breath, as an aura of multiple colors began to surround her. She began to glow, as a small smile began to lift on her face. She let herself dance around, letting the wind swing her from side to side gracefully. Sparkles and glitter gently flew off of her, as

she began to him happily, embracing the sense of freedom that had suddenly hit her.

She...wasn't stuck in a secluded box anymore.

She was free.

Was she?

She let her eyes open, as she turned around, and faced the canal once again. She noticed how far it stretched out, to the deepest blue of the oceans far far away...

TRAITOR!

She flinched, as she shook her head.

BITCH!

Her heart began to pound in her chest. She couldn't...

DIRTY LIAR!

Stop.

Nonono.

She began to float back, trying to ignore the negativity and letting the positivity fill her up. She flew back, and did a small twirl in the air, taking a deep breath of the misty, sparkling sea mist.

NOW.

Suddenly, a knife plunged through her eye, a loud, sickening crunch echoing through the air of the canal. Her other eye widened, as she could no longer see...but she could feel a thick substance drooling down her face. Blood...as well as a odd, rainbow substance, began to squirt out of her eye, as small, incoherent words began to escape her lips.

"Wha...did I..do..?" She blubbered, a wheeze soon escaping out of her lips. More rainbow-covered blood began to ooze out of her eye, as

well as more rainbow-colored blood beginning to pour out of her mouth. She felt her fuzzy body collapse onto the shore, feeling the grains of sand slowly entangle into her. She twitched, as she began to feel her body turn cold, her eye slowly becoming more darker, and darker. She felt the water slowly move in towards her, but felt it recede back into the canal.

As she took her final pained breaths, she watched as a darkened silouhette came along, and stood over her, watching as she squirmed and withered on the ground. A smile grew on the figures face, as she went over and picked up the water pail, swinging it gently in her hands. As Puffball's vision began to darken out, the object spoke.

"Thanks for the water, Puffy....you never belonged here with us anyways."

Puffball hacked up more blood, as well as rainbows...before she felt her body run cold. Her quiet gasps suddenly silenced, and her eye was now dazed...and lifeless.

The only noise that kept the mist dancing, was the song of the waves, crashing onto the shore.

Hey, don't forget to check out supernova too...I'm digging both of the story lines for this and that, tbh

Enjoy

~ice

They Can't Hear

"SHE'S DEAD!"

Ice Cube frantically ran around the city, sliding by corners and dodging every building. Fear pounded harshly in her heart, as tears threatened to spill from her cold, timid eyes. The image of what she had seen haunted her in her mind, crawling up back as she continued to run. She didn't even know where she was running off to; she was in shock.

She continued to run, until she noticed the small, gleaming garden in the distance, standing proudly besides a few colored houses. She screamed once more, trying to grab the attention of anyone who could be in the area.
She...rarely visited here, ever since the 'incident.'
Oh well.

"SHE'S GONE, GONER THAN ANYTHING!"

"WHO?!" The door to one of the houses busted open, as Fries stepped out, quickly looking towards the garden, and the towards Ice Cube. His face dropped, as he saw Ice Cube's fearful expression, and before he could even ask...

"PUFFBALL IS DEAD!" Her voice broke out, as a tear slipped down her cheek. Fries shook his head;

No, no no no. She couldn't be dead. He literally sent her off to the garden! And here he was, standing by it himself. But no Puffball..

"SHE WAS JUST OUT HERE! SHE CAN'T..."

"Who can't, Fries?" Coiny walked over towards the two, raising an eyebrow at Fries's pale expression. "What's going on?"

"PUFFBALL!" Ice Cube And Fries screamed, as Ice Cube began to run back from where she came. Fries quickly followed, grabbing a trowel as a defense mechanism just...in case they stumbled across someone. Coiny jumped, before he began to follow, sprinting to catch up to the two.

"Hey, HEY WAIT UP! WHATS WRONG WITH HER?"

Soon, the three were sprinting out of the small area, leaving a weird silence to hang over the buildings.
Meanwhile, Gelatin stayed inside of Fries's house. He didn't even bother to go investigate the yelling about Puffball outside. He was tired, woozy, and a bit down from everything that had just went down; he didn't want to put any more weight onto him. He was eating; well, Fries was giving him some mashed growtatoes he had made for him. You know, to help some of the pain medication sit in. But after he had run out, he couldn't eat, the spoon taunting Gelatin from the bowl.

He decided to at least try. With his two..nubs, he reached out, and carefully squeezed the spoon between his arms. The sudden pain that rose from his stubs made him wince, but shakily raised the spoon towards his mouth. He was close; he could do it, he could do...

Clink.

The spoon suddenly collapsed onto the ground, the loud clink of the metal reverberating through the house. Bits of the mashed growtatoes had splattered around it, staining the floor and part of Gelatin's legs. He silently cursed himself, as he got down to pick it up.

He stared at his arms, and his eyes began to trace down towards his stubs. Tears began to fill in his eyes, as he wrapped his arms around his knees and began to cry. At first, it was just a few sniffles that danced through the silence of the house. But as time passed, ugly sobs and cries scratched through the air, causing some items to collapse from the sound. He had never felt this way in his lifetime; was there ever a time he would cry?

Hot tears streamed down his face as a migraine punched through his skull, making him wince. He simply hated it. He didn't want to be

alive, knowing that he should've ended up like the rest of them...

Handless, and dead.

He wiped his eyes, as he glanced over at a small clock that hung highly against the wall. It took him a moment for his vision to adjust after the small-session he had, but he then read...

"5:13..." he muttered to himself. Has it been ten minutes? Fifteen? Maybe even twenty..
Ah, who cares.

Gelatin slowly sat up, taking a long, deep breath in. He exhaled, as he began to stand back up.

BANG.

Suddenly, a burst of pain exploded on the back of his head, spreading and numbing through his veins. He felt his vision darken, as his thoughts began to freeze inside of his mind. He felt himself collapse to the floor, as he felt his mind screaming a small 'no, no, no..'

And then everything turned black.

"Oh my god..."

Fries's voice broke, as his limbs suddenly froze. The thoughts and possibilities of outcomes that had swirled and geared through Fries's mind has suddenly broke down and collapsed, as he saw the lifeless corpse in front of him. Ice Cube looked up at him, tears already pouring down her cheeks.

"I..was heading to the LOL, a-and...I found her.." she whispered, her frail voice not daring to get even louder than it was. Fries stumbled forward, before he fell onto his knees onto the warm grains of sand. His fingers traced over the soft, pink fuzz, as he carefully scooped Puffball into his arms. He didn't even notice the tears that made their way down his cheeks, but...

"Did you..see anyone, around here, around ANYWHERE, that could've done that." Coiny mumbled, looking towards Ice Cube. She shook her head fearfully.

"N-No! That's the thing! There was no one here when I walked by; she must've been there for hours.."

Coiny looked towards the lifeless corpse, before glancing back towards Puffball, his heart aching at her pained expression that was frozen onto her face.

"With that good of an aim, It has to be Leafy." He muttered angrily. Ice Cube looked up at him, disbelief shining in his eyes.

"Do you really think-"

"Yes. I do." Coiny whispered, not wanting Fries to hear the conversation. "Look at how the knife's in her head; that couldn't be from behind. There's only one object who has a good aim like that, and the strength to lodge it into her head..."

"This is all my fault."

The sudden sentence made Coiny and Ice Cube turn towards Fries, as he shakily rocked the corpse in his arms. His face was filled with an explosion of expressions; pain, anger, sorrow...

"I shouldn't have let her do it herself." His voice cracked out, as more tears poured down his cheeks. Coiny glanced down at Ice Cube, and gave her a worried look.

"Be...careful out there, ok? I'll stay here with him." He whispered. Ice Cube nodded, before she quickly ran off, her quick footsteps crunching the sand below her. Coiny walked over towards Fries, and shook his head.

"Fries, this isn't your fault...it's no one's fault.."

"It's my fault. I sent her out there alone. I sent her out there, knowing that there's a murderer out here. I sent her. I did." Fries sobbed out, holding Puffball close. "It should've been me. It should've been all me.."

Coiny felt tears sting at his eyes, as he watched Fries caress Puffball's face gently. Not only was it shocking to see her...but it was shocking to see Fries grieving, Hell, CRYING for the matter. He stood beside him, rubbing his back comfortingly as he let him cry.

"I-I didn't mean to-...I'm sorry, Puffball..." Fries cried out, a sob quickly following behind. He hugged the corpse; not giving a damn if any of that rainbow substance stained him. He sobbed silently, holding her soft, somehow warm body close to his. Coiny continued to rub his back, and after a few minutes of silent weeps and cries, he spoke.

"Fries, this wasn't your fault. I need you to understand that this..wasn't your fault." He whispered. Fries glared back at him, as more tears began to stream down his face.

"What do YOU know Coiny. You wouldn't understand ANY OF THIS." He snapped. Coiny sighed.

"You'd be shocked to know, but I do. I do know how it feels, Fries." He crossed his arms. "Don't you remember the first thing that took place in this coin-forsaken place? Don't you remember Firey's death? I know how you feel Fries because I'VE BEEN THERE TOO." Hot tears began to fill up at the back of his eyes, as he clenched his fists.

"DON'T you remember how we saw him?! DON'T you remember how distraught I was?! I blamed myself for his death for a ENTIRE WEEK. I had never liked him, I had never agreed with him, but there was something inside me that was telling me to go up there, get him out and apologize. There was SOMETHING that told me to go fix ties with him and enjoy what I could, but I IGNORED EVERY SIGN, EVERY WHISPER, AND DO YOU KNOW WHERE THAT FUCKING GOT ME?!" He gestured towards his surrounding, his arms standing out painfully. "THIS IS WHERE IT GOT ME FRIES. IT HAS BEEN MONTHS, AND I DON'T THINK I'LL EVER FORGIVE MYSELF FOR HIS DEATH. I COULDN'T EVEN SEND HIM A QUIET APOLOGY, NO, THE ONLY WAY I COULD GIVE HIM AN APOLOGY WAS TO FIND HIS DEAD BODY AND SOB BESIDE IT, AND HE COULD'NT EVEN HEAR IT! Y'KNOW WHY?! BECAUSE ITS TOO LATE FRIES. HE'S DEAD, SHE'S DEAD.." he pointed towards Puffball.

"AND NO MATTER HOW FUCKING LOUD YOU SCREAM, THEY CAN'T HEAR YOU. THEY WON'T HEAR YOU EVER AGAIN!"

A deathly silence hung over the two, as Coiny panted for air. Fries stared at him in disbelief; warm tears still slicking down his cheeks.

"No matter...how much you scream, or beg, or cry, nothing...can make them hear you." Coiny stared once more, before turning away. He didn't even notice the tears that were already coming down his face;

He missed him.

He still missed him.

Gelatin mumbled sleepily. His entire body felt unusually warm, feeling bits of his jello melt below him. Which was a bit..unusual.

Wasn't he inside?

As he opened his eyes, he flinched at the sudden sunlight that bursted through his vision. He squinted painfully, but quickly realized that..

That was the sun.

He was outside...

Then...where were the buildings..? The..

The roof.

As his eyes adjusted to the light, he heard a sudden voice that made his blood run cold.

"You're awake!"

Gelatin quickly tried to sit up, but suddenly felt the rope that squeezed his arms and legs together. His heart began to race, as he struggled to free himself from the tight- and rather itchy- ropes that held him down. As he did, Pin slowly paced by him, a wild grin plastered on her face. Gelatin froze.

It was her.

It was her all along.

"Oh, gosh, I forgot that you're just...4? 5? Ah, well, you see, these are called, 'ropes', little one, and they can be used for...pretty much anything!" Pin grinned. Gelatin gritted his teeth angrily, as he glared daggers towards her.

"You...you..."

"Murderer? Bitch? Dirty little liar..?" She leaned down towards his level. "I know, I know. You really want to shoot all of these colorful nicknames towards me, and, honestly, I wouldn't blame you. But, sometimes, you have to make even the largest sacrifices so that the end result will be...wonderful." She whispered. This sent chills down Gelatin's spine; what did she mean by that?

"Oh, but oh well, we can't leave the oddballs out. I was so surprised that you survived..." she frowned. "But then I realized that you were immune to BUG POISON, for starters."

"YOU MONSTER!" He screamed out. He began to thrash around frantically, no longer feeling anger, nor sadness..but fear. "YOU DISGUSTING MONSTER! HELP ME!"

Pin felt a laugh bubble up, as she watched the smaller figure struggling pathetically.

"You really think I'm gonna let you go? Do you even fathom how...RICH and VALUABLE your body could be for the garden? Or maybe.." she licked her lips. Gelatin's face suddenly lost its color, as he felt his heart pound harder and harder inside of his chest, to the point where it hurt him.

"Ah Well Gelatin. You had a good 5 years, right? Hopefully you can

go tie your legs with Firey once again..."

"No..no NO NO! NO PIN, PLEASE!" Gelatin began to yell. Was this because he didn't want to live without his hands?!

"FRIES! FRIES, HELP ME!" The words suddenly escaped in a sob. Pin's eyes widened, as she nearly stumbled back from shock. Never, in her existence...has she seen Gelatin act this way.

"PLEASE FRIES! HELP ME! I WANT FRIES HERE!" He begged.

Pin shook her head, as she began to drag him towards the edge of the roof. The wind danced through the air, as Gelatin continued to scream. No longer five, no longer a mature, joyful object, he was only a baby; a baby, who was defenseless, and needed his...

"FRIES! PLEASE, HELP ME!" He wailed out. He curled his knees closer to his body, as he shivered from the icy breeze that stung him harshly.

"FRIES!"

"Oh, SHUT IT WILL YOU?!" Pin yanked his head upwards, and held his face close to hers. "NO ONE CAN HEAR YOU. NO ONE!"

A chuckle escaped her lips, as she slowly turned his heads downwards. The tall, pointy fence stood proudly below them, and suddenly...

"So, you want all of those, don't you?" She pointed towards the growtatoes that sprouted from the green, twirling plants. He shook his head.

"P-Please Pin, please, I-I Just..." he took a shaky breath in, tears pouring down his cheeks. "I-I just want Fries.."

"Fries?" She perked up.

"Oh! Okay! Well, you'll have all the fries you want down there!"

With one massive swing, she hurled Gelatin over the side of the roof, watching him shrink to the field below. His scream of terror began to

fade away, as she gave him a dismissive wave.

"Bye, Gelatin!"

Suddenly, a loud, squish-like sound splattered through the air. A disgusting hack escaped from Gelatin's mouth, as he felt his limbs stiffen up. Pin peeked down, and quickly, she bursted into a giggling-fit.

The sticks of the fence plunged through Gelatin's chest, a green-like substance squirting down his face. Pained gasps and coughs erupted from his mouth, as he began to twitch. He gritted his teeth, as he opened his mouth..

"F...Fries...."

The twitching lasted for a moment, until....

Darkness.

PANIC!

"Hey, has anyone seen Ice Cube?" Pencil walked into the living room of the clubhouse, her arms crossed and her eyes filled with exhaustion. She looked towards the objects in the room, as each one exchanged glances towards each other. Ruby shook her head, as she sat up from the sofa.

"I think she went to the TLC? But I'm not sure..." she told Pencil. She raised her eyebrow.

"Why is she there?" She asked, a tone of disgust hinting out of her voice. Book looked up, a smile suddenly growing on her face.

"Oh, I think she went to talk with someone from the TLC. Ringy, was it?" She looked towards Ruby, who shook her head once again.

"Nono, I'm pretty sure the name was Bracelety! But, I could be wrong..."

"Well, whoever she is, she and Ice Cube are...really good friends. They met while we were finding the...bugs." Book smiled. Pencil rolled her eyes, as she sat herself on the sofa, sighing. Match let her head rest on her shoulder, her eyes closing a bit. Pencil put an arm around her girlfriend, before looking back towards the group.

"She better come back soon. I don't want her to fall into the hands of that...monster." She growled lowly. Bubble tilted her head a bit, confused as to what she had said.

"Oi...thought you didn't loike her Pencil..." she stared. "She was just an...alternate.."

Pencil sighed, as she looked towards Bubble, shrugging slightly. "She is...annoying, per say, but...I don't want to find her slaughtered on the road or something. Ice Cube doesn't deserve that."

"Agreed." The others nodded, as Pencil stared at the door, casually waiting for Ice Cube's return.

-

"I-I didn't even mean to go that way?! I just wanted to see if I could find a way to come here quicker, b-but-"

"ICEY.." Bracelety interrupted. Ice Cube looked up tearfully, anxiety circulating through her veins.

"What?"

"ITS OKAY.."

Ice Cube winced, as she shook her head in disagreement. "It's not, Bracelety.."

"WHY?"

"It's just not.."

"BUT IT WASN'T YOUR FAULT, YOU JUST HAVE TO-"

"Do what, Bracelety, smile? Laugh? Tell myself it'll be okay?" Ice Cube snapped.

"Someone was KILLED, BRACELETY! I CAN'T JUST SAY "OH, ITS ALL GOING TO BE OKAY, I CAN MAKE IT THROUGH!" NO! I CAN'T SAY THAT BECAUSE THERES SOMEONE COMING AFTER ALL OF US, AND THEY'RE GOING TO KILL US! I'M GOING TO DIE BRACELETY!" She laughed a bit. "HEH, AND I ALSO WON'T BE ABLE TO COME BACK! SO WHAT DO YOU SAY TO THAT, HUH?! SHOULD I JUST SMILE SWEETLY AND FROLIC THROUGH THE FLOWERS?!"

A heavy silence hung over her. She painted quietly, only for the realization that she had yelled to her friend..

"B-Bracelety, I-I- I'm so- I didn't mean-"

"It's okay."

The sudden change in her volume felt like a knife plunging deep into her chest. She stared back at the wall, a small tear making its way down her cheek.

"I...shouldn't have said that...I know it's scary, and I shouldn't have responded that way..."

"No..Bracelety, It was my fault, I-I was the one who-"

"No.." Bracelety's voice began to get quieter. "It's my fault..I'm sorry.."

Silence flooded the air around Ice Cube, as she let a few tears roll down her cheeks. A few sniffles came from inside of the Locker of Losers, and this made more tears pour down Ice Cube's face. She sniffed, and looked back towards the metal wall, blinking a bit.

"Bracelety?"

"Yes Icey?" Her voice became louder.

"...Do you think I'm gonna die? With all of these killings going on?"

"NO!" Ice Cube jumped from her sudden exclamation. "ICEY, PLEASE DON'T SAY THAT! THEY WON'T GET YOU, AND THEY WON'T GET AWAY WITH IT!"

"But they've gotten away with 7 objects.." Ice Cube mumbled pathetically.

"BUT THAT DOESN'T MEAN THEY'LL GET YOU. YOU WON'T BE KILLED ICEY, YOU'RE GOING TO BE OKAY."

Ice Cube looked around, before leaning in, letting her head rest on the cool metal.

"You think so..?" She whispered.

"I KNOW SO."

-

Golfball walked into the lab, rubbing her eyes sleepily. She had gotten a lot more sleep than she would usually get...or, give herself. But she felt better; 94.3% of her mind felt clear, light, and ready to get back into the swing of things. She looked around, and saw her taller friend working at a table, the sound of scribbles softly floating through out the room.

She walked over, and looked down, curious as to what he was working on. Pages of notes scattered all over the desk, and in the center of it all, was a sketch of the Recovery Center; notes scribbled around it as well.

"What are you doing?" She asked, her voice making Tennis Ball jump. He looked towards her, and sighed, putting his pencil down.

"OMPWTBAC, you SCARED me Golfball." (A/N : that's just 'oh my place where tennis balls are created', but abbreviated!)

She shrugged slightly. "Didn't mean to, but I woke up not too long ago, and I came to see what you were up to."

"Are you feeling better?"

She nodded. Tennis Ball stretched his legs a bit, before standing up.

"Well, I was just trying to figure out how we could get the Recovery Center up and running again." He explained. "We're..losing a lot of objects, GB. We have to find a way to bring them back, otherwise-"

"What?" Golfball laughed out. "Tennis Ball, you can't be serious!Leafy can't take out the rest of us! You're big, and it would take a LOT of stabbing to get you on the ground.."

"Hey!" Tennis Ball frowned, as Golfball nudged him gently.

"It's okay, TB. And Coiny? He'll be fine. Pin? Hell, if she had made it through all of THAT, she can totally make it through this."

"But what about Fries? Puffball? Gelatin? The Freesmarters...." Tennis Ball stated. Golfball paced around in thought, before looking back up towards him.

"Well, Fries has his growtatoes, but if anything, he's...old. Gelatin is hyper, he can avoid or trick Leafy. Puffball is Puffball. And Freesmart.." she scoffed.

"If anything, they could murder LEAFY in seconds."

"Golfball." Tennis Ball stepped forward, his eyebrows furrowing together. "We lost...6 objects in the span of...I don't know, months??? And-"

"TB, focus on making traps for LEAFY. We have to get her before any more damage can be done!"

"GB, we have to bring them BACK! We can't let her finish us off!"

"TENNIS BALL-"

"GUYS! GUYS!"

The two turned around to reveal the sight of Coiny running down the steps, towards the two. Beads of sweat dripped down his golden face, as tears were shining in his eyes.

"And what do YOU want, Coiny?!" She snapped. Coiny looked towards her, his expression suddenly filling her with concern.

"Gelatin- He- We were- I-" he stuttered out, wheezes and heavy breaths interrupting the possible sentences he could've said. Golfball rolled her eyes, as Tennis Ball stepped forward.

"Yes?"

"Gelatin's dead!"

The words made Golfball freeze.

"What?"

"H-He's dead! He fell on top of the fence and-and-"

"Woah woah woah, HOW DID HE FALL ONTO IT." Tennis Ball stepped forward, his heart pounding with fear in his chest. Coiny shook his head.

"I-I don't know!"

"WHAT IS WRONG WITH ME?!" Fries sobbed out, hunching over Gelatin's corpse. His eyes were still open; fearful, and with the wonder of where he was to save him, still looming over them. This TORMENTED Fries; as soon as he saw the green corpse on the fence, everything collapsed; he could no longer focus on anything else that floated around his mind...his head pounded with grief as he crawled over towards his garden.

He looked up sorrowfully, and brushed his hand against his cold, soft cheek. He let his thumb wipe away a small tear-mark that made its way down his cheek. He was so focused on the smaller figure, that he didn't even hear the footsteps that were beginning to make their way towards him.

"Oh...oh, putts.." Golfball mumbled under her breath. Her widened eyes stared at the corpse; shock stabbing through her chest. Tennis Ball winced, and looked towards Coiny, gulping a bit.

"How...long was he...gone.." he whispered. Coiny shook his head, shrugging slightly.

"We were on our way back, but then...Fries stopped.." he looked back. "I asked him what was he doing, until he just bursted into tears...I looked, and.." he stopped talking. Tennis Ball shut his eyes, and took a deep breath.

"So, what are we going to do GB?"

....

"GB?" He looked down, and let out a quiet gasp. Tears ran down Golfball's cheeks, as she stared intensely at not only Gelatin's corpse, and the green jelly oozing down his body, but...the rainbow substance that covered Fries's arms and chest. Her breathing began to quicken, as she turned towards Coiny and stomped towards him angrily.

"Where's Puffball."

"..."

"Coiny, WHERE IS PUFFBALL." She yelled out, kicking his shin slightly. Coiny looked up, flinching from the kicks she was giving him.

"S-She's dead! She was stabbed through the head!" He sputtered out, stepping away from Golfball. She froze; not fazed by Coiny's movements, or the sobs that erupted from Fries's mouth. More tears began to pour down her cheeks, as she looked back up towards Tennis Ball.

"Build it." She whispered.

"What?"

"Build a Recovery Center." She raised her voice. "We won't have time to capture Leafy; if she can kill more people at once, we're all gonna die."

"Golfball.." Tennis Ball walked towards her, locking eyes with her pained ones. "Are you sure?"

"Please, Tennis Ball..." Her voice began to break. "We can't let more of them die..."

Tennis Ball hesitated, before nodding slowly, leaning in and giving Golfball a small hug.

"Alright..Alright, we're gonna build it. We're gonna be okay, it's-"

"PIN!" Fries suddenly screamed out, his eyes filled with panic and grief. He looked around, and bolted towards Coiny, grabbing his shoulders. "WHERE IS SHE?!"

"I-IN HER GARDEN!" He cried out fearfully. He shook his head, as he began to sprint towards the forest, hot tears spilling down his cheeks. Coiny began to run after him, but was abruptly stopped by Tennis Ball, who grabbed him by his arm.

"Let him go." He stated, watching Fries sprint away from them. Coiny shook his head, as he stared up at the taller figure in disbelief.

"He could get hurt, TB! How-"

"He'll be fine. Pin is probably in her garden...I saw her leaving this morning, before we saw Puffball.."

"Then, why didn't she tell me..." Coiny gazed over towards the forest, thoughts swirling in the back of his mind. Memories flooded in on the death of Woody, and what Freesmart had told him.

So...we saw Pin in the forest...

She wasn't looking to well. She had dirt all over her, she was leaving her garden!

But like...we saw Woody go on over to her...

His eyes began to sting with tears.

"Coiny. They'll be fine." Tennis Ball said, nudging him gently. He quickly snapped back to it; wiping his eyes before looking back up towards Tennis Ball, a sad smile growing on his face.

"Alright..." He mumbled, beginning to walk towards her house. Tennis Ball turned around, and began to walk back towards the lab, Golfball following behind him. She tugged at his back, and this caught his attention; turning back around to face the shorter figure. "Hm?"

"We have to protect ourselves." Golfball whispered, a complete look of fear painted all over her face. He raised an eyebrow.

"What?"

"Tennis Ball, I-I don't feel safe out here. I can't trust this lab to protect us, please, we have to make s-some sort of- I dunno, a gate?! A shield?! O-Or maybe-"

"Golfball." He leaned down towards her level, a small smile glowing on his face. Golfball frowned.

"Whats so funny?!" She snapped.

"Well, not too long ago, you were telling me to make traps and that it would take a lot of damage to bring me down, but now..." He chuckled a bit. She began to grumble stubbornly, stomping her foot on the ground.

"TENNIS BALL, THIS IS SERIOUS!"

"Having second thoughts now, hmm?"

"TENNIS BALL!" Her voice began to break. Tennis Ball quickly noticed; shutting up instantly as he stood back up, leading her back to the lab.

"Okay, okay, I'm sorry. I'll get started on everything right away, okay? You can just-"

"No, I'm helping out."

"I-" Tennis Ball let out a small sigh, staring back up towards the building. "Alright, GB."

"PIN?! PIN, WHERE ARE YOU?!" Fries sobbed out, rushing around the forest like a madman. His head pounded painfully as he scanned the areas around him, trying to find that familiar figure he wanted to see...alive, and well.

She wasn't dead. She wasn't dead.

She COULDN'T be. She was all he had left.

Gelatin...Puffball...

He shook his head.

No. She's okay.

He continued to run around, calling out her name a few more times. Nothing called back, only the pained echoes of his screams returning to him. He stopped, as he leaned against a tree, a guttural sob escaping his lips.

He was alone.

He lost...everyone he loved and cared for.

It was over...

He slid down the tree, his sobs and cries of regret and sorrow waving through the air of the forest. His arms trembled as sadness flowed through his veins, unable to grasp the fact that all of his loved ones were now gone for good. His cries became unbearably loud; to the point he couldn't hear the pair of footsteps quietly approaching him.

Well, what are you gonna do Pin? It's your call.

Approach him. Talk to him.

Are you..?

Yes.

She walked towards him, and quickly let a concerned look wash over her soulless eyes. She put a hand on his shoulder, and this made him jump.

"Fries..?"

"OH MY TATER!"

He quickly threw his arms around her, squeezing her gently. Relieved laughter bubbled out of his mouth, as he swung Pin back and fourth happily.

"YOU'RE OKAY! YOU'RE OKAY.." he cried out. Pin glanced around, slowly wrapping her arms around him.

"Geez, I've never seen you like this Fries. Are you.."

"They're dead Pin."

Silence.

"What?"

"Gelatin...Puffball...they're.." Fries choked out. Pin shook her head, and looked towards Fries, making eye-contact with the hurt figure.

"Hey. I need you to calm down, ok? I can't understand you.."

"I-I can't- we-"

"Would you like to come to my garden..? I like to sit by my lavender plants whenever I'm feeling..yknow..." she smiled.

Fries stared at her, the panic he was feeling before still steaming through him. Her smile somehow comforted him; she carefully helped him back up to his feet.

"Well?"

"L-Lets..go.." he mumbled. Pin nodded, as she began to make her way back to her-

Garden? Pin, what are you-

I can do it.

Pin, PIN, WHAT-

I can do it.

I CAN DO IT.

:)

HELLO!!!!!

I am TIRED!

ANYWAYS AS I SAID BEFORE; WHAT IF FEAR GARDEN PIN N SUPERNOVA PIN SWITCHED
AU TIME

(Psst,,,the amazing @Iosnua wrote a small story about it, you guys should check it out, and also check out the other stuff they've written! they're talented as H E C K)

But I'll be doodlin this au so (;

anyways, enjoy this next part of fear garden hooooo

fear

:)

~Ice

Found

Coiny sat on his bed, staring down at a small photo in his hands. The room was dark, but a small beam of sunlight poured into the room, reflecting off of the small photograph. In it, was Coiny and Pin; Coiny raising his fist in the air, as Pin stood beside him, a arm wrapped around him as she laughed. The photo was taken when the two had gotten to Yoyleland; back when there was a screaming Firey, back when there was a scientific duo with their small friend, back to when there was love...
Coiny felt his eyes water. The more he stared at the photo, the more the questions began to eat at his mind.

What happened to everyone?

What happened to him?

Why was this happening..?

Why...

Coiny looked closer.

Why did Pin look....more alive?

He wiped his eyes, as he threw himself back onto his bed, holding the photo close to his chest. Was it a mistake?

Was there something here that made everyone...change?

'*Coiny*..'

The sudden whisper made Coiny sit up; his eyes quickly wandering around the room. He glanced over towards the window, and noticed that no one was outside; it was as deserted as they found it.

Coiny sighed once more, before he stood up, placing the photo down

onto his bed before he made his way towards the window. He looked around, and scratched his head.

"Maybe it was just the window..?" He whispered to himself. He shrugged, before he reached over towards the small lock of the window. But something stopped him.

There, in the distance...

"Firey...?" He mumbled, as he felt everything around him beginning to freeze. Over on the Yoyle Needy, was a figure, standing over the edge and staring down at the ground. It was letting off a soft glow, and this made Coiny tell.

"FIREY?!" He rubbed his eyes, disbelief suddenly crashing over him like a tidal wave. But as he looked up...

Nothing.

The door to the building beside him suddenly swung open, as an angered figure stomped out, her head whirling around everywhere. She scanned the area around her, before she looked up, noticing Coiny staring down at her.

"WAS THAT YOU?!" She yelled out.

"WHAT?"

"DID YOU SCREAM?!" She tapped her foot impatiently. Coiny rubbed his arm, as he nodded slowly.

"Well, CUT IT OUT!" She yelled. And with that, she stomped back inside, slamming the door behind her. Coiny rolled his eyes, as he looked towards the tower one last time...

Nothing.

He rolled his eyes, as he shut the window. He turned around, and reached for the small photograph that laid on the top of his sheets, until something caught his eye.

The photograph was still gleaming from the sunlight, Coiny's silly

pose still visible;

But Pin's face was scratched out; her smile now dim, and her eyes...broken.

-

"Finally, your back." Pencil sighed out, as Ice Cube made her way into the clubhouse. This threw the smaller figure off guard, as she tilted her head.

"I thought you didn't like me?"

"I didn't want to find you dead." Pencil rolled her eyes. Ice Cube nodded, as she made her way to the sofa.

"Hey, like, what were you doing by the TLC, like, anyway?" Match asked, lifting her head up from Pencil's shoulder. A light blue blush came across Ice Cube's face, as she shrugged.

"Nothing..." her frail voice whispered. A smirk came across Match's face, as she sat up.

"Like, really? Are you, like, sure?"

"Yes, I am." Ice Cube stared away from the two, trying to avoid any sort of conversation with the two. But that didn't happen.

"Well...your blushing a lot, even melting....are you sure you weren't up to anything, weird?" Pencil chimed in, smiling. Ice Cube shook her head, her blush darkening.

"No! Why would you want to know anyways?"

"Icey, your back!" Book walked into the room, wrapping her arms

around Ice Cube gently. "So, How was it? How is she doing? Is she treating you nicely?"

"BOOK!" Ice Cube cried out, embarrassment shining through her tone. Pencil and Match gasped, as they sat up, all of their attention on her.

"ICE CUBE! YOU'VE, LIKE, GOT TO TELL US EVERYTHING! WHO'S THIS LUCKY OBJECT?" Match's eyes sparkled with excitement. Ice Cube looked down shyly, as Book cleared her throat.

"Well, her name is..Ringy, right?"

"BRACELETY!" Ice cube yelled out.

"Aaaaw, that is, like, so ADORABLE!" Match squealed out. "How did you two meet?"

"Well, it was when we had to get the...bugs..." she laughed nervously. "And I was looking around the TLC...and I slipped, and then someone inside asked me if I was...Puffball? And then I told them no, and then ANOTHER voice asked me what I was doing, and if I was okay....and, that's it." Ice Cube smiled, still feeling a bit embarrassed from the two.

"So, looks like we'll have to make blue dresses for the bridesmaids, right?" Pencil teased. Ice Cube's face suddenly glowed with blush, as she hid her face into a small cushion, screaming. Pencil laughed.

"I was kidding, I was kidding!"

"IT WASN'T FUNNY!"

"Aw, c'mon Ice Cube! This is, like, so cute! We have to meet her!" Match acknowledged. Pencil nodded.

"That's right! And personally, I think we could try and include her into our alliance! Since she's your GIRLFRIEND.."

Ice Cube sighed.

"First of all, I thought I was an alternate. Second of all, she's..not my girlfriend."

"SHES NOT?!" The three voices yelled together. Ice Cube flinched.

"What?"

"Well...it's just.." Match trailed on, before Pencil interrupted.

"NOT ACCEPTABLE! You two are GOING to get together! I may not know anything about her, but she HAS TO BE your soulmate!"

"Pencil.."

"NO! We are going to help you, Ice Cube."

"But how?" Book spoke out. "We can't just talk about this, there's other objects in the TLC too, y'know!"

The four sat in silence, before a small lightbulb flicked on inside of Pencil's head. She smiled.

"Well, we're going to bust her out of there."

"And...How can we, like, do that?"

-

"This...is your garden?"

"Well..yes! I've been working on it ever since we moved here...and it's where I come to calm down sometimes...and I made it for you guys too!"

Fries walked around, letting his hands brush against a few of the plants. He wiped his eyes with his other hand; as he stared around in disbelief.

"I've...never seen a garden with so much..life..." he mumbled underneath his breath. Pin gushed.

"It...took a lot of work, but I did it! My favorite ones are the lavenders..." she sat down, crossing her legs. Fries took a seat beside her, the smell of the plants filling him with a sense of...peace.
Pin smiled, as Fries put an arm around her, letting her lean on him sleepily.

"I'm...sorry about everything that has happened Fries..." she mumbled. "I know that it isn't easy.."

"Ah.." Fries looked up, tears beginning to fill his eyes up to the brim. "Well..its..it's fine, Alright? I still have you..."

Pin looked up, laughing a bit. "You're such a dad."

"...I guess I was."

"AM." Pin patted him on the back. Fries looked down glumly, shaking his head.

"But..Gelatin..."

"I know, but there's nothing we can do about it now Fries. He's...he's gone."

"I know." A sob began to escape Fries's mouth, as he clenched his teeth. "I know..."

Pin frowned, as she hugged him, letting her eyes shut. She heard him sniffling, until...

Her eyes opened.

Well? What are you gonna do?

"I...Just give me time, ok? I want to help him out.."

Help him out? Pin, please, you've done nothing to help anyone around here.

"But he's my friend! I can't just-"

I don't care. You have to do something; you have to keep moving down the line.

"Please, just give me a day, or two- I- I already know who I'm gonna get next!"

And who would that be?

Pin crossed her arms. "Obviously Golfball. I can't be found out about once the little scientist is thrown off of the map of life."

Ah, I see. Well...you better get to it fast. I already have a gift prepared for you, for all of your work.

Pin paused. "...What?"

Oh? You think the garden was the only thing I'd offer you? Honey, please...

This is only the beginning.

Pin's eyes suddenly snapped open, a glimmer of red quickly flashing in them. She jumped; and this made Fries hug her closer.

"Pin? Are you ok?" His voice was filled with concern. She shook her head, putting a hand over her arm.

"I'm...fine. It was just a nightmare."

"Another?" Fries raised his eyebrow. "Pin, this is starting to get serious. You've been getting those a lot for the past few MONTHS!"

"And? It's probably because I've been eating before bed...or something."

She lied.

"Well...if you ever need any help, or you just need anyone to talk

to..just remember, I'm here ok?"

"Okay, DAD." Pin smiled. Fries rolled his eyes, as he hugged her close, shutting his eyes.

She liked this. She didn't want to admit it, but...she cared about the guy. A lot.
At least she was helping him now....

Do it.

She winced.

DO IT.

'No...' she thought. 'I...I'm already going after-'

DO IT.

I THOUGHT YOU SAID YOU COULD, HUH?

"Rule. 11." She muttered angrily, clenching her fists. Fries looked at her.

"What?"

"Don't. Hurt. Them." She muttered once more, staring intensely at the ground. Fries's eyes narrowed together; what was she talking about?

"Pin?"

"RULE 11." She screamed out, slamming her hand against a small boulder. She winced at the sudden pain, and recoiled back, grabbing her hand in pain.

"Pin, what had gotten into you?! Look, your bleeding!" He grabbed her hand, as she winced, feeling the blood gush out of her open wound. Fries winced, as he glanced over towards her direction. "We have to bandage this up."

"No...No, I'm okay..." she mumbled. Fries scoffed.

"You were mumbling and yelling a few seconds ago, and now you're

telling me you're ok?! How did that..rock even get there?!" He yelled out. Pin froze.

"Hold on; I'm gonna move it. I don't know why this is-"

"WAIT!" Pin cried out. Fries paused, crossing his arms.

"Yes?"

"C-...Can you get some bandages for me..?" She smiled.

"...Whats going on with you, Pin."

"W-What?"

"You're acting...different.." he sighed. "Listen, just let me move this rock, it isn't good for the garden."

"FRIES, LEAVE IT THERE!"

Fries jumped back at the sudden scream. He stared at her in disbelief, as she panted softly.

"Please...just..." she tried to reach for the words she wanted to say, but, she couldn't find them.

"..What are you hiding?" Fries stepped towards her, causing her to shrink back in fear. He stared down at her, as he took a deep breath, and placed a hand on her shoulder gently. "Pin?"

"N-Nothing! Please, just..." She paused. "..Follow me."

She turned around, and spotted her trowel a few footsteps away, jabbed into a pile of dirt. She slowly walked by, snatching the trowel from the pile before disappearing into the darkness. Fries saw this, and shook his head, as he began to follow her.

As he looked around, his eyes began to catch onto the bright and vibrant colors from Pin's garden. Snapdragons stood proudly in the air, it's bright, orange color letting off a soft glow. Pink tulips swirled happily, as the blue delphiniums gave off an aura of...
Calmness.

He continued to walk, noticing that the sunlight that poured onto the ground was suddenly disappearing. He rubbed his arm.

"Uh...Pin...?" He called out, walking into a small cave. It was dark; a heavy silence rang in Fries's ears as he squinted, trying to find Pin standing around. He continued to walk forward, until he felt something cold brush up against his leg. He shivered.

"Pin?" He looked down.

It was a hand.

His heart froze, as he stumbled back, covering his mouth in absolute horror. As his eyes adjusted to the darkness of the cave, he began to see more.

Hands.

Hands, and hands, and hands.

Lifeless fingers dangled through the air, as he noticed small tags wrapped around their wrists. He could feel vomit rise in his throat, as he began to scatter backwards. He looked around more, and suddenly noticed the body of Flower standing tall...and cold.

"Hello Fries."

The voice made his blood run cold.

"Here it is...My Garden."

Fries turned around, and tears began to spill down his cheeks as he noticed Pin standing over him, a wild grin plastered on her face, with a trowel in her hand.

"P-..." he was speechless.

Pin could feel her eyes water, as she poised in the middle of the garden, spreading her arms wide.

"Well? What do you think?"

"You...you're.."

"I'm...the murderer. I, was the one who killed Firey. I, was the one who killed Rocky. I, WAS THE ONE WHO KILLED WOODY, AND FLOWER, AND NEEDLE AND TEARDROP AND PUFFBALL..." she panted.

"And...Gelatin. I killed..Gelatin."

"PIN.." Fries's voice broke. Hot tears poured down his cheeks, as he could no longer move, nor feel, nor...

"I'm...sorry Fries. I'm sorry about all of this." Pin mumbled. Fries's eyes darkened, as he stood up, his hand brushing over...Gelatin's.

"You're a MONSTER." Fries uttered. Pin winced, but she nodded, staring at him.

"No...I'm only doing my job."

"WHO'S JOB?! WHO'S?!" Fries screamed out, grabbing Pin by the throat. He slammed her against the walls of the cave, and clenched his hand tightly. She shut her eyes, as he began to repeatedly hit her against the wall. "SPEAK UP, DAMN IT! WHY DID YOU FUCKING DO IT?!"

"I-" Pin gasped. "I had to-"

"WHY?!" Fries sobbed out.

Suddenly, the trowel pierced through his chest. He stiffened, as he began to cough up splatters of blood. Blood trickled down his chest, as Pin twisted the trowel in his chest. A painful, squishing sound echoed through the cave, as he began to feel his heart slow down.

"I...love you Fries.."

"P-Pin, I-..." he grabbed her wrist, as he slowly fell down onto the dirt. Pin continued to stab the trowel through his chest, as he continued to cough up blood.

"He..loved you too.."

"FRIES, *NO*!"

-

Pin walked out of the cave, blood splattered all over her body. She did a few neck rolls, before she took a deep breath.

Well done, Pin. And the fry?

She raised the fry up, and took a violent bite from the soggy treat.

Ah, all's Well that-

"P-..Pin?"

No.

HELLO!!!
Im in play rehearsal so!! Gotta head out

Enjoy :)

The big reveal.

~Ice

Sorrowful Farewells.

Fuck.

You should have made sure that-

"H-...Hi, Leafy.."

Her green eyes stared at her in disbelief; the cold, grey color quickly draining from them. The knife that was held tightly within her hand, suddenly slipped out, and fell with a thud onto the dirt below. She stared at her, before her eyes trailed off towards the blood that covered her, to the half-eaten fry in her hands. Her eyes began to water.

"S-So..." Leafy cleared her throat. "It was all...you..wasn't it."

Pin stared at her, a vacant expression settling on her face, when suddenly, a small smile began to lift, more and more until her mouth was stretched into a large grin.

"Was there anyone else you could think of?" Pin giggled. Leafy's chest tightened; looking around, she noticed a bright sunflower, and her head whirled back towards her.

"F-..Firey.."

"Yep! It was me. The poor guy had...not much to live for, dangling from the sky like that. But once he died?" Pin whistled. "It was very helpful to my garden. Don't you see how vibrant and warm these flowers are?"

Leafy stood frozen; her body unable to move from her position. Multiple thoughts swirled through her mind as she stared at this...

"Call me what you must, but, I'm doing this for a reason. A, "greater

good" as you may like to call." She rambled. "Not only for the good of my luscious garden..but for me, as well! You obviously know that I am a natural born leader, Leafy. But what could I do here, that-"

"You're going to pay."

Suddenly, rushed footsteps began to thump against the patches of dirt, as Leafy grabbed the knife from the ground and dashed away from her, her eyes glowing back to the soulless, cold color that they once were. She wasn't running away from fear; she was off to do much worse.

So much worse.

But how could it be worse than Pin's doings? She was the bad guy here.
Pin sighed, as she dusted herself off and gently put the trowel down. She began to walk forwards, until a odd shuffling noise slowly case from behind. As she looked back, her heart stopped.

"GET...BACK HERE.."

Fries stumbled forward, blood still spurting out from his chest. Open wounds let blood gush down him, leaving a crimson trail behind. With all of his strength, he pounced on her, causing her to collapse on her trowel. She let out a choked scream, as Fries quickly grabbed her neck, and began to tighten his grip.

She gritted her teeth together, as she kicked her legs frantically, trying to make him loosen his grip or let go.

PIN. HE'S STILL ALIVE!

I KNOW THAT, GENIUS.

NOW'S YOUR CHANCE; SAVE HIM! YOU CAN'T BREAK RULE #11-

Pin growled, as she lifted her leg and kicked Fries's chest. He hissed, his hands receding back to him as he collapsed onto the ground. Pin gasped, as she slowly made her way onto her feet, and stared down at Fries.

Fries slowly turned onto his back, as he stared up towards her, beads of sweat dripping down his pale face. He panted in pain, as tears began to fill his eyes.

"P-Please, Pin.." he choked out, blood slowly dribbling out of his mouth. "H-Help...please.."

Pin stood still, as she stared down at Fries. She couldn't feel much of anything..

Only ecstasy.

"I'm sorry Fries, but you...as well as everyone here, has a purpose...for me." She grinned. Fries shook his head.

"P-Pin, please-" he cried out. But all she could hear, was a ringing that was continuing to get louder, and louder..

She reached for the trowel, her eyes now glowing..

Red.

-

Coiny ran through the woods, his lungs aching from the sudden run he had taken. He was in a panic; no longer feeling safe in his own home, seeing photographs of Pin being shattered, scratched or burnt..

She was next. She was next and he knew it.

He continued to run, trying to find his way to her garden where she could be..well...gardening, as usual. He had to stay by her side now; he couldn't let her die off.

He lost Firey.

He lost Gelatin.

He couldn't find Fries anywhere...

He wasn't going to lose her. He loved her. He loves her to a point where his heart ached at the thought of everything that had happened to her.

The dream.

He continued to run faster.

Sleep paralysis.

His eyes burnt with tears.

Her peaceful slumber...her nightmares...

A sudden crunch of a branch made him jump, as thoughts raced in his mind.

Kidnapped...slumbers...those flowers..

That cake, the treats...

He froze.

Those leaves.

He made his way into the clearing..
Numbed..shock.

He walked into the garden, no longer being able to hear anything around him. The flowers seemed to glow, as he walked by them blankly.

As he made his way into the darkest patch, he froze.

The garden.

Pin poised the trowel in the air, as Fries's head simply collapsed onto the ground.

That dream.

With a hard, forceful swing, she plunged the trowel into his head, twisting it as blood spurted from his wound.

Fear.

He stared at Pin, a large smile plastered onto her face. She yanked the trowel out, droplets of blood suddenly flying towards him. As they splashed onto him, she looked up.

Fear the garden.

A tear trailed down his cheek.

Fear Garden.

"Pin.." he choked out. The trowel slipped out of Pin's grasp, and fell onto the ground with a heavy thud. Her body went cold as she saw his expression; fearful, hurt, and...furious.

Behind him, stood nearly..everyone.

From Firey, the first one to go..to the poisoned, who fell for her trickery and lies...to Fries, someone who cared for her despite her slander...

They all stared at her, slowly pointing their arms towards her.

"IT WAS HER."

"Wh-.." Coiny was speechless. He could no longer say anything; he didn't know how to react towards the scene that unfolded before his eyes. Pin was in the same state. She was paralyzed with fear, knowing that someone she had loved and cared for dearly...

Just watched her as she slaughtered someone who cared for her, and loved her dearly.

Coiny's face soon twisted into an angered one, as he stomped over to Pin, and, with all of his might, slapped her across the face. Pin's head jerked towards the side, as she fell from the might of the impact, her cheek now growing with a vibrant, garnet shade. He panted heavily, hot tears now pouring down his bronze-colored cheeks.

"So..." He began. "This is what you've been up to...huh?"

The tone in his voice felt like a knife plunging deep into Pin's chest. She didn't dare look up; she held her cheek painfully, as her limbs began to tremble uncontrollably. This angered Coiny, as he swiftly grabbed Pin by her point, and yanked her up forcefully.

"ANSWER ME!" He screamed. "IS THIS WHAT YOU WERE UP TO?!"

Pin didn't respond. She simply stared down at the ground, her eyes widened with fear and sorrow. Coiny rolled his eyes as he threw her towards his side, watching her tumble down against the lavender bushes. He began to walk deeper into the garden, and Pin quickly reached out towards him, shaking her head.

"W-Wait-" She stuttered. Coiny didn't stop; he continued to move forward, until he entered the small, secluded cave. As his eyes adjusted to the darkness, he froze.

Hands.

Their hands.

The missing hands...the bodies....

Those dreams, those lies...

A trail of blood...

Coiny collapsed onto his knees, as more tears began to make its way down his cheeks.

Firey.

She did it.

The voice rang in his ears, as he could no longer...feel.

She lied..she faked it...it was all her.

She shoved me off...She stabbed Rocky in the head...She slit Woody's throat..

She poisoned me...And Teardrop..

She took me to get Yoyleberries, but instead, she broke my neck...

She stabbed me in the eye..

She threw me off the roof..

You...saw her kill me.

Coiny's breathing quickened, as he felt a sudden breeze brush by him peacefully, yet...

"Coiny.." Pin's voice trembled, as she made her way towards the smaller figure. "P-Please, let me explain..."

"Shut it." Coiny mumbled, as he slowly made his way upwards. He turned around, and stared towards her with a intimidating glare. This sent a shiver down her spine; she had never seen him this...

"Why did you do it.." He muttered. "Why.."

"I-I-" Pin stuttered. "I- The dreams- I-It was- I had- I-"

"I always thought you were perfect..." He laughed out. "I thought you were simply...beautiful, and..."

"Coiny, Coiny please listen to me, I-"

"What did you do? Where's Pin? Where is she?" He stared into her eyes. This made tears begin to pour down Pin's pale face, as she shook her head towards him.

"W-What?"

"Where's the Pin I loved? The Pin who was an inspiring leader? An incredible...incredible..." He paused. "Girlfriend...?"

"C-Coiny..." She whimpered out, her voice beginning to fade away. Coiny shook his head, as he slapped her once again, soon increasing his voice to a yell.

"WHAT HAVE YOU DONE, YOU MONSTER?!"

That was it.

Pin's heart was shattered, pieces scattering throughout all of her body. Some pieces scattered to the top of her fingertips, as she shook her head.

"Coiny...it's me. You know me. I'm Pin...your girlfriend." She said blankly, slowly stepping towards him. "I love you...I love you so much...but this was my job."

"TO WHAT?! TO KILL EVERYONE AND CUT OFF THEIR HANDS?! YOU'RE SICK!"

"I know." She raised her hand calmly. "Call me what you must. I know...that you're angry..upset...hurt...But, I'm still me.."

"NO!" Coiny interrupted. "Pin would never do this. No matter what the circumstances, SHE WOULD NEVER-"

"I HAD TO, I HAD TO OKAY?!" Pin screamed out. "THE DREAMS, MY PARALYSIS, IT WOULDN'T STOP! IT WOULDN'T STOP UNTIL I DID WHAT I HAD TO DO! I WAS SCARED, I-I-"

"Nothing, can excuse you for what you've done Pin. NOTHING." He wiped his eyes angrily, as he walked around her. "Do you know how LONG I had to deal with the guilt? Knowing that I couldn't speak or apologize to Firey ever again?! I miss him, Pin! I never wanted him to die like that!"

"But-"

"And Needle?! She was my friend! WHY DID YOU DO IT TO HER?!"

"Coiny-"

"STOP SAYING MY NAME, YOU-"

A slap suddenly echoed through the walls, as Coiny's head jerked towards the side. Tears poured down her face, as she stared down at the weakened figure.

"I had to. I had my own rules, my own list...I had everything. Ever since we moved here, things were..dull. My garden wasn't as lively as it used to be-"

"And what is that supposed to mean?!" Coiny stomped his foot. "Pin, nothing can excuse you for what you've done. NOTHING!"

"Coiny, please..." Pin cried out. "Please, just listen to me.."

"Why should I..?!"

Pin slowly approached him, and cautiously let her lips interlock with his, his warm lips filling her with a pained, yet comforting feeling. She attempted to assuage his concerns, but he simply shook his head, breaking his lips away from hers.

"I-....I'm sorry Pin..." He whispered out, slowly cupping his hands over hers. "But I can't let you do this anymore.."

"What?"

Suddenly, Coiny grabbed her wrist tightly and began to stomp out of the cave, dragging Pin along with him. She tugged at her arm, panic beginning to bubble through her veins.

"C-Coiny..?!"

"You're coming with me, Pin...I can't let you do this anymore.."

"Wh-What?!"

He continued to drag her away, soon limping by Fries's corpse. Pin began to scream; no longer wanting to go along with him. She only wanted to make him-

"COINY, LET ME GO!" She cried out. She let her body fall down onto the ground, feeling Fries's arm below her back. Coiny grunted, as he quickly grabbed her arm with both of his hands.

"YOU'RE COMING WITH ME, PIN. THAT"S ENOUGH!"

Pin shook her head, as she was dragged through the garden slowly, and painfully. Small pebbles and weeds scratched through her skin, as she could feel droplets of blood trickling down her libs. She shook her head, sobbing and begging at Coiny to let her go. He continued to drag her away, as she clawed onto the earth below her. She looked around, while on the other hand, he didn't listen; tears were still making its way down his face, as he only wanted to..

"I'M SORRY!"

Suddenly, a sharp pain jolted through Coiny's leg, as he loosened his grip and fell onto a small bush. Thorns jabbed through his body, as he let out a sudden yelp of pain. Pin stood over him; her stained trowel in hand, as a sob began to make its way up her throat.

"Coiny, please...j-just listen.." She warned, clenching the trowel. He panted heavily, beads of sweat dripping down his face.

"Wh-Why should I, you...you murderer.."

Pin flinched at the words, as she suddenly swung the trowel down and dug it into his side. Coiny let out an agonizing scream, as blood began to rush out of his wound. Pin sobbed quietly, as she yanked the trowel out of his wound. Coiny withered in the bush; his limbs trembling as blood began to ooze down the leaves of the bush. Pin took a deep breath, before she looked down at him once more.

"Listen to me...please..." She whimpered out. "I-I don't want to hurt you..."

Coiny gave her a confused and pained look. "B-But you have, Pin..."

"No! I-"

"You've hurt me, ever since you shoved Firey off.."

"SHUT UP!" Pin weeped out, as she dug the trowel into his stomach. He screamed out once more, tears mixing in with the blood that made its way down his chest. He shriveled up; pain beginning to numb his lower body. His eyes began to darken, as he reached out towards Pin. She was just about to stab him once more, blocking out his choked sobs and screams of pain, until...

"T..Tell me.." He whispered out. "Did..you love me...?"

Pin froze. Her grip loosened around the trowel, as she blinked in confusion. "What..?"

"Did.." Blood spurted out Coiny's mouth, before he looked back up towards the taller figure. "Did you...love me...?"

Her chest lurched. She dropped the trowel, as she wrapped her arms around him and carefully lifted him from the bush. A whimper escaped Coiny's lips, as Pin could feel the blood from his wounds trail down her arms. She winced, as she slowly kneeled down and cradled her boyfriend in his arms. She continued to cry, as she gently caressed his frigid cheek.

"I-I do, Coiny..I do love you..I loved you since..oh, gosh." She laughed, sniffling a bit. "I've loved you ever since we met.."

Coiny looked into her eyes, as he weakly lifted his hand towards her face. He clasped his hand over his cheek, and carefully wiped the tears that poured down her face.

"I-I'm so sorry, Coiny, I never-.." She took a shaky breath. "I didn't want to hurt you.."

A weakened smile spread across Coiny's face, as he continued to caress her cheek gently. "Scarlet...i-its..ok.." he choked out. Pin shook her head, as she hugged Coiny close.

"No, No no no, its not..I-I have to get you help-"

"J-Just...let me go.."

Pin froze.

"WHAT?!"

"P-Please, just...let me go.." He whispered. "I don't want you...to get hurt by..them.."

"Oh come on, no, please, Coiny..." Pin sobbed out. "I-I can't lose you.."

Coiny coughed harshly, blood splashing onto Pin's chest. She cried quietly, as she began to rock Coiny gently within her arms. She leaned down, and let her lips press against his once more, him accepting the kiss and letting the warmth and comfort transfer through him. His hand slowly moved down her shoulder, and then down her arm...

"I-I love you, Pin.."

Suddenly, Coiny lifted Pin's arm with the trowel, as Pin's eyes widened.

"NO!"

With all of his might, he let her arm stab the trowel through his chest, an awful wheeze escaping through his lips. Pin let out a cry of sorrow, as his eyes began to slowly close. She cupped her hands around his cheeks, as she began to shake her head.

"COINY, COINY STAY WITH ME! D-DON'T GO TO SLEEP, DON'T-"

"I..love you.." Coiny whimpered out, letting his fingers intertwine with hers. She held his hand close, as she stared down at him in disbelief.

"I..have always..loved you.."

A weakened chuckle escaped from his lips, as he kissed the back of her hand carefully. This took all of the energy he had; his eyes finally closing, as his final breath danced through the air and gently floated through the atmosphere above. His grip on Pin's hand loosened, as his body loosened in Pin's arms.

"C-..Coiny?"

Silence. She shook her head.

"This isn't funny..Coiny, please.." She began to cry, as she hugged his body. But he didn't respond.

He could no longer respond.

Pin looked up, her world around her slowly beginning to crumble and fall apart.

Rule #11.

No, No..

You broke it.

Please, please wake up, please...

You went on..and broke it.

PLEASE...

Are you proud of yourself...Pin?

Pin looked up, and a loud, heartbreaking bawl escaped her lips. She shook her head, as she hugged Coiny close, weeping and sobbing into his body. Tears mixed with his blood, as she rocked him gently,

No longer caring about The Rules.

No longer caring about Leafy.

No longer caring about the spirits that would haunt her, and do anything to drag her down.

All that was in her mind..

was Coiny..

Her partner in crime..

Her right hand man.

Her boyfriend.

He was now gone.

And now, he could no longer hear. Like everyone else, he could no longer hear her voice...see her...feel her...

This was it. Pin collapsed, feeling her body go numb as a loud, white noise began to pour into her head. Her chest ached as the reality of the situation began to crush her down.

Well...you've finally done it, huh.

Looks like your on your own, Pin.

She suddenly yanked the trowel out of his chest, as she threw to across the garden, no longer wanting to see the damned tool anymore. She stared down at Coiny's face sorrowfully, noticing that his expression was rather...peaceful. She leaned down, and gently let her lips press against his cheek, as she rested her head onto his face.

Finally...it hit her.

"COINY...!" She weeped out.

"I'M SO SORRY..."

You aren't.

"I LOVE YOU..!"

Sure.

"**COINY!**!"

.

.

.

He's gone.

---

hes

g o O O O OO OOONE

hello everyone, guess who's finally on spring break!!!!

anyways, I'm gonna work on this and supernova as much as i can!! honestly writing is fun and aaaaaa

but i also want to draw and work on my object show as well, since I'm very determined to make it happen!

but for now...enjoy this..tough chapter.

he's gone.

~ice

Abandoned Investigations

"How are you gonna get her out of there? It's merely impossible!" Ice Cube exclaimed, walking around the large, metal container. Pencil rubbed her chin in thought, before she looked back towards the rest of the alliance.

"How long has it been since we used the wall teleporter?"

Gasps of shock suddenly erupted from the group, as Bubble began to shake her head.

"No way!" She exclaimed, walking towards the taller figure. "We will not touch GB's teleporter; she'll get angry! And I don't think I'd loike to make her mad..."

"Bubble, Bubble.." Pencil patted her head, before shoving her towards the side. "You have to understand that this is for Icey's sake; you wouldn't want to make your *alliance* member sad, hmm?"

Bubble stumbled back, trying her hardest to not collide with anything that could make her pop. A small yelp escaped her lips, as she suddenly lost her balance and slammed her hands onto the wall. Pencil giggled.

"Come on, Bubble. Strengthen up; we can't screw this up for Icey now, can we?"

"I HATE YOU!"

The sudden exclamation made Pencil freeze. Bubble jumped; the voice coming from behind her. Which meant that it was from...

"What did you say?" Pencil gritted through her teeth, crossing her arms angrily. Bubble shook her hands towards her, a sudden nervousness beginning to weigh her down.

"I-I didn't say Oinything Pencil! I-"

"I! HATE! YOU!"

Pencil clenched her fists, as she began to stomp towards the trembling figure. Bubble cried out in fear, before suddenly cowering down in fear and shielding herself from Pencil's tactics. That is, until Pencil slammed her fist against the cold metal, the echo of the impact shaking Bubble to the very core.

"AND WHO, said that?" A angered grin slowly grew amongst Pencil's face. The voice inside of the box chuckled a bit, before they spoke.

"Why would you want to know? There's no way you can figure out who I am."

"Is this Ringy?!" She crosses her arms, beginning to tap her foot impatiently.

"No!"

"DID SOMEONE SAY MY NAME?!" Sudden footsteps quickly bursted through, before a small knock was heard from the other side of the wall. "ICY?!"

"Bracelety!" Ice Cube smiles warmly as she began to make her way towards the spot where Bracelety was knocking. Pencil rolled her eyes, before leaning closer towards the wall, directing herself towards the voice that had snapped towards her before.

"We'll continue this little dispute later, Alright." She muttered.

"I don't care, now go away. You're voice is gross enough to give me a headache."

Pencil couldn't see it, but she could tell that the object speaking had a taunting smirk on their face. She rolled her eyes; no longer giving a crap about whoever spoke back to her. Besides, they were stuck inside of that *prison,* while she was out here, being bold and free as she could be. She walked over to where the others stood, passing by Bubble who sat quietly with her arms wrapped around her body. She stayed in that position, until...

"You gone, already?" The voice asked. Bubble jumped, and turned towards the blue wall behind her.

"S-She's goine..." she whispered, fearful that the voice would begin to tease her next. She didn't know why she was afraid; she was already used to being teased and made fun of by Pencil and Match...

"Are you okay." The stern voice cut Bubble's train of thought, as she was shocked to hear the tone of slight compassion coming from inside.

"Wh-What?"

"I said, are you okay."

"Yeah.."

"...Who was she." The voice asked, noticing Bubble's nervousness and quieting down a bit to make her feel less intimidated. Bubble sighed.

"That was Pencil...the leader of us Freesmarters..."

"I hate her."

Bubble gasped in shock. "D-Don't say that! She'll hear you!"

"So? It's not like she can do anything to hurt me."

"Y-Yes, but she can still hurt you!"

"And how would *you* know? Are you on her *team,* sweetheart?"

The sudden name made a light blush glow on Bubble's cheeks, but she quickly shook it off as she cleared her throat. "W-Well, yes, but-"

"Then I hate her team! I hate you!"

"But whoiy? Whoiy do you hate me? You haven't even seen me yet!"

"Because you're apart of a team that's leaded by a sad excuse for a team captain, that's why."

Bubble frowned. "That doesn't mean oinything though! It's not like

we're all the same!"

"Are you sure about that?"

"Of course! She's my leader, I hoive to respect her! Or else she-" Bubble suddenly slapped a hand over her mouth, her eyes widened in realization. She didn't want to tell this stranger what Pencil's tactics were, otherwise they'd-

"...Or else she what." The voice sternly asked. Bubble shook her head.

"N-Nothing! Nothing, it's ok!" She laughed out nervously.

"You're stuttering."

"N-No I'm not!"

"Yes you are."

"No!"

"BUBBLE."

Her stuttering soon came to a halt, as she heard the object say her name; loud and clear. "H-How do you-"

"She said it earlier. Duh."

"Oh..." she clasped her hands together nervously, as she laid her back against the wall gently. "What's your noime..?"

"What?"

"What's your noime..?"

"My what?"

"Your noime!"

"What are you saying?"

"Your noime! NOIME!" Bubble cried out, frustration suddenly bursting in her tone. Her eyes widened. "O-Oh! I'm soirry, I didn't

mean to yell, I-"

"Accent, huh." The voice replied, nonchalantly. Bubble sighed.

"Yeah..."

"...The name's Fanny. And don't sweat the accent." Fanny mumbled, laying against the cold, darkened wall. "It's...nice."

"Really? Everyone always tells me it's weird..."

"Well, it's a bit off, but it's suitable." She replied. A small smile lifted onto Bubble's face, as she carefully turned her body so it could face the wall.

"That's...The noicest thing anyone has ever said to me.."

"Well, don't get used to it. I'm not the... 'nice' type, per say."

"And whoiy is that?"

"...I hate everything. Cliché, I know." She began. "Everyone has noticeable and hidden flaws and they all refuse to recognize the fact that they, like the rest of us, are tainted. They live out their lives as if they are a plastic, shiny new doll and as if they are the star of the show; and then there's those who only attempt to improve their behavior because theirs is far from perfect, and, dare I say, worthy of hate."

Bubble sat in silence, her mind now bursting with realizations and thoughts from what Fanny has said.

"Wow.."

"It's not like I'm not worthy of hate either; I definitely am. Even I hate myself. But I don't care." Fanny shrugged slightly. "It a thing."

"Well...I don't hate you."

Fanny's eyes widened. "...What."

"I don't hate you..." Bubble smiled. "You speak the

truth...and..although it's scary....it's a brave, brave thing of you to do.."

Fanny's cheeks began to glow, as she rolled her eyes.

"Wh-Whatever. I hate this."

Bubble giggled quietly. "It's okay.."

I don't hate you.

-

A week has passed, and the city was nearly...silent. No longer thriving with the lovely chatter that harmonized through the atmosphere, it stayed silent and eerie; a heavy feeling of sadness tugging down at those who remained.

Pin trudged back to her home, carrying a few bags of supplies she had found in an abandoned store nearby. It was silent for her; no longer arguing with herself, all that filled her head was a hollow, empty ringing.

And pain.

She had held off the killing for days. Something, had cut into her soul, deep enough to make her feel regret for what she had done. And that 'knife', was simply carrying her lover's dying body in her arms...all wounds inflicted by her own doing. Her eyes began to shine with tears at the remembrance of it all.

I love you.

She looked up, trying to prevent the flow of tears that would stain her frail, exhausted face.

I have always loved you.

"B-..But how.." Pin choked out quietly, suddenly feeling her heart stings tug violently in her chest. The tears soon followed; the warm liquid making its way down her cheeks.

There's nothing to be afraid of, Pin.
I promise.

"I-I'm Scared..." the supplies suddenly slipped out of her grasp, as she slowly slid down onto the pavement below her. She wrapped her arms around herself, as she began to sob heavily into her legs. Her body trembled and jolted with each weep and sob that erupted from her mouth; no longer caring about anyone who could hear.

"I-I want you back...I-I..I'm so scared..." Pin gasped out. "I'm- I'm sorry.."

The fear, the sadness and the anger that had bursted inside of her began to weigh her down, leaving a heavy emptiness to replace it all. The heaviness laid at the bottom; those being her negative emotions, of course.

She looked down at her arms tearfully, noticing how they were clean, soft, and abnormally cold...before she began to notice the blood that splattered an painted all over them. She shut her eyes, no longer wanting to see the hell that she had brought upon herself.

'*Scarlet..*'

"You're not real." Pin whispered out, her body suddenly running cold.

'Pin.'

"YOU'RE. NOT REAL." She mumbled, hugging herself tightly.

'*I love you.*'

"No..." Pin let her eyes snap open, the color now pale, and emotionless.
"You Don't."

...silence.

"How's the Recovery Center coming along TB?"

"It's going well! A few bugs here and there, but I'm so close to repairing it; I think we might have a chance to save ourselves and everyone!"

"A swell 83. 973% chance, might I add."

"Absolutely!"

The sudden tone crashed through Pin's darkened atmosphere, as she quickly scrambled out of view from the two who were approaching. They hadn't seen her; and that's how she wanted to keep things. The last time they had spoken, was after everything that had happened...only a few days ago.

"What happened to you?!"

"I don't know."

"Where is Coiny? Where's Fries?! Pin, did Leafy kill them?!"

A sob suddenly escaped her lips. "I don't know."

"PIN, YOU'RE COVERED IN BLOOD. WHAT DID YOU DO?! DID YOU SEE WHAT HAPPENED TO THEM?? GODDAMMIT, SPEAK!"

Everything stayed quiet. Her eyes...dull. Until a loud, breaking sob escaped her lips.

"COINY!"

They stopped speaking to her since then. They only got the idea that Coiny and Fries were dead, and she was the only witness; and she wasn't in the place to speak up about it. Coiny was her lover, after all...

The duo came into sight, continuing to chatter about their calculations and findings of their latest goals.

"We recover everyone, and then we ask them what happened. It's a simple...yet effective, plan that could work." Tennis Ball explained. Golfball looked up.

"We have to be careful though, they could try to destroy the thing once again. And I don't have the patience to see dead bodies with missing hands anymore..." she muttered.

"Well...I'll find a way to make it indestructible."

"There's a good 3.152% chance you could make that possible."

"C'mon GB, we have to try! And if all else fails, we keep it...well, you know where."

Golfball sighed, turning away from the larger figure. "Fine."

The two walked past her spot, not noticing her in the view. Pin stared at them curiously, before it made her jump.

The museum.

Wow, you're still here.

I thought GB wasn't fond of that old place.

Why are you here? I thought-

Go along.

What?

Go.

"I'm still curious as to why you don't like the museum GB." He raised an eyebrow towards her. "You're usually into investigating the artifacts that were left behind in a place like that."

Golfball's expression changed at that moment; going from

uninterested, to fearful and uncomfortable.

"Why do *you* want to know." She uttered. Tennis Ball's eyes widened at her sudden tone.

"Well, I care about you, for starters, and I have never seen you act-...well.."

"Emotional? I know." Golfball tutted. "But this isn't something I can...easily talk about. I'm not sure if, in my lifespan, I'll ever be comfortable enough to...explain everything that happened there. I just don't feel...ready?"

"How about strong?" Tennis Ball suggested.

"Yeah, strong; I don't know if I'll be..strong enough to talk about it."

"It's that rough, huh." Tennis Ball replied sympathetically. Golfball shrugged slightly, turning her head away from him. The two continued to walk, heading towards the science museum for their-

So...little Golfball is afraid of a abandoned museum? I'm...strangely fascinated, I must learn more...

Well, you aren't going to.

What? Why do you say that?

Pin slowly emerged from her hiding spot, quietly sneaking around and following the duo as they made their way towards the museum.

Pin.

The two stood in front of the ruined doors, feeling the heavy aura beginning to drag them down. Tennis Ball glanced over towards Golfball, noticing that her face was beginning to lose its color.

"Golfball.."

"We're going in TB. If we need more supplies for this, we need more supplies..." she looked up. "Even if it means..going in."

PIN.

"Alright.." Tennis Ball sighed out. "But if you don't feel okay...just let me know, okay?" Tennis Ball leaned down, and gave her a gentle kiss on her cheek. Golfball blinked, before she took a shaky breath.

"A-..Affection. It's affection." She mumbled towards herself, feeling her cheeks then pink. Tennis Ball chuckled a bit, before slowly walking inside of the deteriorated building.

WHAT ARE YOU PLAN-

"Shut it." Pin gritted through her teeth, as she carefully made her way inside. The sudden smell of mold and dust smacked against her, as she struggled to not let out a cough or sneeze. She ducked down behind a large pillar, as she began to listen.

"You head upstairs. I'll look down here."

"But GB-"

"The QUICKER we get to look, the quicker we can get out of here." She sighed out.

Tennis Ball nodded hesitantly, before he began to make his way up the stairs towards the next floor. Golfball let out a trembling sigh, as she looked around the abandoned scenery.

"I thought I had forgotten.." she whispered. "I never wanted to remember..."

She made her way towards a few glass cases, and began to investigate the few objects that laid collecting dust. She observed the rust and metal, observed the technology, and took mental notes; how could this help fix the Recovery Center?

Her eyes suddenly glanced over towards the large, potted plants that stood eerily against the wall. She noticed the small, broken pot that stood out from the middle...

Where are you, BOZO?!

"Just a memory, just a memory.." Golfball whispered, shutting her eyes tightly.

You need PUNISHMENT.

She turned towards a large display case, and noticed the array of smaller inventions that stood proudly within the walls. Her eyes gazed over towards her reflection.

You can't hide forever...

A figure stood behind her, a taunting grin spread widely amongst their face.

BOZO.

Golfball's face lost it's color, as she watched the figure come closer..

"Bozo-brain bossy bot, huh...?"

Goodness, this was an adventure

Anyways, this is now Pin goes sicko mode: part....I lost count

And FUBBLE!!!!!! Love those lesbians

But! I hope you enjoy this....I am exhausted

Bye!

~ice

Bashed In

"Pin-"

Golfball's sentence was soon cut short, as Pin instantaneously gripped Golfball's head angrily. Her fingers dug into the back of the smaller figures head, and, in an instant, lifted her from the ground. Golfball began to kick her legs rapidly; a burning sensation rising from the pressure of Pin's fingers as they clawed into her head. The tips of her feet could no longer touch the ground, as she tried to release herself from the grip. She couldn't speak, fear and shock numbing her enough to refrain her from making a sound. Pin panted a bit, before her gaze turned towards the small, panicking figure within her hands.

"Looking for something...?" Pin's hoarse voice made a chill shock its way through Golfball. She stayed silent, not daring to respond to-

"ANSWER ME."

Fuck.

"W-What do you want from me...?" Golfball whispered, feeling her limbs beginning to tremble out of fear. "I-I can give you...the teleporter..."

"Golfball."

"I can give you my entire laboratory Pin just leave me out of this please I can't-"

"Oh...I'm sorry, but you've seem to mistaken me for someone who gives a shit." Pin interrupted coldly, as she raised the smaller figure upwards. Golfball flinched, as she felt the pain in her head grow and grow; Pin's strength increasing as well. "I don't care about what you could give me, or what you can't go through, but there is one thing...I would like."

"A-And that is...?" A nervous grin grew on Golfball's face, as beads of sweat began to slowly trail down the sides of her face. Pin giggled a bit, before she suddenly slammed Golfball's face against the display case. A loud crack broke through the air, as Golfball let out a pained yelp, feeling the pain quickly zap through her face. Pin lifted her back up, and took a quick glance at the weakened figure in her hands;

Golfball's eyes began to droop down towards the ground, as her ground was slanted slightly. A trickle of blood slowly made its way down the corner of her lip. Pin began to giggle at the sight.

The smartest, wittiest, and sharpest contestant in BFDI...

The bozo-brain bossy bot, as Pencil liked to call her...

Was pathetic.

Weak.

Helpless...

"Huh...You aren't looking so good there, Golfball.." Pin whispered, as she held her closer. Golfball shook her head, as she angrily spit out the blood that filled in her mouth...as well as a tooth.

"Oh! Well thats new..." Pin giggled.

"F-..Fuck you." Golfball's voice broke. "Monster....You m-monster..."

Her lips suddenly clasped shut after the words had danced off of her lips.

Regret.

"Ah...I see..." Pin sighed out, as she slowly lifted Golfball upwards once more. She began to panic.

"Wait, WAIT! I-"

Before she could finish, Pin slammed Golfball against the glass case once more. She heard the cracks of the glass crawl through the air, as

she began to slam Golfball's face against the glass display, before her head began to fill with white noise. Golfball's mouth was wide open; Pin didn't know if she was screaming...or *trying* to. She continued to slam her face against the glass, using more and more of her strength to slam her as hard as she could.

For a few moments, the white noise began to fade away... letting her ears welcome the screams and guttural cries from the scientist. She watched as her face contorted each time it slammed against the glass, and after more and more slamming against the case...

Blood.

Droplets of blood began to fly through the air, as Pin could feel the liquid splattering all over her face. A large, gaping crack formed at the center of Golfball's forehead, as blood began to gush and squirt out of the open wound. The glass was already deteriorating; shards jabbed into Golfball's eyes, cheeks, face; Her limbs twitched every now and then, and her eyes quickly glanced up to face Pin. They shined with fear and anger, cursing the figure that stood over her with a nasty grin plastered on her face.

Pin quickly noticed, and slammed her down against the ground, her body letting off a hard thud. Golfball withered and squirmed in pain, a pool of blood suddenly pouring down onto the dirt-covered tiles below them.

Pin smiled. She could hear her struggles breaths, and see her pained movements. She kneeled down towards her level, and broke the silence.

"Had enough...?" She whispered coldly. Golfball wheezed slightly, before she looked towards her.

"N-..."

"What was that?"

"N..no.." Golfball spat out, blood trickling down her chin. Pin sighed, before she picked the figure up once more.

Regret immediately hit her, as she began to scream as loud as she

could, letting her limbs thrash around madly. As Pin lifted her for one final blow...

"Golfball! I think I finally found a piece!"

SHIT-

"It was simply by the metals; strangely close to the astronomical inventions, but I feel like this piece would help the Recovery Center get back into working order!" Tennis Ball happily explained, as he made his way down the steps. The large, metallic engine laid on his head, as he carefully maintained his balance to keep it perfectly still. He reached the bottom step- and put the engine down next to the wall.

"What do you think, GB?"

"T-Tennis-" the voice gasped. "Ball..."

His head lifted up, as his eyes suddenly gazed over the horrific picture that painted around before him:

Golfball's face was mangled and torn; blood gushing down her eyes, her mouth, and even from a painfully swollen hole on the middle of her forehead. Shards of glass shined as they stood out from her face, and a few shards...and teeth...were scattered around her.

Holding her small, frail body was Pin. A crazed grin was pasted onto her face, as blood splattered and stained her entire body. Dark bags hung under her eyes, as she began to wave towards the figure, a giggle escaping her lips.

"Came back for her, I see?" Pin exclaimed, as she threw her down once more. Tennis Ball quickly ran towards the squirming figure, carefully scooping her into his legs. He began to move her head, trying to inspect the severity of her wounds, and trying to hold himself together.

But he failed the second part; tears twinkled down his cheeks as a small shudder escaped his lips.

"G-GB, look at me, don't go to sleep okay?" He muttered, as he began

to press his foot (hand?? HAND???) against her injury on her forehead. Golfball winced; the pressure making her head numb out a bit.

She didn't have TIME for this!

If she was going to die...

"T-Tennis Ball-" she whined out, blood spurting out from her mouth. Tennis Ball hushed her, but she didn't let that stop her.

"TB..!"

"WHAT, GB?!" Tennis Ball cried out, his voice breaking a bit. Golf Ball winced at his exclamation, but her eyes slowly dragged themselves open, as she stared into his lime-tinted eyes. A tear began to roll down his cheek, as he slowly leaned in, and let his lips interlock with hers. This only lasted for a few seconds; GB didn't want to make this harder than it was.

There was enough damage to her skull, because for a moment...

She didn't recognize who the fuzzy, round figure was, trying to kiss her.

But then, it came back.

Using the remaining amount of energy she had left, she threw herself away from the worried figure, and in a loud, trembling voice, she screamed out...

"RUN!"

Tennis Ball stared at her, and his eyes darted back towards the bloodied figure that began to make its way towards Golfball. He had to stop her.

He had to stop her.

GET HER!

WH*AT A*RE Y*O*U DOING?!

GO!

"RUN, TB!" Golfball screamed out once more, blood now pouring down her mouth. She watched as Tennis Ball quickly snapped back into reality; and after he exchanged a pained, sorrowful look, he turned away, and dashed out of the museum.

Pin suddenly stopped in her tracks.

GET HIM!

She dashed out of the museum, and began to sprint towards the running figure. Her head pounded with anger as she began to get closer, and closer...

Until he tripped.

His rounded body bounced a bit, before it speedily rolled down the street...

And saw as he began to roll into the thickened woods.

WHAT ARE YOU GOING TO DO?!

HE KNOWS NOW. THERE ARE STILL PEOPLE OUT THERE, AND NOW THEY ARE GOING TO KNOW THE TRUTH. GOLFBALL ISN'T DEAD, TENNIS BALL IS RUNNING AWAY, HOW-

"Let me handle this on my own." Pin muttered angrily, as she began to stomp back towards the museum.

WHAT DO YOU MEAN, "HANDLE IT ON YOUR OWN?!"

YOU HAVE GONE OVER THE LINE, PIN. YOU AREN'T-

"I have some unfinished business to attend to, now ZIP IT." She gritted through her teeth. After a moment, Pin slammed the door open, and quickly looked down towards the floor.

PIN.

PIN, WHERE IS SHE?!

Pools of blood stained the deteriorated tiles, as Pin began to look around quickly.

"How the hell...?" She muttered. She stepped forward, as she began to look for the smaller figure. Her eyes gaze upon a trail of blood that led towards the doorway, as she began to feel her heart pound angrily.

"WHERE ARE YOU GOLFBALL." She screamed out, not recognizing the voice that reverberated through the walls. She jumped a bit, before she began to stomp around the exhibits angrily.

"I DON'T HAVE ALL DAY. WHY ARE YOU HIDING FROM ME ANYWAYS?! YOU'RE ALREADY DONE FOR."

"N-..Not yet..."

A sharp pain suddenly bursted through Pin's side, as her gaze slowly trailed down to where it hurt.

An arrow plunged into her side, blood suddenly gushing out of her wound. She tried to step forward, but the arrow plunged deeper into her side as she slipped on a puddle of blood, and fell right onto her back. A scream of agony bubbled through her lips, as she noticed a tiny figure dragging herself towards Pin. As she heard her footsteps get louder, and louder...

Act.

Fake it.

You've fucked this all up, and now you have to hurry this up and get this over with ASAP.

With that, Pin began to let her limbs twitch and jolt, as she began to feel more blood gush out of her wound. She let her eyes roll back into her head, as she let her twitching and jolting die down. As she opened her eyes, she saw Golfball peering down at her, her eyes blazing with anger and vengeance at the squirming body.

Act.

Pin let out a soft exhale, as her eyes gazed upwards.

Act.

She laid still, her movements coming to a rest.

Act.

Silence...

Golfball let out a shudder of pain, as she slowly turned her body around. She began to limp away, cautiously avoiding the pools of blood that splattered all around her.

The deed was done. It was all...her. She didn't expect it, but...thankfully, she had the time to do what she did.

...

Wait, what did she do..?

Her memory...

Golfball shook her head, her vision beginning to darken out once again. Her mind filled with a thick and heavy fog, refraining the memories she had from passing through it. She didn't know what was going on;

What is she gonna do...?

"Th-...There's a good..eleventy...one% chance, he ran away.." She mumbled to herself, her words beginning to slur together. A moment passed, before her eyes widened at the odd number that had escaped from her lips;

Her mind was melting.

She continued to limp forwards clumsily, coughing up blood that splattered below her. She could see the door ahead, and hopefully...he was hiding somewhere nearby. Or maybe he fell and...

No.

He's strong. He may be clumsy, but he could outrun that...monster. Golfball continued to limp towards the broken door, sunlight pouring into the museum. All she could do, was get out, and pray that she would see..him..alive, and hidden.

But what if she got him?

What if he's...

No.

He couldn't have left her...

She liked him.

Who again...?

Who was...he..?

She couldn't remember...

"W-..Whatever...I have to find..him.." She uttered. "I-I...love him..."

"Oh...You did, didn't you...?"

Suddenly, a hand slapped over Golfball's head, and lifted her high off of the ground. Golfball froze, as she felt the fingers squeeze her bashed in skull. Pin leaned in, and giggled a bit at the frightened scientist.

"Well, I surely did miss something between you two."

"P-Pin, please-"

"I'd never think that Tennis Ball was brave enough to confess to you, but.."

"P-Please, I just-"

"I felt the same way about...him...you know..."

"D-Don't hurt him, please-"

"...Why."

Golfball looked up. "Wh..What..?"

"Why." Pin gritted through her teeth. "Why should I spare him.."

Golfball stayed silent, staring down at the broken, blood-covered tiles on the floor. Pin growled angrily, as she shook the smaller figure. Golfball yelped, and Pin silenced her with a yell.

"WHY SHOULD I SPARE HIM, GOLFBALL." She grinned angrily.

"I-I LOVE HIM! I LOVE HIM, J-JUST LET HIM GO." She screamed out.

"That's strange...I never thought that you could even show love..."

"H-He makes me feel..comfortable. He's nice, smart, and he's...tolerable. U-Unlike everyone else.." Golfball uttered underneath her breath. This made Pin laugh, as she began to walk back towards the display case.

"Did you tell him that yet..?"

"Y-.." Golfball paused. "I-...uh.."

"Oh? You haven't? I thought you did last night..." Pin chuckled. Golfball's eyes widened angrily, as she began to wave her legs back and fourth.

"LEAVE HIM ALONE!" She screamed out angrily.

"Hmm...I should, shouldn't I..." Pin hummed, as she began to look around at the inventions in the display case. "You really do love him, don't you..."

"I-I do, okay? P-Please.."

Silence. That is...

"Oh Golfball...You're so funny, you know that?" Pin giggled out, as she slowly began to lift GB into the air. Golfball's eyes widened in

fear, as she began to thrash around in fear.

"W-WAIT, PIN, PLEASE!"

"I'm sorry Golfball..."

A scream suddenly escaped Golfball's lips, as Pin prepared to slam her against the sharpened edge of the display case.

"But if I can't love anymore...no one can..."

And with that, Pin swung down...

A large, cracking noise echoed through out the museum, as well as the sound of blood splattering through out the floor, and the case. A hack escaped her lips for a second, until Pin lifted her once more, and...

BANG.

SO THE SHOW OF MINE WENT REALLY WELL!! Today is my last performance and that means I'll have more time to write!! (Also for those who wanted to know: the musical I'm in is called 'Urinetown' (WEIRD NAME BUT ITS REALLY GOOD I PROMISE))

BUT HELLO!! How is everyone? Its been a while

a HUGE insp liked supernova and i almost cried i was like "y....you liked it. you.....liked that chaotic story."

anyways, yea, gb got her head bashed in...poor girl

and tb is just out there.....

but ah, thats how it be sometimes, yknow?

anyways, enjoy :)

~ice

Lost? Feel Free to Return

"So, do you think we got enough to keep him in a good mood?" Nickel kicked a small pebble across the path, as he looked back towards the figures that followed behind him. "We were out for a while, and it better keep him calm and cool until the next challenge."

Spongy simply nodded, as he glanced down towards the smaller figure. "We got enough to keep him happy.." he responded.

Nickel glanced over towards Bomby, who was happily munching on a banana in his hand. The three had left Yoyleland to try and get some bananas for Bomby, since the abandoned stores here contained bananas that Bomby wasn't fond of; some rotten, some destroyed. Because of that, the three traveled by foot, resulting them into being gone for the long while.

"Say, I wonder how things are going for everyone back in the city!" Nickel exclaimed, nudging Bomby a bit. "I can't wait to see the team again!"

"I'm just ready to go home and rest." Spongy sighed out, dragging the heavy bag of bananas behind him. "This was enough for me."

"And thankfully, we managed to STAY ALIVE." Nickel shook his leg a bit. "Oddly enough, Leafy wasn't anywhere to be seen..."

"Not even Evil Leafy." Bomby acknowledged, munching on his fruit (a/n : ARE BANANAS A BERRY? IM PRETTY SURE THEYRE BERRIES??????? I'm boutta have a crisis are they BERRIES).

"They had to be out there though! Maybe we were just *too* stealthy.."

"No, they had to be out there. We passed a hot spot! And neither of the two were there."

"Something's going on then..." Nickel tutted. They continued to walk down the pathway, and after a few minutes, they walked by a area that was thriving with the most colorful and vibrant flowers the three had ever seen; common flowers such as roses, sunflowers and tulips danced within the air, and ones that shined proudly from the beams of the sun stood out to them, not knowing what types of flowers they were.

"Who's garden IS this?" Nickel said, bewildered at the glowing area of life, which was surrounded by dull trees and a pathway that led down some sort of hill. He approached the small entrance, and began to observe the swaying flowers, astonished by the colors, the scents, and the auras that radiated from the section.

"Probably Fries's; you know how he was planting those potatoes or whatever?" Bomby replied, taking another bite from the banana.

"No way! He was planting those by his place, remember?"

"Well, What if he made another garden?"

"He doesn't even like to garden, he seemed grumpy when he was digging everything up last time!"

"He's always grumpy!"

"What about Pin?" Spongy suggested, kicking his leg a tiny bit. "Doesn't she like plants?"

"True..."

"Well, maybe it was her! She may be bossy-"

"And a bitch." Bomby tutted. Nickel sighed.

"Well, she may be whatever, but one things for sure; she sure has a passion for this kind of stuff." Nickel plucked a small buttercup from a bush, and held it; continuing the journey back to the city.

"I wonder how everyone's doing back there." Spongy sighed out. "It's been a while since we saw everyone."

"They probably forgot about us by now!" Bomby put a hand on his head. "What if they panic?!"

"Relax, relax. They haven't forgotten about us you dum-dum." Nickel patted his back gently. "And if they did, it's all your fault."

"NICKEL!"

"I'm kidding, I'm kidding!" He laughed out.

"One things for sure, I'm not ready to sleep through screaming again." Spongy stepped through the two. "I liked sleeping in the peace and quiet."

"Oh, right...Aw, man. Now I'm gonna lose sleep."

"He can't light my fuse, and I'd like to keep it that way!"

"Ugh..whatever."

Silence hung over the three as they continued to walk away from the garden, beginning to enter the darkness of the woods. Time continued to fly by; their long journey slowly coming to an end. Now, the three were prepared to deal with what was ahead of them; Bomby had his bananas, Nickel could hopefully get some sleep, and Spongy could finally rest.

Why did they send him with the two in the first place?

Eh, who cares. It was too late to complain about it now, and what's done is done; let it stay in the past where it belongs.

The journey was fairly quiet, but the three had gotten to know each other better. Spongy wasn't the gross and useless contestant that everybody said he was; Nickel had a childlike imagination and just wanted to have fun...and Bomby just liked bananas. They were his number one go-to food for...any situation. Don't get them wrong; there were plenty of arguments, but they managed through them peacefully. And now, they were headed back to the city; where the competitions would soon thrive, and relationships would flourish once more.

The three walked by the area where Woody was found dead, and noticed a few flowers laying on the area where he was found. Nickel raised an eyebrow.

"Okay...this is getting a bit fishy." He mumbled, staring at the flowers that were placed upon a darkened stain. "What's with all of the flowers?"

"Maybe Pin really likes them, I dunno!" Bomby replied.

"Well, I don't think it's normal for someone to just place a bunch of them here in the woods.."

"And in the darkest part of the woods! The sun can barely peek through here!"

"Then how are they alive? Don't they need sunlight to survive, or whatever?" Nickel looked back up towards the two, leaning against a tree. Bomby shrugged.

"Beats me!"

"Maybe something happened there." Spongy acknowledged, eyeing the darkened spot beneath the flowers. "Only reason why anyone would put flowers anywhere is to show respect."

"Oh, come on Spongy, we know that everyone has been very careful to try not to die out here! The Recovery centers are broken, after all.."

"But Maybe something happened. Something, unexpected?"

"Bubble probably popped again." Bomby moved a few of the flowers. "But this...stain is too dark for it to be Bubble's liquid."

"Stain?" Nickel walked towards him, and let his glance turn towards the stain on the ground. But before he could give any second thought, the sound of someone yelling soon began to echo through out the forest. Chills crawled down Nickel's body, as he turned back towards the two.

"Hide. HIDE!" He yelled towards them. The three suddenly scattered;

Nickel dived headfirst into a bush, Bomby his behind a thick tree, and Spongy simply laid as flat as he could in the darkness. The three stayed deathly quiet, and soon, the scream began to get louder, seemingly...rolling towards the three of them.

"soOMEOME HELP MEEEee!" The voice cried out, rushing by the spot, and beginning to get quieter and quieter. A few moments passed, before rushed footsteps began to chased after it; grunting rather...angrily.

And then...silence.

Nickel popped up from the bush, and began to look around, investigating the area to see if they were in the clear. A moment passed, until he let out a sigh.

"We're good." He called out. The other two let out a sigh of relief, as they slowly emerged from their hiding spots. Bomby tilted his head curiously.

"What was that about?"

"Probably just Tennis Ball rolling down or something. You know how clumsy he is." Nickel laughed out.

"Makes sense." Spongy responded. "But who was going after him?"

"What?"

"Didn't you hear the footsteps? Someone was running after the guy."

"Golfball."

"Oh. Makes sense." Spongy mumbled. Merely shrugging it off, the three continued to move forward, not thinking twice about what was occurring...and the mess that they would soon walk back into.

He finally stopped rolling.

He collided with a tree, slamming his back against the hard, splintery surface. He winced at the impact, as his eyes slowly dragged open.

The world around him was spinning; he couldn't even sit up straight, resulting in him collapsing onto the ground below. He grunted dizzily, until he saw the figure slowly making its way towards him.

Pin.

"G-..Get AWAY from me..!" Tennis Ball mumbled, feeling tears beginning to prick at his eyes. Pin clenched her trowel hard, as she slowly approached the figure.

"Why should I. I need you. I needed her." She whispered.

"F-FOR WHAT?!"

"My garden."

"Th-Then why did you KILL HER?!" Tennis Ball was crying now. He could feel the tears slick down his face, as anger pounded through his veins. Pin simply stared; a vacant expression on her face.

"I needed her legs." She replied. "And now, I need yours."

"WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS?!" He screamed out, his voice suddenly breaking. She simply smiled...a sickening smile taunting Tennis Ball. She began to approach him, slowly walking around him as if he was her prey. She cleared her throat.

"You miss her, don't you?" She sneered. "She's only been gone for minutes now, and you're already as broken as the vase back in the science museum! And oh, I placed her in the right spot..."

She sighed. "Unfortunately, I didn't get to know much about the little scientist, so I didn't get to know why she was so afraid of the place."

"A-And what did YOU want to know about her, you-"

"Monster. I'm used to it, Tennis Ball. But, I was intrigued as to why Golfball was so...hesitant to go into the museum with you. At first I thought she was joking with you...but hearing her tear up? That was definitely new. And so, I wanted to investigate..." She pointed her trowel towards him.

"Tell me why she acted that way...and I'll let you leave. I'll let you roam around the city, somberly as you miss your dear, little 'girlfriend'."

"Or what." Tennis Ball tutted.

"You end up like everyone else who suddenly faced their untimely death!"

"Oh...like Fries's?"

Pin paused.

"..What."

"Oh, how about Coiny's? Would you like me to end up like him, Pin?"

She clenched the trowel, as she angrily stomped over towards him. "Shut it." She growled.

"Or what? You'll stab me?"

"YOU KNOW I FUCKING WILL!" She screamed out, pressing the tool against him He didn't dare to put up a fight; instead, he stared at her, a glimmer of anger shining in his eyes.

"Now, you tell me, or you GET IT."

"No." Tennis Ball replied, numbly. "I won't."

"AND WHY IS THAT."

"Well, she didn't even tell me in the first place. And even if she did, I wouldn't dare tell anyone else about what happened to her..." He paused. "Even...if she was dead."

Pin raised the trowel angrily, before sighing out in frustration. She rubbed her temples, as she began to pace around the bigger figure.

"So, she didn't have the audacity to tell you?"

"Yes."

"Why?"

"Pin, can you just cut to the chase and kill me already." He looked towards her. "At least, if I get killed, I'll be with her."

Pin stared at him, disbelief painted all over her face...until a giggle escaped her lips.

And then, laughter.

She bursted into laughter, wrapping her arm around her stomach. The concept of that seemed hilarious to her; she simply couldn't handle it!

"Aw, that was so sad! Do you think I care about how you feel?" Pin guffawed, staring him down.

"Well, yes. You're trying to appeal to my emotions, just to get what you want." He shrugged. "I'm not stupid, Pin."

She raised her eyebrow, as she began slowly walk around him. "Well, are you just gonna keep living on without her then? Or would you like me to do the honors for you?" She raised the trowel, brandishing it within his face. She smiled, as his eyes began to follow the trowel; waving it very closely to his face, she traced it along his cheek, winking.

"So? What will it be, big guy? You could have a one-way ticket to see your beloved little scientist again...or, you could continue to live on, go tell everyone about me...and live out the rest of your days like the loner you were really meant to be."

Silence. Tennis Ball's eyes were fixated on the trowel, and after a few seconds, his gaze slowly moved upwards towards the smiling figure that stared intensely at him. He took a deep breath, before he slowly

stood up from his spot. Pin grinned...

Before a slap suddenly echoed through the woods.

Pin's head jerked towards the side, the stinging sensation from the slap permeating through her cheek. She could feel her cheek swelling up a bit, as she slowly turned her head to face the figure. Tennis Ball stared down at her, shaking his head slightly.

"I'm not gonna fall into your dirty little hands, Pin." He began to walk forward. "I'm going to live. And as long as I do, I'm making a recovery center, and were gonna put you back in your place."

"You little-"

"You're never going to get away with this. And I don't think you want to mess with me; I think I'll just make a quick stop towards the Freesmarters and let them know about the situation." He smirked. "Besides, they were able to catch you, and bound you down not too long ago."

"No, NO NO NO!" Pin screamed out, clenching her trowel and swinging it towards the larger figure. "YOU-"

Before she could respond, Tennis Ball crashed against her, hurling her back towards the ground. She coughed in pain, feeling her wound on her side throb painfully. Tennis Ball walked past her; not batting an eye towards her.

"Its over Pin. Just accept it." He turned away. "You won't be hurting anyone else around here anymore."

Suddenly, a sharp pain bursted from his back, as he stumbled forward. He felt something digging into his back, as his legs suddenly gave out; sending him tumbling back down towards the woods. Pin simply watched; a grin plastered onto her face.

WHAT ARE YOU DOING?! GO GET HIM!

No.

PLEASE, HE'S GOING TO-

What? Just watch.

She walked forward, and soon came across the withering body of Tennis Ball, as he attempted to reach back and yank out the trowel from his back. Pin smiled.

"Oh my pin factory! Let me help you out!"

"N-No, WAIT-"

Pin clenched the trowel on his back, and with all of her might, she yanked it out. Blood suddenly squirted all over her, as she began to stab the trowel into his back once more. He let out a scream of anguish; but Pin didn't care.

"*HELP!*"

She continued to stab him..

"*HELP ME*!"

Over..

"*H-..Help...*"

And over..,

"*G-..Golf..ball...?*"

And over...

"I-..*is...that....you....*"

.....

Some time had passed, before she suddenly noticed that his back was now cut open; revealing his innards, blood poured out and onto the blades of grass below him. She blinked, and the only noise that filled her ears...

Was quiet.

---

wow golly gee, here we are

the science duo? they're mf gone

But hello!!! I' hope you enjoy this part of fear garden! Im very...sleepy? n like i said in the other thing, i wrote some songs n i am too scared to share it but I'm gonna (even tho they suck aaa)

But!!!!! THE BOYS ARE BACK

THEY HAD TO GET BANAN'

sorry that was a poor excuse but here we are.....theyre back...and one of them will have a important part to the story...

anyways, enough of me rambling....

enjoy. :)

~ice

Time For A KNOCKOUT!

"GOLFBALL!" Pencil's voice echoed through out the city. She continued to walk down the sidewalk, looking for the tiny scientist and her big friend. Her hand was intertwining with Match's, who was looking around for any signs of the two. Bubble, Ruby, Ice Cube and Book quickly followed behind; no longer feeling safe in their own clubhouse.

"It's so...quiet." Match whispered, her eyes gazing around the abandoned city. "I don't think it's ever been this quiet.."

Pencil opened her mouth, but she couldn't find the words to describe...why it was so quiet. A heavy aura filled the air as they walked passed a house that formally belonged to Flower...until the alliance had let her stay with them, of course.

Ruby looked down. She didn't need any reminders.

Book noticed her, and gently put an arm around the gem, squeezing her slightly. Ruby lifted her head up somberly, a saddened smile growing on her face.

The team continued to walk, until a sigh finally broke the silence.

"I don't thoink anyone's here now.." Bubble acknowledged. "It's just...too quiet."

"Bubble, you're, like, overreacting. Maybe they're just in the lab!" Match replied.

"But even so, we'd at loist hear something, but so far, I haven't heard oinything!"

"Well, Maybe they're off in that..museum, thing?"

Pencil nodded. "That's right! The science museum! Maybe they're...there!"

"Guys, can't we just...y'know...figure out a way to make the teleporter charge faster? I don't think Golfball would like-"

"Relax, Book." Pencil waved her hand towards her. "We're just going to see if she has anything that could try to break through those walls."

"W-Well, yes, but-"

"Hush, Book. It's, like, going to be ok!" Match winked towards the anxious figure. Book simply rolled her eyes, as they continued to walk once more. The stinging silence burned through the air, as Pencil looked around.

"Hmm...aha! There it is!" She turned around to face the rest of the group. "So, we can either check in the museum first, or we can check in the lab to see if they're there!"

"Why don't we split up?" Ice Cube suggested. Pencil shook her head.

"Too risky. We have to stick together."

"Then why don't we check here first? We're already here, and if they aren't here, we could head to the lab and check!"

Pencil tapped her chin in thought, before she looked around towards the team.

"Well...Maybe we can check here first? And then head to the lab.." she mumbled.

"But what will we do if they aren't there?" Ruby acknowledged, squeezing Book's arm gently. Pencil sighed.

"Then we just have to figure out what we can do..."

The team exchanged glances of concern, before Match stepped forward.

"Not to sound like a downer here, but, like, what if they were murdered too..?"

Silence.

That is, until a giggle escaped Pencil's lips.

"Match, It's okay, the two are really really REALLY clever. I'm sure that they've come up with a way to protect themselves from any harm that could come their way."

Match gave her a worried look, before her glance slowly turned towards the ground. Pencil gently lifted her hand, and placed it on her cheek, rubbing it comfortingly.

"Hey..It's gonna be okay, alright? No one's dying on my watch.." She giggled slightly. Match let her eyes close, as she felt the comforting warmth of Pencil's hand on her cheek. Pencil smiled, before she leaned in, and let her lips touch hers. She let their lips interlock; Match slowly sinking into the kiss. This lasted for a few moments, before Book cleared her throat.

"Uh, hope you don't mind, but we have a scientist to find.." She spoke out, awkwardly. Pencil's eyes opened, before she gently broke herself off of the kiss. A wobbly smile was left on Match's face, as Pencil turned back around.

"Alright, l-lets go look." She mumbled, stepping forward. Though, as she did, she felt a sharp pebble stab into her foot. She winced, a quiet yelp suddenly bursting through her lips. The others stared at her with a confused expression.

"Are..you okay?" Ruby asked her.

"J-Just stepped on a rock."

"Rock? Pencil..." Ice Cube whispered. "I-I don't think thats a rock.."

"What?" Pencil looked down, and felt her body go cold.

It was a tooth.

Pencil stumbled back, wiping her foot against the pavement of the sidewalk in disgust. Match slowly walked towards the deteriorated doors of the museum, before she turned back towards the alliance.

"What are you doing? Come on.." She whispered, a hint of fear growing in her voice. The others hesitantly made their way behind the taller figure, before they slowly made their way inside of the museum.

There was barely any sunlight that poured into the room, but the smell that loomed in the air of the place made the freesmarters cringe.

"Ugh! What is that?" Pencil gagged out, slowly turning away in disgust. Bubble shook her head, slowly turning away, completely grossed out by the stench.

"Smell's like something died in here!"

"P-Pencil-"

"What?" Pencil turned towards Ruby angrily, not bothering to noticed the horrified expression on her face.

"Look..!"

Pencil turned her head...

There laid Golfball. pools of blood surrounded her, as a large, gaping hole on her head oozed with blood. The hole revealed her swelling innards; her eyes were still wide, once filled with fear..and now, cold and lifeless. Her mouth was slightly ajar, blood trickling down her chin and cheek. Her legs were surprisingly still in tact, unlike the other...bodies that they've heard about.

Silence filled the room once more...

Until a scream suddenly shattered it; that scream, coming from Ice Cube.
And soon, more and more began to echo through out the crumbling walls of the museum...

"Where did Firey go? It's strangely quiet..." Nickel sighed out, looking back up towards the Yoyle Needy. Bomby shrugged slightly, a nervous feeling suddenly filling in his chest.

"Maybe..they got him down..?" he whispered.

"Then where is everyone..?"

"Maybe they're inside! They have to be!"

"Uh...Guys..?"

The sudden voice made the three jump, as they turned around and noticed a figure standing behind them...

It was Pin.

She stepped forward from a shadow that casted over her, and stared at the three; her eyes emotionless, tired...and cold.

"Oh my banks! Don't ever do that AGAIN!" Nickel sighed out, catching his breath.

"Sorry."

"What happened to you? Is everything..okay?" Bomby whispered, staring fearfully at the stains that covered her.

It was red.

Red, and brown.

She slowly gazed down at her body, then lifted her head back up to face the three.

"I just had a hassle with a plant in my garden. Its just mud."

"Then whats with the blood?" Spongy chimed in.

Silence.

"Wait, let me put in my five scents." Nickel stepped forward. "You got pelted with...tomatoes, by Fries? You always bother him."

"Or you *murdered* him, haha!" Bomby jokingly added. Nickel tutted.

"Oooh, maybe she'll get YOU next! Hahaha!"

"No way! If anything, she'd get YOU!"

"Get you head out of the gutter, woul-"

"Shut up!" Spongy stepped in between the two, tired of hearing their little dispute. Nickel giggled a bit, before he turned back towards Pin, clearing his throat.

"Well? What happened over here?"

Pause.

"I bashed Golfball's head in with a display case, and stabbed Tennis Ball in the back until I could see his innards." She replied, numbly.

At first, the three rolled their eyes and began to laugh at the sudden sentence. But after they noticed her deadpan expression, their laughter soon began to quiet down. Bomby slowly took a step back, his eyes locked onto Pin's.

"A-Are you...serious..?" he stuttered out fearfully. Pin nodded.

"Everyone is gone. Because of me."

The three stared at her, their eyes now widened out of pure fear and horror.

PIN, WHAT IS THE MATTER WITH YOU?! END THIS, NOW!

You can wait.

WHAT ARE YOU PLANNING TO DO?! I'M TELLING YOU TO-

Stop. I know. But...just let me handle this, won't you?

It's what you would've wanted anyways.

Pin began to walk forward towards the three, clenching the trowel tightly in her hand. A sly smile slowly spread across her face, as she shrugged slightly.

"But, it was all the garden."

"Th-The what..." Nickel whispered, his face suddenly going pale. Pin giggled, before she slowly walked towards him.

What are you-

Raising the trowel in the air, she brought it against his head with all of her might, and slammed it against him. A loud bang echoed through out the air, and Nickel collapsed onto the ground, blood beginning to trickle down the back of his head. She then turned towards the two figures, who were quickly beginning to step away from her. She grinned.

She flung her trowel towards Spongy, watching it as it stabbed through the side of his body. He collapsed onto the ground, as Pin sprinted towards Bomby, who was now running away from the nightmare that began to unfold before him. But Pin wasn't going to let that happen.

She angrily grabbed him by his fuse, and, with one swift blow, hit his head against the pavement. He jolted for a moment, before his body came to a rest on the sidewalk;

Knocked out.

Pin cracked her knuckles slyly, before she walked back over to where Spongy was slowly standing back up; the trowel stuck out from his

back, as he began to make a final escape for it.

But suddenly, Pin began to run towards him at full speed, grabbing the sides of the top of his soft body. She waited for a second; using all of her force, she began to tear Spongy in half, blocking out the screams that erupted from his mouth. She continued to pull him apart..

Until, finally, the two halves of his body collapsed onto the ground. She jumped slightly on his soft, corpse; yanking out the trowel from his back, before she slowly sat on the pavement below, finally grasping the moment where she could catch her breath.

Stop...

What?

I-...I'm begging you, please stop...

Why? Are you scared?

You're taking all of this-

Too far? Huh? Am I taking it, "too far"?! Last time I checked, you were the one forcing ME to begin this dream that I once called a nightmare!

You murdered him. You murdered him. You broke Rule 11. We established that rule so you would-

I WOULD'VE BROKEN THAT RULE ANYWAY! And you KNOW it! And now, look at me! I'm perfectly fine without *him*! It's just like you've always said, 'don't get too attached now!'

I miss him! Don't you miss him?! He loved you, for pin factories sake!

Oh, boohoo. What are you gonna do about it? He's gone, and theres simply nothing we can do.

...

Hello? You still in there?!

....

Ugh, whatever. You were always so annoying.

Pin slowly stood up, as she looked back down at the three. She knew that they were already back; who could possibly miss the bright and obnoxious yellow shade that Spongy had?

Well, whatever. No time to think now.

It's time to get to work.

"Pencil, this is a bad idea. They-"

"THEY KNOW WHERE WE ARE. WE'RE NOT LIVING THERE ANYMORE."

Pencil shoved all of the supplies she had in a bag, and quickly shut the cabinet. Tears threatened to spill down her cheeks, as fear gripped at her chest. She couldn't breathe; the realization that they were the only ones left stung in a harsh way.

Match stood beside her, grabbing a few blankets from the room and carrying them in her arms.

"B-But what if they find us? We have no where to go.." Match mumbled, wiping her eyes. Pencil looked towards her, and shook her head.

"No. I'm not letting anything happen to you."

"Pencil..."

Match wrapped her arms around the taller figure, sniffling quietly. Pencil kissed her forehead, before she lifted the bag into her arms.

"Lets head out."

"But what about Bubble and Ice Cube?"

"They know where to find us. Just...let them have their moment with the others. We won't be going out until we can stop the murderer."

"Don't you mean Pin." Match mumbled.

Pencil stopped in her tracks, before her eyes darkened with fury. She nodded slowly, turning back to face her girlfriend.

"Yes. I meant Pin. We're going to end this, for good. I promise."

Meanwhile, Ruby was holding the photograph in her hands. Her tired eyes gazed towards Flower; her smile still bright, and her face...still as beautiful as she could remember. Her eyes began to fill with tears, as she gently placed the photograph into her small back. Book stood beside her, helping Ruby pack her belongings as well, before she began to notice her somber like movements.

"Hey." She said, softly. Ruby looked up.

Book gave her a kind smile, leaning in and giving her forehead a gentle kiss. Ruby couldn't help but smile; the feeling of safety filling the atmosphere around them. She knew that Book would keep her safe...

She loved her.

"So...you're leaving." The heaviness in Fanny's tone made Bubble wince.

"N-No, we aren't, we just have to stay with our team! She's out there, and she's already killed everyone we knoiw!"

"But why are you going with them. Aren't they mean to you?!"

Bubble paused. A silence hung over the two, until subtle sniffling began to slither through the air. She looked up, concern beginning to eat away at her.

"Fanny..?"

"Wh-What." Fanny's voice broke.

"Oh no, Fanny, please don't cry.." Bubble whispered, gently placing a hand on the cold, metal wall. Fanny sniffed angrily, before she looked back up.

"You better be careful out there, Bubble. Don't let them mess with you.."

"I won't Fanny, I won't, but please, don't cry.."

"I HATE CRYING!"

A small giggle escaped Bubble's lips, before she gently patted the wall.

"Stay strong for me, ok...? I'll visit...well...every two doiys, with Oicey..."

"Every..two days..?"

"That's when we can.."

A silence hung over the two.

"...Alright. Be careful out there, Bubble..don't let anyone mess with you."

"I won't, Fanny..I won't.."

"I..."

She paused. What was she going to say..?

"I-"

"I LOVE YOU ICY!"

Bubble jumped at the sudden tone. Fanny growled.

"I HATE YOU!"

"IT'S OKAY! I STILL LOVE ICY! AND ICY LOVES ME!"

Ice Cube laughed a bit, gently brushing her foot against the wall. She

looked back towards Bubble, nodding her head towards her. She then turned back, taking in a shaky breath.

"I..loive you too Fanny. I'll see you soon.."

Quiet.

Although she couldn't see it...

She could tell that Fanny was smiling.

Slightly...but still.

---

and I OOP

hello everyone

were back,,,n tired

but. i hope you all enjoyed this part, we have the gays.....

n deaths.....

n more gay! how about that

Hahaha

i should stop writing not gonna lie here im tired of all the shit I get for writing

enjoy

~ ice

Memories, Galore

"Pin? What are you doing?" He laughed out. She threw her arms around him, a feeling of glee rushing through her veins.

"I love you so much, you goof!" She exclaimed. This made his cheeks glow with blush, as he glanced down at the figure.

"O-oh! I, uh- I-"

"Oh, hush!" Pin looked back up, a brightened grin shining on her face. She leaned in, and let her lips lock onto his, as she felt his arms carefully wrap around her body. A few moments passed, before they broke apart, gently cuddling each other within their arms.

"Yeesh, would you Cut the sappy stuff already? It's making me sick." The scientist stepped forward.

"Oh come on, you have TB! Don't you love him?"

"Are you kidding me?! Of course I do!" The scientist walked over to her big friend, who gave her a kind smile. He stood by the rock, who looked up at the taller figures with joy; a childlike happiness shining in his eyes.

"TB GB SITTIN IN A TREE, K-I-S-S-"

"SHUT UP!"

"Calm down, you two." The crisp walked through, his arms crossed in a parental manner. "You can fight at another time; I have enough to deal with."

"Which is why you need to rest.." the fluff came flying by, giving him a gentle cuddle before she floated up. The jello walked beside him, placing a arm on the crisp.

"How about we have some-"

"Fries?" Fries muttered out, gently patting the jello's head. Jello nodded happily.

"We could go for some too!" The tall chimed in, holding the hand of the quiet. She nodded in agreement, and the crisp sighed.

"Alright, alright, fries for everyone, then!"

"Nice!"

"Hmm, I'll take some fries.." the beautiful turned towards the group, gently brushing her hand through her soft, pink petals. She giggled slightly.

"What about you, huh?" Jello patted the anxious's back, as they gave him a kind smile; nodding in response.

Soon, the bright and the burning came through, their hands intertwined together. The bright's eyes were looking around, as she slowly drank in the wonderful feelings that surrounded her. The burn smiled, and gave her hand a gentle kiss; a puff of steam rising from her hand.

The burning then turned back around, and his eyes locked onto hers; blazing..

But before the burning could do anything, he suddenly let out a laugh, as he threw an arm around her. She smiled; sinking into the warmth of his arms. He leaned in, and gave her forehead a gentle kiss, a smile as bright as day painted onto his face.

"Pin.."

"Yeah..?"

He closed his eyes. Soon, everyone was now staring towards Her. Tears began to pour down their faces, as their bodies began to deteriorate. The jello's hands fell clean off; the burning began to cry out tears of blood. The tall's neck began to turn purple, as the silent's mouth began to pour down blood. Wounds began to slowly cut through Him, as he leaned into Pin's ear.

"Run."

Their eyes opened;

Red.

With rage.

Pin woke up.

She gently patted the silky, red sheets that she was curled into. She turned slightly, expecting the comforting presence and embrace from him. She expected to feel his arm softly wrap around her, and she'd giggle...
Just like how things used to be.

Her eyes slowly dragged open...

Nobody.

Tears slowly began to burn at her eyes, before she shook her head angrily.

No tears. Nothing.

We're going to work.

She dragged herself out of her bed, tossing the covers back onto her pillows. She rubbed her eyes sleepily, as she made her way back into the living room.

"Morning, you two."

Nickel and Bomby both stared at her, their eyes widened in pure

terror. They began to thrash around, attempting to free themselves from the ropes that held them down, and bound against the chairs. She yawned slightly, as she walked towards the kitchen.

Still a mess.

She grabbed a few yoylegrapes (a/ n: they have other fruit but we addin 'yoyle' in front of each one oop), that laid inside of the fruit bowl, and popped a few into her mouth. She bit into them, as the sweet and tangy juice began to melt into her tongue. She walked back towards the doorway, a smug look beginning to form on her face as she stared towards the struggling figures.

"Funny; you try so hard, but you simply can't get free." Pin mumbled, walking towards the two. "It's a bit cute, actually."

Nickel tried to speak, but his words were muffled through the cloth that silenced him. She rolled her eyes, before she walked over towards him, yanking it off of his head. He coughed slightly.

"Wh-Why are you DOING THIS?!" He screamed out. "What happened to you?!"

"What happened to me?" She laughed slightly. "Well...nothing, surprisingly. I'm the same Pin you once knew...but only now, you will have a perfect use for me."

"What..?"

"Oh, let me explain." She walked back towards a small stand, and grabbed the trowel that sat on the top. She turned back towards the two, her eyes gazing over towards Bomby.

"Ever since we moved down here...I've been having some strange...dreams, per say." She began to walk towards Bomby. "These dreams were...scary...very scary...but soon, I began to realize how I would feel in the dream."

"And what was the dream..?" Nickel whispered.

"It was just a garden." She grinned, as she grabbed Bomby's arm. She tightened her grip, as Bomby began to thrash around in fear. With

her other hand, she gripped the trowel; poised it over his wrist, as she began to lift it up.

"Wh-What are you doing..?"

Pin smiled, as she turned back towards Nickel.

"Only following my dream.."

Suddenly, she slammed the sharpened edge of her trowel into his wrist; blood spurted out from the cut, as Bomby's screams began to erupt through the cloth that attempted to silence him. She turned the trowel slightly, and began to dig, each movement becoming more harsher, and harsher. Blood began to spray through the air that surrounded her; some stained her face, and some drops even made its way over to Nickel.

His face was pale; eyes full of fear, as he couldn't do anything but watch as Bomby withered and screamed out in pain.

She continued to cut through, until a sudden crunch scratched itself through the air. This made Bomby jolt, before a loud, pained howl managed to break through the muffles of the cloth.
Must've broke through the bone.

A few moments passed, before Bomby's hand fell flat onto the floor below them, twitching slightly. Blood poured out of Bomby's arm, as his face was quickly beginning to lose its color. Pin happily grabbed his bloodied hand off of the ground, as she dangled it in front of Nickel's face. Droplets of blood splattered onto his legs, as a sickening smile spread onto Pin's face.

"This.." she began. "This is what my garden needs...the hands! The hands is what gives my garden the most life it could possibly get!"

"B-BUT YOU'RE KILLING HIM TO GET IT!" Nickel cried out. Pin giggled.

"So? I've gotten used to it by now."

"YOU WHAT?!"

"Where do you think everyone is? Why do you think Firey's screams are now silenced? Why don't you see the duo and their little friend walking around anymore? I'll tell you why.." she traced her hand over her trowel. "I killed them all."

"Wh- Why...I.." Nickel

"Like I said...I'm following my dream." She smiled, as she began to wipe the blood off of the trowel. Nickel stared at the ground, his eyebrows furrowed together in anger. A heavy silence hunger over the three...

"What happened to Coiny?"

"What?"

"Did you kill him too..?" Nickel looked up. "Did you kill your boyfriend?"

"Well, I-"

"Oh, who am I kidding..." Nickel tutted angrily. "You must've. And you never knew how much he loved you."

"I-I did know how much he loved me..! He-"

"Really? You killed him, and cut off his hands, and yet, you say you love him?" He shook his head. "I don't think you-"

"Shut up." Pin muttered, clenching the trowel in her hands.

"I'm only saying the truth. Do you think he loves you? Do you think he's out there, watching you and thinking to himself, 'gosh, I know she didn't mean to, I still love her with all of my heart'?" He clenched his teeth. "Guess what; he isn't. He's gone; and if he's out there, he is definitely not wishing the best for you."

Silence.

Pin slowly turned around to face him, a hint of red tinting in her eyes. She gazed over towards Bomby once more, noticing how his breaths were becoming more weaker and shallow. His movements

were now subtle, as he weakly opened his eyes to face her once more.

She began to walk towards him, grabbing his other hand angrily. He began to shake his head rapidly, muffling out cries of help and begs of mercy. Nickel's eyes widened.

"Wait, WAIT, DON'T DO IT! PIN!" He screamed.

Pin didn't listen. Instead, she drove the trowel into his wrist once more; blood beginning to ooze down and gush out of his wound. His screams became quieter; losing gallons of blood, he could feel his heart slowing down. Nickel was screaming at Pin; begging for her to stop.

But she couldn't listen.

She could feel the blood ooze onto her, as she felt the crunch of the bone. His body twitched violently, as she dug deeper into the bone...

Moments passed, before his hand collapsed back onto the ground. Blood poured down from his wound, as Pin turned back around to face Nickel.

"Bomby..." his voice broke, watching as Bomby's movements began to slow down in total. Pin rolled her eyes, as she stood over him, a grin spreading on her face.

"Next one up, please..."

"We're stuck."

"What?"

"We're STUCK HERE!" Pencil screamed out, frantically looking through the glass window. "I-I forgot about the glue!"

"Can't we just break off of it?!" Ice Cube cries out.

"No! I-I've tried!"

"UGH! Ruby, this is ALL YOUR FAULT!" Match screamed out, her face beginning to turn red. "NOW WERE GOING TO DIE!"

"Match-"

"I HOPE YOUR READY TO SEE FLOWER AGAIN, BITCH!" She began to move towards the back of the van. Ruby scuttled back; cries of fear filling the van. Book quickly stepped in front of her, holding her arms out in defense as Match began to approach them. Before she could make the final leap, Pencil reaches out, calmly placing a hand on Match's arm.

"Match.." Pencil whispered. "Please...."

Match scoffed.

"PENCIL! WE'RE IN DANGER! IF WE CAN'T LEAVE, W-WE'RE GONNA..-" she sniffed. "WE'RE GONNA-"

"Please.." Pencil looked back up, tears shining through her tired eyes. Match paused, gritting her teeth angrily, before she slowly sat back down into her seat. Silence filled the van for a good while, before Bubble lifted her head up.

"Wh-What are we gonna do..?" She mumbled. Pencil turned back, quickly wiping her eyes before she looked back up.

"There's nothing we can do...but stay here."

"What..?"

"We're not going back to the clubhouse. That would be the first place Pin looks. And she wouldn't expect us to be in here; this thing is held down by glue."

"What if she does find us, Pencil?!" Match cried out, tears now pouring down her cheeks. "I-I'm scared, I'm so scared!"

"Shh.." Pencil embraced the sobbing figure, gently rubbing her back as she held her closely and tightly. Book held Ruby in her arms, as she stared down at the bottom of the van. Sniffling and cries reverberated through her mind....

No more.

Book angrily stood up, and began to grab the sheets that were placed on the seats. She began to place them over the windows, sticking them on and blocking any sunlight that would enter through the tinted windows. Pencil looked up, and watched as the figure began to fix out the van.

"What are you.."

"No more." Book mumbled, turning back to face the group. "No more deaths. No more blood. From now on, we stay here. We have everything we need, and all we have to do is stay quiet."

"But the windows are already tinted enough.." Ice Cube chimed in. "Why are you covering them up?"

"Pin could look in here, and find our
silouhettes. It's better for her to look at total darkness, instead of shadows."

"A-And the doors..?"

"We lock them."

"What if she knows we're in here..?" Ruby sniffed out. Book looked around, before she angrily grabbed a knife from her bag that she had brought along.

"We fight back. I'm not letting any of you die."

Everyone exchanged nervous glances, as Bubble spoke out once more.

"What about Fanny..? Bracelety..? And the night..?"

"...I don't think you can go out anymore. It's too risky."

"No!" Ice Cube cried out. "I didn't- I didn't even get to say goodbye to her!"

"ENOUGH." Book shut her eyes, forcing the tears that welled up in her eyes back. "Listen to me, we are in danger. I'm sorry, but we can't risk losing you two."

"Why can't we moike a plan?"

"Bubble-"

"Me and Oicey go out, and if Pin foinds us, we..we run back to the clubhouse! She'll think we're all hiding there, but we run out, and make it back here!"

"Bubble...that's a bad idea."

"How about we bring our own weapons?" Ice Cube yelled out. "If she finds us, we attack!"

Book rubbed her temples in a frustrated manner, before she glanced back towards Pencil. Pencil simply watched, before she looked towards Book.

"I don't know...Book's right, we can't afford to lose you two."

"Can't WE VISIT THEM JUST ONE LAST TOIME?!" Bubble screamed out. "FANNY WAS THE ONLY ONE WHO EVER MADE ME FEEL HOIPPY! AND I-I CAN'T LEAVE WITHOUT SAYING GOODBYE!"

Silence.

"...I'll go with them." Match looked up, wiping her eyes.

"Match, No-"

"I'm going." She looked towards Pencil. "I...I don't want them to leave them in the dust like that. They have to.."

Pencil looked towards Bubble and Ice Cube, And then back towards

Match, shaking her head.

"Match, please.."

"I can handle it.." she whispered, gently leaning in and giving her a kiss. Pencil wrapped her arms around her girlfriend, holding her closely as she returned the kiss.

"...It's settled then. Get ready, you three; you leave at noon."

New York tomorrow baby!!!!!

hello everyone, im back! and were doin good ;

Anyways.....gay! gay? gay.

Bomby's hands are gone...can I get a F for my man Bomby?

Anyways, enjoy this next part!

gniwodahserof howjfksnbsbd

~ice :)

No More Amends

"Is everything okay Match..?" Bubble asked, as the three began to make their way towards the TLC. Match shrugged slightly; hesitant to answer the question.

"I'm just...scared, I guess." Match mumbled underneath her breath. "It's all, like, too much... just think about it..! We're the only ones left here in the city.."

Bubble and Ice Cube stared at each other in shock, the realization that they were the only survivors left...hitting them hard. Match wiped her eyes, as she rubbed her arms gently.

"But, like...I don't want to lose you guys. I can't lose you guys. I'd rather die, than..."

"Match, please.." Ice Cube whispered, stepping beside the taller figure. "We're going to make it.."

"Well, what if we don't..? Like...we expected TB and GB to survive..they were smart...but look! They're dead!"

"They were out, they must've been separated from each other from running! And we're together, and I think six against one is a good-"

"It doesn't matter if there's, like, a MILLION of us. If Pin could wipe EVERYONE off of Yoylecity, then, like, she could get us like THAT!"

"But remember how we got to her? Don't you remember how we managed to capture her and hold her down, for days?"

"Ice Cube."

"We could try to do that-"

"Coiny is dead. What could we use against her?!"

The three began to enter the darkest parts of the woods, the thickened branches entangling through out the atmosphere and blocking the beams of sunlight from entering the path. A shiver quickly crawled down Match's spine, as she began to move closer towards the other two. The silence began to sting at the three, before Bubble spoke up once more.

"..How long have you been with her?"

"What?" Match looked up.

"Pencil. How long have you two.."

"Oh.." Match began to relax, the tension in her body beginning to loosen up. "Well, like...it was long before BFDI started, heh...we were, like, best friends since we were young.."

"Really?"

"Yeah...I think we met because she was trying to play, like, a game with everyone, but no one would join her, just because she wanted to be the leader. I joined, because the look on her face just made me feel bad..." she smiled. "Who knew that, like, a small gesture like that would lead us into a long..friendship."

"And relationship!" Ice Cube chimed in. Match smiled.

"That too."

"Ooh, how I wished we could get everyone out of the TLC..." Bubble lamented. "I'd love to see Fanny.."

"I'd love to see Bracelety!"

"I'd love to see them both..." Match crossed her arms slightly. "But...we Can't. Not now. Until we can figure out a way to stop Pin, or leave, we have to-"

"Stop...me?"

The sudden voice made the three freeze. Their eyes quickly turned towards the path ahead, where the sillouhette of an object stood still.

They began to move, the darkness beginning to fade off of their body as they came closer to the three.

"Nice to know that you three are planning to do another kidnapping session..."

Pin.

She stepped forward, her body covered in fresh blood. A trowel was clenched in one of her hands; in the other...were hands.
And legs.

Match covered her mouth in pure horror, as Ice Cube and Bubble looked away in fear.

"W-What...what did you.."

"Oh. These?" She raised the disembodied limbs. "They're Bomby's And Nickel's. They came just in time for it all! My garden is nearly complete."

Match began to step back, her limbs beginning to tremble. "J-Just..just let us go, please..."

"Oh? But I thought you wanted to stop me? Or are you just scared?~" Pin smirked, as she began to slowly step closer towards the three. Ice Cube and Bubble began to step back in fear, as Match simply stood frozen; paralyzed with fear.

"Aww, you really are scared~" Pin laughed out, throwing the limbs onto the dirt path below them. "I was just like you, once...so frightened..." she leaned in. "..so helpless..~"

"Bubble, Ice Cube." Match muttered lowly. "Go."

"G-Go..?" Ice Cube whispered.

"Get out of here."

"Oh, get out? I'm sorry, but I don't think that's on MY agenda.."

Suddenly, she grabbed Match's arm, yanking her entire body forward.

Match screamed out in terror, struggling as the grip on her arm began to tighten more and more. Pin began to raise her trowel in the air, giggles escaping her lips as she watched Match struggle within her arms.

"Ah, Well...guess karma had to come back and bite you in the neck!"

"ICE CUBE, BUBBLE, RUN!"

Suddenly, the two quickly dashed away, screams of fear becoming quieter and quieter as they left the darkness of the woods. Pin raised an eyebrow, as she gripped Match's wrist more tightly.

"I never knew you cared for those two.." she uttered. Match growled, as she continued to struggle out of her grip.

"They're g-going to, like, STOP YOU!"

"Oh, really?"

"We're going to avenge, like, EVERYONE! You're a monster!"

Pin's face dropped, her eyes beginning to darken menacingly. Match suddenly stopped; fear beginning to eat at her as she saw Pin's change in attitude.

"..so..you want to play it that way, don't you.."

"No! NO NO NO NO, PLEASE NO-"

Pin brought down the trowel, and watched as it quickly sliced through Match's wrist. A scream of pain quickly erupted from her mouth, as her movements became more panicked and more stronger. Blood began to gush out of her open wound, spilling all over herself and Pin's legs. Pin laughed slightly, raising the trowel once more.

"Aw, c'mon Match, you made me miss! The less you struggle, the quicker we can get through the bone!"

She slammed the trowel into her wound once more, and Match screamed once more, blood spurting out of her mouth. Her movements suddenly began to weaken, as Pin stared down at the

struggling figure.

"You think I'm a monster? You think, I'M A MONSTER?!" She screamed out, yanking Match up onto her feet. "Oh, I'll show you how much of a monster I can BE!"

"N-No-!"

Suddenly, a knife zoomed past Pin's head, and stabbed the bark of a tree behind her. Her eyes were widened in shock, as her grip on Match began to loosen.

WOOSH.

Pin turned, and noticed the knife hurtling straight towards her. She quickly ducked, as she let go of Match's arm. She clenched her trowel tightly, as she stared into the darkness of the woods; looking for the source of those knives.

She knew.

Footsteps began to grow louder and louder.

She knew who it was.

A glimmer of silver flashed through a tiny beam of sunlight.

She knew.

"Stop It." Leafy stepped forwards, clenching the blade in her hand. "NOW."

Pin shook her head, laughing slightly.

"Or what?"

Without thinking, Leafy hurled another knife towards the figure. Pin ducked; hearing it stab into another tree.

"Do you really want to question my abilities..?" Her voice mumbled, menacingly. Pin stared at her, as she began to move closer towards her... ready to do anything to shut her up.

Match withered in pain, choking and coughing on her own blood. She cautiously moved away from the two, trying to find a way to escape and go back to her-

"Match." The voice made her pause. She turned around, and Leafy's eyes locked onto hers; a glimmer of green hinting within them.

"Run."

"Wh-What..?"

"I said RUN!" Leafy grabbed a knife, and hurled herself towards Pin. The two fell onto the ground with a cold, hard thud, as Leafy began to raise her knife into the air.

No more.

Match quickly regained her balance, as she held her bleeding wrist painfully. She quickly ran away from the two, escaping into the inky darkness of the woods.

Meanwhile, Leafy brought down the knife; Pin jerking her head to the side, watching it as it stabbed into the earth. Pin growled, as she began to rapidly slice her trowel in Leafy's direction. Leafy swiftly stood back up, scrambling towards Pin's side and kicking her with all of her might. Pin winced; biting her tongue as she wrapped her arms around herself.

Leafy jumped onto a tree, digging her nails into the bark as she clung on. She watched as Pin slowly began to sit up, her limbs trembling from the pain of the impact.

Now.

Leafy jumped down, slamming her foot against Pin's cheek. Pin cried out, the trowel slipping out of her hands as she covered her face in pain. Leafy landed onto the ground, quickly turning around and grabbing Pin. She yanked her back up, and held her head tightly.

"So...tell me, how did you kill off Firey? You pushed him off, right?"

Pin growled in response, feeling a droplet of blood trickle down her

chin. Leafy raised her eyebrow, as she clenched onto her head more tightly.

This made Pin yelp.

"Do you remember this..? Do you remember when you held a certain someone like this..?" She whispered, menacingly. "Who was it again..? Was it.."

She lifted Pin's head slightly, and slammed it against the tree; a slight crack emitting from the impact. Pin screamed, and Leafy listened carefully; her screams of pain sounding like music to her ears.

"Goodness, you sound just like Golfball.." she laughed out. She lifted her head once more, and slammed it harder against the bark. Pin screamed; the pain becoming unbearable.
Leafy rolled her eyes, the screams beginning to sound more annoying by the second. She tossed Pin onto the ground harshly, as she began to reach out for the knife she had.

"That's too quick of a death for you." She gritted through her teeth. "If I'm going to kill you, it's going to be slow and painful; avenging everyone else, you know?"

"C-Coiny.."

Leafy paused, staring back down at her.

"What?"

"Coiny..!" Pin cried out, warm tears beginning to spill down her cheeks. "Coiny, h-..help me..!"

Leafy scoffed. "Are you serious right now?"

"HELP ME..! C-COINY..!!"

"You can't be- oh my tree, you are ridiculous."

"COINY!!"

Leafy stayed silent, as she watched the figure wither down in fear

below her. She continued to scream for her dead lover, as Leafy clenched the knife tightly. She began to walk closer towards her, as her screams and movements began to die down.

"I'm sorry Pin..." she sighed out, inspecting the knife in her hands. "...but, I pray that you never see him ag-"

"C*OINY*!"

Suddenly, Pin jumped back up, swiftly moving towards Leafy and knocking the knife out of her hands. Leafy's eyes widened, as Pin smirked slightly. "Just like old times, huh..?"

And with that, she lifted her into the air, and slammed her down against the ground. Leafy wheezed; the air being knocked out of her.

Pin quickly ran back, and snatched the knife into her hands; preparing herself to finish the job.

"OH NO YOU DON'T!" Leafy screamed out, grabbing another knife and quickly stabbing it into Pin's back. Pin winced; gritting her teeth as Leafy began to stroke her cheek softly, her mouth curling into a grin.

"Oh....Hello Pin..~" she whispered. Whimpers began to escape from Pin's lips, before Leafy hushed her, tracing her finger over her cheek.

"..Miss me?~"

Her vision began to darken.

No.

Her limbs began to grow weaker.

NO.

Her eyes...

NO!

GET HER OFF!

N O W.

With all of her remaining strength, Pin turned around and angrily dug the knife into Leafy's chest; twisting it and watching the blood ooze out quickly. Leafy's eyes widened; a choked whine bubbling up her throat. Pin dug the knife more deeply into her; letting a scream of anguish come out of her. The two then slinked down onto the floor, blood beginning to pool around the two.

Pin reached back, and could feel the open wound that was soaked with blood. She winced, before she looked back down at Leafy, slowly scooping the figure into her arms.

Leafy gritted her teeth, before her eyes fluttered open, tears instantly filling them up to the brim. A awful wheeze escaped her lips, as blood began to pour out of her mouth.

"J-Just give in." Pin muttered, watching the figure die in her arms. "No ones h-here to save you."

"N-No one will be there t-to save you too." Leafy growled out, spitting blood from her mouth. Pin clenched her fists.

"What."

"N-No one will be here for you...not even when you die..." She coughed, wincing in her arms. Pin stared down at her, before Leafy glanced back up, locking her eyes with hers.

"W-Why..does it hurt.."

"What?"

"W-We used to be...friends..everyone..was your friend Pin.." She choked out. Pin's eyes began to fill with tears. "What..happened...?"

Silence. Pin shook her head, as she simply began to rock Leafy cautiously, noticing as her tension began to loosen.

"Wh-"

"Sleep..." Pin whispered. "I-...Its over, Leafy. No more

questions..Just.."

Leafy's vision began to give out. She felt a cold shiver go down her spine, as she laid closer to Pin.

"..Just sleep...go to him.."

Everything began to fade away...

"..he'll be *waiting for you.."*

....

"..Leafy?"

"F-..Firey?"

A hand slammed against the window of the Freesmart van. Pencil jumped up; her cheeks wet with tears.

"I-It's her!" She cried out.

"She found us!" Ice Cube screamed.

"Wait, Wait Wait! Don't you hear that?!" Book hushed the two, raising her hand into the air.

"Hear what?!"

"That!"

...

"P-Pencil....guys..."

The voice made Pencil gasp, as she quickly moved forward and yanked the door open. As she looked ahead, she covered her mouth in both grief, and relief;

There was Match, covered in blood...with one hand over her injured wrist. Her face was pale; but the joy returned, as she saw Pencil's face.

"MATCH!"

"Pencil.."

"Let her in!" Book yelled out. "We need to fix her wrist!"

Pencil quickly helped the taller figure inside, quickly throwing her arms around her. She held the figure tightly, sobbing into her shoulder as she cupped her hand around her face, smothering her gently with kisses.

She was alive.

That's all that matters.

She was alive.

Hey everyone

It's been. A while oop

But,,,here's the next part! Leafy dead oop

But! Match lives on,,two hands still in tact pff

Anyways, enjoy (:

(P.s. also I hope u liked the foreshadowing.)

~ice

Tell Me! Tell Me!

It was quiet.

Calm, almost.

Everyone in the Freesmart van was asleep, trying to catch some rest after what had taken place before.

~

"She's lost a lot of blood...she's going to be out-of-it for a while." Book gently placed Match's stitched hand down. "I managed to stitch her hand back up...it was a deep cut, but it didn't do any vital damage..but like I said, she's going to be out-of-it for the majority of tomorrow.."

"How can we help her come out-of-it then?" Ice Cube acknowledged.

"Icy's right. If anything were to happen, we would need to get out of here fast." Pencil crossed her arms.

"Well..we have our food here, so all we need to do is give her sweets, like...oranges..and let her get plenty of rest. If she were to lose more blood..."

It stayed quiet.

"Well...It doisn't matter now..." Bubble chimed in. "She's alive.."

"And thank the pencil factories that she's safe.."

"Yes...shes going to be in a anemic state, so we'll give her plenty of sweets tomorrow. And if anything happens, well..." Book looked back at the stash of knifes that they had taken from the clubhouse.

"Yes, good thinking Book. But for now..let's just lay low, ok?"

"Agreed."

~

Ice Cube yawned sleepily, turning over to her side. She waited a bit, before she felt Book's arm wrap around her comfortingly, a sleepy smile slowly spreading on her face. Book was snoring away; tired from all of the stress that had hit her in a sudden rush yesterday. Ruby slept beside her; her shine looking more dull and darkened than usual.

Match laid in Pencil's arms, her face slowly regaining more of its color. Her wrist was covered in bandages, a light shade of pink dotting on the area of her cut. Pencil sighed sleepily, holding Match closer than before. Bubble slept beside them, hugging herself slightly as she shivered.

It was all quiet, until a shout suddenly shattered the peaceful silence within the van.

"NO! NO NO! FLOWER!" Ruby screamed out, suddenly jolting awake as beads of sweat dropped down her face. Everybody jumped; the sudden exclamation waking them from their peaceful slumber.

"Ugh- RUBY! What the hell?!" Pencil grumbled sleepily, shifting her body slightly. Ruby didn't acknowledge her; she was looking around in a panicked manner, unable to pull herself out of her darkened mind. Book slowly sat up, rubbing her eyes and yawning.

"Hmm..What's going on..?" She slurred out.

"Try to help out your little friend there, she woke us ALL up." Pencil snapped out.

Book looked towards her side, and suddenly snapped out of her sleepy state, quickly moving in front of Ruby.

"Ruby? Ruby. Breathe." She took her hands, and began to rub the back of them soothingly. Ruby panted slightly, staring intently towards the ground as she felt her heart pounding rapidly with fear.

"There..." Book looked up. "Is..everything okay..?"

"I- Uh...I had a nightmare.." Ruby looked away, a bit embarrassed

towards the reason.

"Oh, Ruby.."

"I-It's a dumb reason, I know! But...I-I saw..Flower..? And I didn't know wh-What to do, but I really wanted to go towards her, b-but then.." her eyes began to water.

"Go on..."

"She began to turn pale...sh-She was shaking, and the next thing I knew..she was puking so much b-..blood...and ..flowers..? I-I wanted to help, but I couldn't move...I was frozen, and she reached out towards me, almost..begging me to help her, but I couldn't! I-I couldn't move, and I couldn't help her..!" She squeezed Book's hands. "B-But then.."

"Then..?"

"I-I was yanked away...and then I just..fell...Flower was screaming....and..that's when I.."

"Ruby." Book rubbed her hands soothingly. She looked up fearfully, a year slowly rolling down her cheek.

"I..I know that this is all scary...but you have to remember that it was just a nightmare..."

"But it felt so..real.."

"And that's how nightmares are. They feel...powerfully real. And we can do one of two things; we can either remind ourselves that it was just a dream...or panic to a point where we're eventually living in that mental trap."

Ruby nodded, her fear and shakiness slowly disappearing from her.

"So...just take it easy, okay? Remember that it was a dream...know that it wasn't real, and know that we're going to make it through. Alliance, remember..?" Book smiled towards her, holding her hand out. Ruby smiled sadly, intertwining her fingers with hers.

"Alliance..."

Book smiled, before she looked around towards the others. Pencil was slowly sitting up, trying to stretch and move her stiffened arms a bit. Match was beginning to wake up; her eyes droopy and filled with exhaustion.

"How's she holding up?" Book moved towards the figure. Pencil looked down, and sighed, brushing her hand against Match's cheek.

"She's..well, she's cold.."

"That's normal. Can she sit up?"

Pencil moved away, and Match drowsily began to move, sitting up and laying against the seat behind her. She let her eyes close, as a sigh escaped her lips.

"Alright, good. I'll get her some food." Book turned back around, and began to rummage through the bags that they had packed.

Meanwhile, Bubble and Ice Cube were peeking out of the windows, scanning the area outside and making sure that they were safe. But also...

"I think they're worried." Ice Cube whispered. "We promised that we'd visit one more time, but.."

"It's only been a day, Oicey...maybe they're still waiting..?"

"Oh..I don't know Bubble, Bracelety is very...how do I say it.."

"Caring?"

"I guess so..! I just don't want her to worry.."

Bubble sighed, putting her hand on her chin sleepily.

"Well..I don't know if Fanny's worrying. She may be grumpy at times, but I know she's being patient..and I know that SHE knows that we're okay.."

Ice Cube raised her eyebrow. "You think so?"

"I know so! There's a good side to her, Oicey..It just takes some time to dig towards it.."

"Okay.."

Match blinked slowly, listening to the conversation that the two were having. Weren't they going to..? But then it happened...

It all happened too fast...

"Ugh.." she sunk her face into her hand, letting the warmth from her hand heat her freezing forehead.

"You okay?" Pencil moved closer towards her.

"Y-Yeah..just, cold...I guess.."

"Here.." She grabbed a sheet from her side, and gently wrapped it around her shoulders. Match sighed, resting her head on Pencil's shoulders.

"...I couldn't bring them.."

"What?"

"I couldn't bring them to see..uh.."

"Match, you nearly died. And your thinking about that...?"

"I just..I feel bad, Who knows what's going on over there..what if they're panicking?"

"Match, they're fine. They should know that they aren't gonna be around much; we're trying to stay alive in this hellhole."

"Mm...I hope your right, Pencil.."

"I am. They're probably just..hoping for the best for us. I mean, there isn't any way that they could know who..." Pencil's eyes widened. "Oh.."

"What's wrong..?" Match quickly caught onto her change of tone, and slowly sat upwards. Pencil shook her head, muttering slightly before she looked back up towards the others.

"Guys, did the eliminated contestants know that Pin's going around and killing people."

"Well, they did know about the deaths of...Firey, and everyone up until...uh..Needle? We..." Ice Cube suddenly paused.

"Wait- so they don't KNOW that Pin's the murderer?!"

"I think they thought that it was Leafy..! Why?" Bubble wrung her hands together.

"GUYS. LISTEN TO ME." Pencil moved towards the two, a glint of fear shining in her eyes. "Did you TELL them where we were gonna be?!"

"No- w-Well, yes, but, WHY?"

"Oh...oh no, oh no oh no oh NO." Pencil looked around in fear. "She's-oh pencil factory.."

"What is it, Pencil? Why are you freaking out?!" Book began to approach her, but she held her arms out.

"Don't you SEE WHAT THIS MEANS?!"

Quiet. Everyone glanced around nervously towards each other, and Pencil crosses her arms angrily.

"This means that if Pin goes to the TLC, she could FIND OUT where we are!"

"Well, why would she even go to the TLC in the first place?" Ruby joined in.

"To see if THOSE TWO are there." Pencil pointed towards Ice Cube and Bubble, who were cowering in fear from the taller figure.

"And so? What is she-"

"Shes going to ASK where we are. And since they don't KNOW, they're going to TELL HER!"

"Like, way to go, you two.." Match slurred out, rubbing her head. "You're going to get us killed..."

"No way! Bracelety would never tell her!" Ice Cube exclaimed. "And Fanny wouldn't either!"

"And how do you know THAT?"

"Why do you want to know."

"I can't find them; I'm going to finish making the recovery center, so I need more hands for the job!"

Fanny rolled her eyes. "We're not telling you where they are."

"Listen, I know that you're worried about them, but we have to team up here. Leafy could get them, and knowing her, she could take them out like THAT." Pin crossed her arms, staring down at the mention of..her.

"Well, whatever. Isn't there more people out there to help you or something."

"LIKE THAT ONE OBJECT ICY WAS WITH! GELATIN, I THINK?!"

"Gelatin's dead."

"OH.." Bracelety's voice quieted down slightly.

"Listen, Pin, we know your scared and all, but what's going on out there? Why isn't Bossy Bot making some sort of gadget to help stop

Leafy?" Blocky chimed in.

"And where's Coiny? Fries? And...not sure if she's out there, but..Puffball?" Pen added on.

Pin stayed silent.

Don't cry.

Don't cry.

Don't make this harder for yourself.

She looked up.

"They're dead. Everyone's dead."

The TLC stayed silent...as everyone exchanged nervous glances towards each other.

"Leaving her old alliance member for last, Huh." Blocky sighed out.

"Don't say that. I'm surprised the girls haven't told you what was going on..."

"Are you kidding?! You think they'd come down here to talk to US?! Pff, They're always coming down here to talk to the two lesbians by the wall."

"HEY!"

"ENOUGH! Listen, if you don't want to find out that your little girlfriends dead in a ditch somewhere, then you better tell me where they are. The more, the better; we can stop Leafy together."

Fanny looked towards Bracelety. She shook her head, but Bracelety paused for a moment...thinking.

"Should we..tell her, Fanny?" Bracelety reduced her voice to a whisper. Fanny shook her head.

"I don't know Bracelety. She sounds kind of..,off to me."

"But what if she's right?! Icey and Bubble are in danger, if she managed to survive this long, maybe she could help protect them!" Bracelety whispered...well, tried to.

"But what if she survived this long because SHE had something to do with it."

They looked down for a moment...trying to dig within their thoughts and see if they could come up with a solution.

"I know you don't trust me right now, I know you're scared, but please...let me help." Pin pleaded, placing her hands on the cold, metal walls. "I'll do anything you'd like, if you just tell me where they are..."

Fanny and Bracelety looked up.

"....Really?"

"Anything."

"Hm. How about you bust us out of here, and THEN we'll show you where they are?" Fanny explained.

"I can bust you out, after I manage to save them and stop Leafy from killing the rest of us. Everyone's crossed off of her list; I don't think you'd like to be added on there..."

Fanny rolled her eyes angrily.

"This is all we can really do Fanny....she's our last hope on not only getting out of here, but its also how Bubble and Ice Cube can make it out of this mess.."

"Hhhrgh...." Fanny squeezed her eyes shut.

What if she was lying?

What if she doesn't take them out of there?

What if she's planning to harm them?

...what else was there that they could do..?

Fanny sighed.

"Alright. You better listen carefully, because were only telling you once."

"Okay, maybe we can get rid of the glue by sawing it off...?" Ruby suggested. Pencil shivered.

"You...can saw it off. I can't do saws."

"But didn't you want to die by-"

"SHH."

"Well, wheres the saw? Book?"

The two turned towards Book, and she looked down nervously.

"O-Oh..uh....I think I..uh...."

Silence.

"...You left it behind, didn't you."

"Yes, I did."

"BOOK!"

The van's atmosphere began to explode with angered comments, as Book attempted to argue back towards the others.

Match simply watched...her face vacant and simply out of it all. White noise filled her head, as she turned slightly and faced the window.

She wanted to help...she didn't know how she could, especially in this crap state, but...she had to help. It was her alliance; she wasn't going to let them down.

But she wouldn't be allowed OUT of the van...they were too worried about her..blood levels? Whatever.

Suddenly, the white noise in her head began to wear off, as the noises of the conversation began to fill her head...

"..So if we manage to saw through the glue, we can get out of here?" Pencil.

"Yes! All we would have to do is go back to the clubhouse and grab the saw! Its simple!" Ruby.

"Yet, dangerous. Who knows where Pin could be..." Book.

"So, when are we gonna pull this through? Should we do it at night?" Ice Cube.

"No way! She could easily foind us out there!" Bubble.

So familiar...but so...distant...

"But, Pin's asleep at night. We can quickly go back to the clubhouse, get the saw, and get out of here before its too late! Its better than doing it during the day, especially since she could find us!" Ruby exclaimed.

"Well, if we were to do it, lets say around...3 AM?" Book suggested.

They all nodded in agreement, and Match shook her head slightly.

She was going to do it.

They had to get out of there.

She didn't know why, but there was a burning feeling in her heart..a feeling that was telling her to act before its too late.

To get out.

And never return.

---

i am just,,,gay u_u

hello everyone, i am alive , and i bring to you: part 42

ah yes,,the gays,,,,,,,,,but someone has spilled the beans.....

oops....

ah shit, here we go again.....

but uhh yea!!

ALSO i finally hit 1000 on instagram and I'm gonna be hosting a q&a thing soon! So keep an eye out for that (schools killing me so i cant do it now oof)

anyways!! enjoy!

~ice

Hot and Cold

Shh.

Don't make a noise.

Just...sneak out.

Easy as pie...

She glanced around.

Quiet.

Breathing...

Subtle snoring..

They wouldn't notice...would they?

It was a rough day yesterday..she was feeling more awake and vigilant- the others were simply trying to keep an eye out for anything suspicious around them, as well as making sure Match was alright.

Oh well.

She didn't know what time it was.

But the moon was shining brightly in the sky...midnight, maybe?

Hopefully...

She cautiously lifted the handle, and the door slowly slid open, letting Match carefully step out and into the crispy, midnight air. She shivered slightly, turning around and shutting the door to keep the rest of them..safe, at least. She turned around once more, and let her

eyes roam around the others inside of the van.

Ruby laid in Book's arms, snoring away as Book shifted slightly, holding her closer. Ice Cube slept beside them, with Bubble laying not too far from the three. Pencil was fast asleep against the opposite door...her arm wrapped around a pillow to replace Match's body.

Match stared at Pencil's face..

Peaceful.

Resting...

Beautiful.

She turned around, and shook her head slightly.

'Okay..' she thought to herself. 'All I have to, like, do..is go back to the clubhouse..and, like, get that saw...and come back..'

It seemed so simple, just thinking about it in her mind...

But why was it so damn hard to step away from the van?

She didn't know what was out there. She prayed that there wasn't anything out there.

She wanted to help; she didn't want to sit around in this cursed land anymore. She wanted to go far away, far from Pin, far from the TLC, far from everything..

With Pencil by her side, of course.

The only noise that sang through the air were the quiet chirps of crickets, and the rustling of the leaves as they were swept away by the wind. She took a deep breath..

Alright. This is gonna be easy. This is gonna be quick.

Just go, and come back. Go, and back.

You'll be okay.

She walked down the path, rubbing her bandaged wrist as she let her thoughts circle freely within her mind. Keep it comforting, keep them cool..

It's gonna be okay..

Ridiculous.

They think they've truly outsmarted us..?

Pin walked along the dirt road, her trowel clenched tightly in her hand. A smirk was plastered onto her face, as she continued to make her back towards the city.

She had manage to get through those...idiots, back in the TLC, and she managed to get them to tell her where the Freesmarters were. Now, all she had to do, was get to those six, and...

Take care of them.

She walked through, and soon, she began to notice that the area began to look...strangely familiar. The trees tangled through the air, clumps of leaves blocking the moonlight from pouring onto the path. Roots crawled on the ground, spreading across and down the path, with pebbles and rocks that were scattered across.

"STOP!"

Pin winced.

"COME BACK!"

She walked faster.

"PLEASE!"

She grabbed her arms nervously, and began to look around once more.

Someone was following her.

Why did it feel like someone was following her..?!

Her heart pounded with fear as she continued to rush her way out of the darkened path, simply trying to find a way out of the hell that she had created for herself. As she made her way, something suddenly caught her attention.

Flowers.

A dirt path...

Wait..

She clenched her fists, as she began to slow down..unable to move as her memory began to catch up to her. Her eyes began to fill with tears; trying to blink them away, but they simply began to spill out.

This was the area where she had killed Woody.

She hugged herself, slowly beginning to step backwards as the panic began to ensue within her.

"I..I have to get out of here." She mumbled to herself, as she began to run away from the sight. She quickly glanced back, and suddenly, she tripped over a thick root that snaked across the path. Her head slammed against a thinner root, causing her to cry out in pain.

Moments passed, as she laid on the ground, disoriented as a sharp

pain began to throb through her skull. She shakily placed her hands down onto the dirt, and began to push herself upwards, the world around her spinning wildly. She held her breath, carefully setting herself back into a seated position, before she sighed out in pain.

She didn't even notice the root, but..

She turned back.

There was nothing there. No shadows, no figures...just a few wilted flowers, and the guilt that hangs so heavily from the tree.

She rolled her eyes, before she turned her head back towards the front.

Coiny.

There he was, locking his pale, lifeless eyes with her now panicked ones. Pin opened her mouth, trying to let a scream, a cry, or to make ANYTHING come out, but...

Nothing. besides a few stammers and whispered croaks.

The two stared at each other, until Pin's breathing became more and more frightened, her breaths turning into gasps and wheezes. She began to scuttle away from him, clutching her chest tightly.

"N-No...No, no no no no no, you- you aren't real..! Y-You-"

He raised his hand, and this made her freeze.

Go.

Go.

Get AWAY from him.

HE'S JUST A-

"P i n...."

The emptiness of the whisper made Pin's heart skip a beat. She gulped, feeling her limbs tremble violently. Coiny slowly made his

way towards her, a strange fog puffing up from the ground as he stood a step.

"I.....K n o w....Y o u.." He whispered, walking closer towards her. "Y o u....a r e.....h u r t..i n g..."

"G-Get away from me...! You're dead, y-you're-" she gasped out, tears beginning to pour down her face. She hugged herself, feeling her heart cracking and breaking into two, fear and pain seeping through the opening cracks. Though, he continued to move forward, and she flinched.

"P l e a s e....." he whispered, placing his frigid hand on her weakened, warm state. "Y o u..... a r e s o.....a f..r a i d.."

"I-I'm doing what I have to do, I-I thought-"

"Y o u r F e e l i n g s of the m a t t e r....a r e r e p r e s s e d."

"This is all for the garden! MY garden! Its all-"

"F o r t h e g a r d e n....but n o t f o r y o u..." he caressed her cheek slowly.

Pin shivered at his touch, trying to repress everything she was feeling at the moment, but..

She wanted him.

She just wanted him back.

Pin began to sob, slowly getting up and walking towards the ghostly figure, her arms reaching out for him...

But he stepped back, shaking his head slightly.

"T h e r e s....n o t h i n g.." he replied, somberly.

Pin paused, before she began to wipe the tears from her eyes furiously.

"W-Well, what can you do now?! You can't stop me, you're just a ghost! You're NOTHING!"

"I.....k n o w....." he paused, before he looked back up...his expression slowly morphing into an angered one. "W h i c h is w h y..... y o u must r u n."

This came as a cold shock to Pin. She flinched back slightly, before she looked towards him again.

"What...?"

Suddenly, Coiny leaped forward angrily, as more and more apparitions began to form form thin air; Flower, Firey, Leafy...Rocky...

Everyone that had died by her hands, leaped towards Pin, and in a furious, haunting tone, they screamed...

" R U N. "

Pin's eyes widened, before she quickly sprinted towards the other direction, her eyes beginning to fill with tears once more. She jumped over roots and vines, trying to escape the hell that she had created, all the while hearing screaming following close behind her.

"P I N!"

"P I N."

"C O M E H E R E."

"Y O U W I L L P A Y."

She ran faster, and faster, feeling her lungs burning and stinging with every breath she took. She shut her eyes, letting her limbs take her to wherever she could be, as long as it was far far away from the forest. Minutes began to feel like hours, before she let her eyes pry open, just to see where she could have gone.

The city was a few blocks ahead of her, but, in the distance, she could see the Freesmarter's club house, its darkened outline standing

out from the atmosphere of the spring night. She squinted, and felt a bit shocked as she could see something moving towards it...stumbling, and pausing every few seconds to see if it was safe to continue moving forward...

Pin tutted.

There.

The doorknob to the clubhouse wiggled and turned, until the door finally creaked open, moonlight permeating throughout the darkened rooms. Match peeked in, and sighed slightly.

"Okay..its just like a game of...hot and cold.." She mumbled to herself. This made her feel...slightly better than before..!

"Y-Yeah..! Just like, Hot and Cold...like, with me, and Pencil..!" She let a small smile grow on her face, as she began to move in. The memory of her and Pencil playing this game back before BFDI had begun filed her with a warmth, that made her feel safer and braver. She was going to get back to them, and they WERE going to get out of there.

"Okay...cold.." she whispered, trying to make her way through the

darkened halls.."cold...wow, ok, really cold.."

She paused. She looked around, and began to think to herself. Where did they usually keep the tools...?

Oh! The kitchen, possibly? And if not, it had to be in the attic..

Yeah..the attic!

...But, lets check the kitchen just in case....

"Cold...cold.." she muttered, quickly making her way into the kitchen and beginning to open all the cabinets that were rowed on the bottom. She looked through, letting the moonlight shine with them so she could see what was already within each one..and which one's didn't have what she was looking for.

She continued to look through all of the cabinets, trying to find the damned saw that they needed to get out of there. She pushed away soap bottles, cleaning products, a container of gasoline for the van...

Would they need that..?

Match shook her head. Focus.

Meanwhile, the doorknob began to quietly jiggle and turn, until it slowly and cautiously opened up, moonlight pouring into the room once more. Pin carefully slipped into the clubhouse, shutting the door slowly behind her. She stayed still for a moment, trying to adjust and figure out where this object was...

"Still..freezing cold." Match sighed in disappointment, shutting the cabinet and making her way back into the hall. "Well..maybe the attic has something warm.."

Pin tilted her head. She knew who that voice belonged to, but..

What the fuck was Match talking about?

"Okay...cold...cold.." She began to make her way towards the attic stairs, and Pin watched from a corner, trying to eavesdrop on her

conversations...towards herself.

Was she...playing hot and cold with herself..?

Fuck it. She had to get this done.

Pin quickly made her way into the kitchen, and began to search through the cabinets, trying to find what she needed in order to complete with the unfinished business her and Match had before. She looked through every cabinet, digging through the utensils and cloths they had stored in them, when she suddenly noticed..

Where are the knives...?

"Clever team." Pin slid the cabinet back, moving onto the next one.

We-..We can't do this anymore, you heard the warning they-

"They're dead. You know this, stop being a baby." She rummaged through the items...

They could harm us though..! What if-

"Enough, We must finish what we've started. Remember, its for the garden.." A sickening smile grew on her face, as she grabbed the small lighter and clenched it within her hand. "...Its for us."

Wait, wait- you're planning to-

"All we need is the gasoline..and I'm sure that they have it below." She ducked down, looking through the bottom cupboards to find the small container.

There it was; in the back of many piles of cleaning products and soap, the red, cube-like gallon of gasoline.

"Perfect."

"Hot!" Match gasped out, quickly grabbing the handle of the saw and holding it defensively. "A-All I have to do is bring it back! I can do

it!"

She quickly made her way back towards the stairs, and rushed down, the relief beginning to fill within her heart.

"Warm...warm..!" She muttered to herself, as she shut the door, and began to make her way back towards the hall. "Warm..!"

"Warm.." Pin smirked, hearing the footsteps rush closer and closer. She slowly unscrewed the cap of the container, and poised it in the air, prepared to finish the final step that was left for her.

"Warm..! I-I'm gonna make it back, I'm gonna make it back..!" She smiled slightly, continuing to make her way through the halls. She quickly passed through the kitchen, and Pin stepped out, quickly following her from behind. Match herd the footsteps, and before she could react, Pin dumped all of the gasoline onto Match, the smell making her cough slightly.

Match screamed out, stumbling over and falling against the wall. The gasoline began to sting harshly at her eyes, and she cried out, trying to rub her eyes to relieve her from the stinging. Footsteps began to draw closer to her, and Match let her eyes open slightly, to see who was..

"Warm.." Pin stood over her, a lighter in her hand. She flicked it slightly, and a small spark emitted from the container.

Run.

Match leaped upwards, quickly grabbing the saw and dashing out of the clubhouse. Pin growled angrily, running out of the room and quickly following her to the outdoors.

"GET B A C K HERE, MATCH!" Pin screamed out, flicking the small nozzle to try and spark out a flame. "WE AREN'T FINISHED WITH THE G A M E..!!"

"NO! NO, GET AWAY FROM ME!"

The two continued to run, and as soon as the supervan came into sight, Match began to call out for help.

"PENCIL! GUYS! SH-SHE'S HERE! SHE'S-"

Suddenly, she tripped over her feet, stumbling down onto the ground and dropping the saw. She tried to scramble back up, but Pin's foot stepped onto her back..

Match froze.

"Hot! I win!"

She flicked the lighter on once more, and a small flame began to burn at the tip; she dropped the lighter down, and backed away, smiling as she watched the event unfold.

All hell broke loose. As soon as the flame hit Match's body, flames began to crawl all over her body, and this made her scream. Crackles and the sound of steaming flesh began to swing through the air, as Match began to run around, similar to a headless chicken. She continued to scream and screech, the flames beginning to spread to her upper body.

The door to the supervan suddenly swung open, and the rest of the Freesmarter's looked out.

"MATCH?! MATCH, WHATS GOING-"

"P E NCIL..." Match screeched out, her voice become raspier and raspier. Screams of horror began to fill the midnight sky, as Match stumbled towards the van, reaching out towards them.

"P-....Pen..ci l..."

"M-MATCH- OH, PENCIL FACTORY.." Pencil weeped heavily, watching Match as she collapsed back onto the ground, her body twitching and jolting violently. The flames began to die down; Match's burnt body beginning to be more visible towards the others. Blisters were visibly seen; charring and the stench of flesh hitting them with a wave of nausea. Match's limbs were thinner and covered in cracks, blood seeping out and creating a puddle on the ground below. Her eyes were widened, and full of fear, as they gazed upwards towards the sky...

She stopped moving.

Pencil wheezed and gasped, her face losing all of its color before she eventually fainted from the horror that had painted before them. Ice Cube and Bubble panicked, while Book looked up, tears pouring down her face...

Pin...as well as the saw...

were gone.

---

so i had a nightmare similar to this so lets just B)

anyways hello everyone...after a long wait i present to you: the next part of the story.

this was...long.....

and uh. schools been very busy..got into an accident, heading to the hospital later today, but while i was trying to get myself back up, i wrote,..and here we are

this is my last week of school baby.....s o excited.

anyways, enjoy this next part...

crispy.

(:

~ice

Pas de Deux

"No, no no no that is a BAD IDEA!" Ruby screamed out. "We're NOT doing that!"

"Ruby, we have to. She knows where we are, she knows we're the last ones alive, she KNOWS how to GET TO US DAMMIT!"

Ruby shuddered slightly, looking back towards the others. Bubble and Ice Cube were inside of the van, trying to console Pencil, who was curled up in the back corner. Her eyes were widened in horror; bags hung heavily under them as she was completely out of the zone.

Ruby looked back towards Book. "A-..Are you sure..I mean, we aren't- we're- we're weak, Book.." her eyes began to water. "Bubble's fragile, Ice Cube could be shattered, who knows if she has the strength to snap Pencil in half, a-and..and-"

"Ruby." Book placed her hands on her shoulders, tilting her head upwards a bit. "Listen to me. We can beat her. We know who Pin really is. We can work together, we can put an END to this! But we have to be brave. We can either live right now, and watch as each one of us falls under the edge of her trowel, or we can fight- avenge everyone we lost, and keep living ourselves.."

Ruby wiped her eyes shakily. "B-..But what are we gonna do if we beat her..?"

"We work. We free everyone from the TLC, and we find a way to fix up the recovery center. I'm sure GB had some notes and prints about it.."

Book then gently cupped her hands around Ruby's face, bringing them closer together..

"..but no matter what happens.. I promise, with all of my paged heart,

that I'll protect you..okay..?"

Ruby hesitated, but slowly began to nod, letting her eyes close at Book's touch. She smiled, leaning in and giving her forehead a gentle kiss.

"Okay..now, all we have to do is-"

"Move."

The dull voice made Book jump, as all eyes turned towards the slouching figure, watching as she slowly began to make her way out of the van. Book rushed over towards the door.

"Woah woah woah, and where do you think you're going?" Book asked, sternly placing her arms in front of Pencil. Pencil's glance was still out of it all, as she slowly pushed Book's arms out of her way.

"Move, Book. I..I can't do it." She muttered. "I'm going to kill that bitch."

"Pencil, she could easily overpower you. I don't think-"

"SCREW WHATEVER YOU THINK. I'm going to END that bitch. She deserves to SUFFER after what she did to...to.." her gaze began to move upwards, as she began to space out once more.

Book crossed her arms. "Pencil, she's going to hurt you. We can do this together, okay?"

"SO WHAT?! She's killed off groups! Didn't you see how she took on Spongy?! Nickel?! BOMBY?! Even TB and GB, the smartest out of all of us!"

"I-..I know, Pencil, but if we work together, we can find-"

"We're not finding shit anymore." Pencil looked up. "Match..is gone...I..I LOVED her..."

"I-I know Pencil, and I'm so sorry-"

"I was forced...to watch her BURN in front of me...I-I can't just sit idly

by and wait for Pin to pull another trick like that." She stepped out, slowly standing up straight..

"..I'm avenging Match. No matter what happens. I want her to pay."

The tone that she had spoke in made a shiver run down everyone's spine. Book reached out, but before she could say anything...

Pencil walked off.

"Pencil! Pencil, wait!" Ruby called out, beginning to rush after the taller figure. But, she stopped in her tracks after a hand gently gripped her shoulder.

"Ruby, just..let her go."

"Book, we have to get her! She's gonna-"

"She isn't going to listen. I can't imagine how hard it must be for her right now.." Book sighed out, looking towards the ground. Ruby hesitated, before she clasped her hands together nervously, watching her as she walked further and further away from the van.

"Oh..Pencil.." Ruby whispered. "Please...stay safe.."

Book looked towards the side.

I doubt it.

Pin sat in the lab, her eyes closed as she reminisced over all the events that had taken place earlier. Each murder was beginning to take a toll on her, and she simply needed some time to rest.

To breathe.

She had already done what she needed to do. The scientists limbs were in a small bag beside her, as well as Match's steaming arms that she had managed to rip off during the whole fiasco. All she had to do now was plant them in her garden; and then, she would be nearly complete.

Killing nearly the *entire* population of contestants in IDFB?

Incredible.

But she was becoming more dreary, more exhausted, more vulnerable to those cursed hallucinations.

She sat on a chair, pondering about how she would handle the remaining survivors of the city. Each one of them were incredibly unique in one way or another, and so she had to plan out how she could succeed in ending their lives in the most ruthless, yet satisfying way possible.

But yet, as she continued to ponder through her hellish thoughts, something continued to slither back into her mind...

Those...ghosts.

She didn't want to call those fuckers ghosts, they appeared out of nowhere, and...depending on who it was, they'd either stare, or...attempt to attack.

Pin abhorred it all. It made her realize that she was becoming vulnerable to all, and that her mental state was rapidly deteriorating. So, she had no choice but to take a break.

But this didn't stop her from planning.

She brushed her fingers against the edges of the bloodied saw, continuing to doze off in her mind...

Pin.

Her eyes widened. She took a deep breath, and rubbed her temples, mumbling out towards herself.

"There's no one there, Pin." She exclaimed. "It's all in your goddamn head. Just relax."

A few moments passed..

...nothing.

She loosened up, placing her head down onto the counter as she continued to ponder through her thoughts...

How about...melting?

No, no, too simple. Plus, haven't we already done that to someone?

Well, technically, she burned alive, but-

Yes..I did.

Pin slammed her fist against the table and looked up.

"Alright, who's doing it?! WHO THE HELL IS DOING IT?!" She screamed.

Nothing.

There was...nothing.

Pin clenched her fists angrily and sat back down, slowly trying to get back to planning, yet seeing if it would happen again.

"...How about dismemberment?"

You've already been doing that.

Oh my Pin Factory, are you serious right now?! I thought you were BETTER than this, Pin.

"I AM." She hissed out. "I just...I just need some time to figure this all-"

You have all the time in the world...now that most of us are dead.

"STOP!" Pin jumped up, grabbing the saw and frantically waving it around.

"...Do it again...I d a r e you-"

Wow. Such a threat. We thought you were...smarter.

Smarter than me...smarter than TB..

Are you becoming...weak...?

"I'm not becoming SHIT." She growled, holding the saw close.

"The fuck are you all doing this for?! Just GO. You're DEAD, be at PEACE or-"

Be at...peace.

You expect us to "be at peace"?

You...burned me alive.

She poisoned me.

...she slaughtered me.

We all suffered in the most brutal way imaginable, each outcome being different to each one of us, and what will finally make all of us "be at peace", is when you suffer as equally as we did.

Pin rolled her eyes. "Uh, Yeah, good luck with that."

Are you...questioning our ability?

"I'm questioning your ability to shut up and get the hell out of here."

She snapped.

It all went silent, simply for a moment, until the saw was yanked out from Pin's grip, and tossed across the room. It fell with a loud clangor, ringing within Pin's head.

We've been waiting for this day...

A l l of us..

Pin tried to make a dash towards the door, but it quickly slammed shut, locking her inside of the room. She frantically tried to pry it open, but it simply wouldn't budge.

Suddenly, something yanked her away from the door, causing her to yelp. She quickly scrambled back towards the table, and looked around, panting heavily in fear.

"St-..Stay AWAY FROM ME!"

Funny...

A cold force began to grip at her head, slamming her against the glass table and beginning to put pressure on her head. Pin winced, her eyes beginning to sting with tears as she could feel the table beginning to crack from the pressure being put down upon it. She gritted her teeth, as her eyes began to sting with tears...

You feel this...right?

You're heart...pounding so fast, you feel like it could burst at any moment...

"S-STOP...." She gasped out.

You know...we were so much like you...

We wanted to escape the frigid hands of death..

And yet..you merely shoved us deeply into the palms...tossing us away as if we were a joke to you...

Cracks began to permeate through the glass, as Pin could feel her head at the brink of bursting. She tried reaching out for the saw...

But what use would that make?

We've waited...we've planned..

And now...you're coming down with us..

Not even with us. You'll be coming down, of course...down into the hottest flames of hell.

Pin shut her eyes..

Pencil held the crowbar tightly within her hands. She began to

observe her surroundings, slowly opening the door towards the lab.

She wasn't stupid.

She could see the bloodied trail that Pin had left behind..that blood..

Match's blood...

Her eyes began to water, as she looked around once more.

Find her, and end her. It's so goddamn simple..

then why was she shaking..

She was strong. She took out the entire cast of the show, in the span of a few months...

But she TOOK her. INTERROGATED HER.

WHY DID SHE FEEL SO GODDAMN TINY?!

SHE COULD TAKE HER DOWN, SHE COULD-..

...Match..

Ugh. Enough of this sappy crap. Just kill her.

She continued to walk down the steps of the lab, until a faint scream, and the shattering of glass echoed through out the facility. Pencil squinted, slowing down and cautiously looking around, making sure there was no unexpected jump scares...or traps...that Pin could have created.

As she moved forward, a metal door that was ajar caught her eye immediately. It clicked into her mind instantly, as she kicked open the door and brandished the crowbar. But when she looked around...

Nothing.

Well...a small table, with the glass broken and shards scattered everywhere..a small bag...a counter, with a bloodied saw-

Wait, bloodied saw?

But, wasn't that the one that...

"Shit." Pencil muttered, looking around and trying to find her in the room. She expected her to be hiding...she seemed to be shockingly clever, but...

No...

There she was...shards of glass jammed into her head, as she stood in front of a white board that Golfball had. A map of the entire city was spread on the board, notes scribbled in certain areas with a red marker. A few of the little houses on the map were crossed off heavily, some of the ink dripping down the page as Pencil observed closely.

One of the houses had a small, green patch that resembled a small garden. Pin stared blankly at the little house with the garden..and uncapped the marker, pressing the marker down on it and slowly scribbling it out of existence.

Fries's house.

Pencil winced, as she raised the crowbar into the air, approaching her..

"...It was all worth it."

What?

Pencil's eyebrows furrowed together, as she stepped closer towards her.

"My garden...it has never "thrived", before...no garden has ever." She continued to scribble on the map, scribbling out Gelatin's house.

"But..now, it thrives, and it has given me the will power to continue to move forward, and gather everything that I would need to make it possible. And, in this case, that would be..hands." She glanced towards Pencil, hovering the marker over the little drawing of the recovery center..

And beside that..?

A drawing of the freesmart van.

A heavy silence hung over the two as Pin slowly pressed the marker onto the paper, drawing a line that crossed over the drawing. She pressed harder and harder, watching Pencil's face morph into a expression of fear. This made her giggle.

Pencil shook her head, and raised the crowbar, gritting her teeth in fury.

"YOU AREN'T GOING TO HURT US!"

She brought the crowbar down, and Pin swiftly stepped out of the way, watching as the crowbar smash against the board. She looked towards Pencil, her face vacant...

Pencil, on the other hand, swung the crowbar madly, screaming in frustration as Pin swiftly and quickly stepped out of the way, avoiding each blow.

"STOP IT! STOP!" She raised the bar up, and swiftly brought it down...

But what made her heart stop, was when Pin simply grabbed the crowbar, staring intensely into Pencil's eyes. She quickly looked down, and kicked her in the stomach, sending her flying across the room. She crashed against the table, yelling in pain as she felt her back crack slightly.

Pin watched her writher in pain, before she slowly began to walk towards the counter. She looked down, and grabbed the saw, clenching it tightly as she was prepared for a fight.

"It's just the two of us." Pin mumbled, numbly. Pencil shook her head...grabbing the crowbar with a trembling hand.

"..pas de deux."

Pin raised her eyebrow. "What?"

"Pas de deux..." Pencil looked up.. "N-Not two...not two of us.."

Memories of Match began to flood through Pencil's mind, hearing those words on repeat, such as a broken record..

"*Pas de deux!"*

"Pas...de...duxe..?"

"Pas de deux! It means, like...not two of us..but one.." She smiled, taking Pencil's hands.

Pencil felt a flustered smile grow on her face, as she leaned in and gave her a soft peck on her cheek..

Her eyes snapped open.

Fury.

"...are you done." Pin whispered. "I have to-"

Her words were cut off, as Pencil slammed the crowbar against her head. She collapsed onto the ground, screaming slightly as she could feel her head gushing out blood..

Pencil stood over her, growling.

"PAS DE DEUX, BITCH!"

C R U N C H.

Finally, I'm back, holy moly....

Hello everyone, guess who's a gosh darn senior now?
I'm not ready aCk

Anyways, I've been busy, currently working on an object show....yea...

Also reminder: if you don't like the story, why are you..reading it?
Just ignore it or something idk...

But thank you all for the support and sweet comments....ily guys so

MUCH

see ya (;

~Ice

Knock it Off

"I wonder when Bubble's coming to visit again. It's been...days now."

"NOT JUST DAYS! ITS BEEN NEARLY TWO WEEKS!"

"..they said they'd be coming after a few days..did they..?"

"I DON'T REMEMBER!"

"...UGH! I HATE WAITING! I HATE THIS STUPID CHAMBER!"

"FANNY! CMON', TRY TO STAY POSITIVE! I'M SURE ICY AND BUBBLE ARE DOING JUST FINE!"

"..Bracelety, there's a damn murderer out there, and it's been two weeks since we've last HEARD them! What makes you think they're-"

"PIN SAID SHE'S GONNA HELP THEM! I'M SURE THAT THEY'RE IN GOOD HANDS!"

Silence.

"...I sure hope they are.."

"SEE? NOW YOU'RE-"

"WILL YOU KEEP IT DOWN BRACELETY?! SOME OF US ARE TRYING TO SLEEP HERE!"

"SORRY, BLOCKY!"

"BLOCKY?! I HATE HIM."

"OKAY OKAY ENOUGH! Bracelety, Just..try to tone it down a notch, okay?"

"OKAY PEN!"

"And keep your chin up, you two. They're gonna be okay."

"...."

"..yeah..they're..okay.."

"YEAH!"

Ruby's eyes fluttered open, as she let her eyes adjust to the darkness within the van.

The moon must have been shining brightly in the sky, it's glow illuminating the structures outside. The stars must have shined brightly, twinkling like diamonds as they gave off their magical aura to those who could...wish upon a star, per say. But, as usual in the van, everyone was instructed to keep the windows covered, and to keep quiet in the van, to prevent anything...or anyone..from knowing that they were in there.

But someone knew. And that someone managed to wipe out an entire population of a game show cast...objects with wild plans and bizarre lives ahead of them. This wouldn't have been so big of a deal if they had the recovery centers running. But...it was because of *Ruby* that they were no longer functioning.

She threw it into the glue, the glue that she had created with the snow and gasoline..

And it was stuck there.

It continued to run for months after that, those months eventually turning into years...but it was during the winter, when the whirring of the gears suddenly came to a halt.

Ruby shuddered. She never liked talking about that day.

-

"Care to explain why you dragged me and TB out here at 3 AM, during a snow storm."

"Can it GB, we have a serious issue in our hands."

"...serious as in, the clubhouse power went out, or serious as in your coffee machine is broken.."

"Eh? No! This is serious Golfball, like...we think the Recovery Center broke."

".....I'm going back. Cmon' TB-"

"WAIT! We're being serious!"

"Pencil, Match, I know that this is one of your funny little alliance jokes, but we're not sticking around for it. Just- look. Look at Tennis Ball. Look at me. WE'RE TIRED."

"I-I know, and I'm sorry for waking you guys up this early, but we're SERIOUS! Don't you hear the noise from it anymore?"

"...."

"...Golfball-"

"TB, help me open this up. Now."

"But, you guys don't have any, like, arms?"

"Wow, thanks for the reminder! HELP US, YOU TWO."

"Ew, it's all sticky.."

"You can thank your alliance for that. Who's bright idea was it to place this on top of a huge puddle of GLUE?!"

"Well-"

"Golfball, look.."

"...oh no."

"What? What is it?"

"...do you mind telling us which member of your alliance placed the recovery center on this glue."

"B-But, like, why-"

"Tell us. Now."

"Why Golfball?!"

"The glue had managed to seep into the engine through some openings on the bottom, attaching itself to some gears and ultimately to the engine. And because of that, the engines had to work even harder than before to keep the Recovery Machine going. But it eventually worn away- with the rain, the snow, the heat and frost, it all adds up to the misplacement of the recovery center. So...no wonder it stopped working."

"Who was the smart object who placed the recovery center HERE anyways? Now, if one of us dies..."

"We're, like..gone for good.."

"...TB, remind me to come back here and analyze the machines technology and metal works. We must construct a new recovery center- we aren't going to live in a world where we die forever."

"Note taken, GB."

"Now, If you two will excuse us, we're going back. I'm going to get some sleep."

"Sh-Should we even tell the others about this..?"

"No. Theres a definite 86.3 percent chance that the news will grow into a wide-spread panic, but I'd keep it subtle...they're going to find out, eventually."

"The object who did this is just ridiculous. They're the reason why we're all doomed right now!"

"Okay you two, we'll...we'll see you around."

"...Ruby?"

"....."

"Ruby, you didn't knoiw, it was an accident.."

"It was just one of your little mistakes, its okay.."

"Ruby.."

"RUBY..."

"Ruby?"

The gem jumped once more, turning her head towards the voice who was calling out for her.

Book.

She sat up, sleepily rubbing her eyes as she began to move towards

the gemstone. Ruby sighed, staying in her spot as she hugged her knees closely and tightly to her body. Book noticed her tension, and began to wake herself up, for the sake of Ruby..

her..friend..

"Hey, is everything alright? You seem...stressed.." Book whispered, careful to not wake Bubble and Ice Cube, who were fast asleep across from them.

Ruby shrugged slightly, her gaze shifting towards the doors.

"..Book.."

"Hm?"

"I don't know..."

Book raised her eyebrow. "You don't know what?"

"I don't know how I'm feeling anymore. I feel really empty."

"Empty?"

"Yeah."

Ruby's eyes glossed over as she looked down. "That's all I've been feeling lately. Just..empty. I don't remember happiness...I don't know. Is that a bad thing?"

"No..it isn't, its understandable actually."

"Really.."

"Absolutely. We've lost so many people, nearly the entire cast of the show...but look! We're here..and we're alive..!"

"Not for long.." Ruby mumbled pathetically.

Book clenched her hands together, her eyes filling with concern at her response. She was so focused on trying to get out of here, and trying to find ways to bring back the Recovery Center, that she didn't even think about what *would* happen if they were captured by Pin.

Who knows if the others had suspicions about her...

Even Golfball and Tennis Ball, the two smartest (and might I say, wittiest) objects in the entire show, met their untimely demise as Pin had clenched them in her grasp, crushing them and tearing away their final breaths of life.

What made her so sure that *they* were going to make it out of there alive...?

"...I know it's all really scary, and it feels like we've hit rock bottom, but we have a chance, Ruby."

Ruby looked up, her expression exhausted and blank. "Wha..?"

"Listen. Tennis Ball started something that we can finish. Those Recovery Center blueprints in his lab? We could use those and build one together! And the wacky machinery that Golfball made on her spare time? Hey, we could use those to defend ourselves from her! We have a wide array of possibilities that could help us get through this, but all we have to do is try!"

"But what if they don't work?!" Ruby cried out. "TB and GB HAD all that fancy stuff with them, why didn't they use it?! Why didn't they have a plan?! Wh-Why are we sitting here talking, why aren't we running, why aren't we running, why aren't we GETTING OUT OF HERE, WHY-"

"RUBY." Book grabbed her shoulders gently, and turned her body towards her. Ruby's eyes widened, as her lips clamped shut, shocked at Book's quick move.

"We need to rest, Ruby. We're going to stop her. I promise you, with all of my paged heart, we're going to fix this mess, and clean it up together. No one is gonna die on my watch. Not you, not Icey, not Bubble, not even-"

"Pencil..?" Ruby's voice was reduced to a weakened whisper, as she was coming to with the options they had.

"Yes, even Pencil. Trust me, Ruby. I made a promise long ago, a promise that I would protect you, love you, care for you, and I'm not

ready to let that promise slip out of my fingers. And if I do, well rip me up into a million pieces! I'm going to keep her away from you, and you're going to live on, and recover Flower, and you two are going to be in LOVE again, hell, even GET MARRIED, and you two are going to be so DANG happy for the rest of your lives, do you understand?!" Book's tone was filled with passion, she had even begun to tear up as she was speaking.

Ruby stayed quiet for a moment, before she began to nod, slowly moving towards her and wrapping her arms around her body.

"...I..understand.." her words were muffled as she dug her face into Book's cover. Book smiled, gently wrapping her arms around the gemstone once more.

"We're gonna make it through this...YOU'RE going to make it, I'm going to make it, Pencil, Bubble and Icy are going to get through this...I promise."

Ruby felt a small smile grow on her face, as she sunk into Book's arms. She felt...safe. She felt reassured by Book, and loved..

Loved in a rather...familiar way..

Ruby let her eyes close, and she could feel...her warmth...

...someone beside her..

a golden face...shining eyes, with luscious petals and smooth lips...

I love you, Ruby.

I've never stopped loving you.

And I promise...we'll see each other soon, okay..?

Ruby nodded slightly, feeling the presence slowly dissipate into the darkened atmosphere. She let her eyes open, as she looked back up towards Book. She had a comforting smile on her face, slowly lifting her up and letting her sit back-

Knock.

The two looked up at the sudden knock, Ruby's eyes widening in shock. Book shifted slightly, looking back towards the door where the knock had come from. They stayed still, waiting for the noise to rise up once more.

...

..everything stayed quiet, such as it was before. The only noise that fluttered through the late night air was the soft breathing and quiet snores from the two sleeping objects nearby, and the gentle breezes that danced through the air outside. Ruby silently sighed, wiping her forehead in relief as book simply shrugged it off.

"Maybe Bubble or Ice Cube kicked the walls of the van or something." Book chuckled quietly, looking towards Ruby. A smile stretched itself onto her face, as she nodded in response towards-

Knock knock.

Book poured, turning her head towards the objects while she let her arms cross in dissatisfaction.

"Alright you two, enough is enough." Her voice shot through the silence, shattering it into a million shards. This made Ruby shiver.

Knock knock knock knock knock.

"Y-Yeah, Book's right, it's not funny anymore.." Ruby chimed in..

"Hmm..wha..?" Bubble shifted, her eyes slowly dragging open as she cautiously sat herself upwards to face the two. "Wh-What's going oin..?"

"You two are trying to scare us with that knocking! Well it isn't going to work on us!" Book smirked triumphantly.

Bubble raised an eyebrow. "Whoit..?"

"What's going on..?" Ice Cube yawned out grumpily. "What's with all the-"

Knock knock kNOCK.

The four were silenced by the sudden force of the knocks, all eyes locked onto the door. Book sighed.

"Pencil, it's okay, we know it's you."

KNOCK.

"You aren't going to fool us."

KNOCK.

"We're going to make it through now, but you need to knock it off."

KNOCK.

"B-Book, I don't think that's Pencil.." Ice Cube whispered out.

"Oh please, you guys know her. She's just trying to mess with us!"

KNOCK.

"Then open the door! Maybe something happened to her..!"

"But wouldn't SHE oipen the door?"

"Bubble's right, if that really is Pencil, she can open the-"

"H-..Help.."

Silence. They all stared at each other, slowly beginning to move towards the door once more.

"Uh...Pencil..?" Book called out.

"*help.."*

Ice Cube looked up. "That's her...that's her! OPEN THE DOOR!"

"No way! She sounds like a BROKEN RECORD!" Ruby cried out. "DON'T OPEN IT!"

"Pencil's in danger! We have to help her!"

"We're going to DIE IF WE DO! DON'T-"

Book raised her hand up, silencing the two bickering objects. "Listen. What we're going to do, is check through the dang window, okay? It's covered, but we can check to see if that really is Pencil on the other side. Does that sound good..?"

They nodded. Book smiled, before turning around and cautiously making her way towards the door. She gripped the blanket..

"help..me.."

Book slowly lifted the sheet off of the window, and cautiously peeked through the glass..

It was Pencil!

"Oh...looks like Icy was right..! It's Pencil!" She whispered towards them..

"Is she hurt?" Bubble asked.

"Uh..a few bruises here and there, cuts.."

"Then whoit are you waiting foir? LET HER IN!"

Book jumped, quickly unlocking the doors and yanking it open.

"Ah! You're safe and sound with us Pencil, but you really have to-"

She stopped.

There was Pencil's head..dangling in front of the window. Pencil's body was sprawled on the ground, and a message written in blood

was etched onto the dirt..

" "Knock" It off."

I M. PROBABLY GOING TO NYC TOMORROW IM BOUTTA GO TO BROADWAY AND WYACH THE PROM

ANYWAYS HELLO!!!!!! How is everyone? I hope y'all are doing good!

Im in Spain! The s is silent (:

Anyways I'm sorry for the wait, I've been. Busy...
kinda feeling low

But hey! Here's a new part!

Enjoy my dudes!

~ice

Out, I Said!

Book couldn't move.

She was paralyzed with fear as she stared at the disembodied head, droplets of blood splashing onto the engraved message on the dirt below. A grave silence hung over the others as they realized the dire situation they are now in.

No one could find anything to say, as fear and horror coiled around their throats and strangled them, cutting off the hopeful gasps of air that could bring them to.

It stayed this way, until Ruby shakily grabbed the door, and slowly brought it to a close, quiet enough to make it seem like there was nothing. She looked up, her face now painted with excruciating fear.

"Book...?" Her voice was merely reduced to a petrified whisper. Book slowly began to move, scooting away from the door as her limbs began to tremble madly in panic. She didn't know what to do.

For the first time through out the hellbent chaos that unfolded in Yoyleland, she genuinely didn't know what to do.

"W-We lost Pencil...we lost Match, we're going to die!" Ice Cube cried out, a slick stream of tears pouring down her eyes. Book covered her face and began to sob out, curling up pathetically on the seat. Bubble was still frozen, a empty blankness in her eyes as her gaze was fixated on the floor.

She was always used to it.

Used to death.

She was used to her entire life disappearing in an instant, that it didn't really affect her anymore.

But under these circumstances...?

She was truly terrified to come face-to-face with death once more.

Ruby looked around, noticing everyone already crossing the breaking point. To them, this was it, and it seems like they're already preparing for their own demise. She also felt the same way- feeling that she should accept the fact that she'll be dead, and never to return. Recovery centers were took for granted, and now, they're permanently gone...

She should've appreciated them more.

But something told her to do...something.

Anything.

Anything to at least fight back...

But they've tried to. Three times. And look where that had led them...

...maybe something to at least let them leave in peace...?

Cruel, she knew, but the possibility of them surviving was extremely slim. There they were, two of the most fragile, weakest objects in the show. Though she wouldn't exactly call Book...fragile. She was a hard-cover...both outside, and in her personality. Standing up for what's right, you know..?

And Ruby herself..?

She's just a gem. What could destroy a gem?

....

Ruby looked up, gently placing her hand on Book's arm. Book's crying came to a quick pause as she looked up, goblets of tears rolling down her face. She noticed Ruby's expression, and slowly began to calm down, wiping her eyes shakily as she scooped her up into her arms.

Ruby just let it happen. She let Book hold her tightly, as her eyes closed. Was it..helping..?

She then felt another object's pair of arms wrap around the two, and she looked up..

Bubble.

Ice Cube huddled up beside the three, closing her eyes sadly as they all stayed in that position. Huddled closely together, a heavy sadness fogging the atmosphere around them.

Ruby didn't want to accept it. She didn't want to die.

She didn't want to die.

All she wanted was to be with *her.*

Flower..

Here, alive and well, wrapping their arms around each other and not letting go, just like they had told each other when they had begun to date each other. A small smile lifted on her face as she remembered her..

...she began to think about how it would be like if she was here.

They'd rebuild the recovery center. They'd bring back everyone who had fallen into Pin's ruthless hands.

And they'd punish her.

Over.

And over.

Ruby didn't feel any sympathy towards Pin. When she connected the dots, and realized that she was the reason who Flower was gone, a burning hatred replaced the dire emptiness that hummed in her chest.

The only thing she wanted besides Flower...was Pin dead.

....no.

Ruby looked up.

"We're leaving. Now." Her voice broke through the silence, making the others jump in surprise.

"What? What do y-you mean by that?" Ice Cube's frail voice trembled slightly as she looked towards the gem.

"We're leaving this van. I can't stay here and wait for her to come by again and *kill* us."

"B-But what are we going to do?! She's going to find us, and she's going to-"

"-Kill us, no matter where we go, I KNOW." Ruby sat up, clenching her fists tightly. "But I just can't wait here anymore..."

They all stayed quiet once more, until Book cleared her throat slightly.

"...We...could always sneak up to the Yoyle Needy.." she suggested.

"That sounds nice, but...if she finds us up there, we'll end up like Firey in no time.." Ruby placed a hand on her shoulder comfortingly.

"Whoit about the TLC? We could oilways go there.." Bubble acknowledged, wringing her hands together nervously. Ruby thought for a moment...yet, she shook her head.

"Too risky. We could run into Pin, or she could run into us."

"The path that's taken for Pin's garden I-is also the path that we take to go to the TLC...she could see us.." Book began to open herself up, flipping through pages of guidelines and hidden secrets about the land, until she stopped at a small map that showed the entirety of the city.

Ruby gently traced her finger along a path that they'd take to get to the area where the TLC was located...

She was right. Another path intertwined with theirs, leading up to the TLC, and also heading towards the garden of hell.

"We could always try to swim over the canal...when we do, we head

back to the field, where we competed back in BFDIA!"

"But that's 2,763 miles away, once we cross the canal!" Ice Cube was scanning a different page inside of Book, trying to find places where they could be safe from the demon that loomed over them constantly. But as the three charred amongst themselves, there was still one who didn't join in...

Bubble was staring at the ground, towards the lower area of Book's pages. As she did, she noticed a small, folded piece of paper, darkened stains blotching each corner of it. She leaned in closer, grabbing it before inspecting it slightly...

What's this? Some kind of strange bookmark for her or something? She wondered to herself.

She cautiously began to unfold it, her eyebrows furrowing together as she noticed the darkened splotches stained more and more of the page...

"Alright, I think we could always try to go this way? It's a bit longer, but maybe we can-"

"BOOK!"

The broken cry made Book shut herself in surprise, as her eyes frantically looked around the van.

"Wh-wha?! What happened, I-I'm here, I'm here!" She stuttered out.

Her gaze immediately locked onto Bubble's, and it sent a chill down Book's cover.

Bubble's eyes burned with fury, as she clenched the piece of paper in her trembling hands. She breathed heavily, as she muttered out a incoherent sentence.

"Wh-..What did you say, Bubble..?" Book spat out nervously.

"WHAT THE HELL IS THOIS?!"

Pin grasped the cold hand, letting her fingers intertwine with the lifeless ones that dangled before her. A tiny smile grew on her face as she let her eyes close.

Blood was splattered all over her, bags hanging from underneath her eyes. Her body ached, as she held a pair of limbs in her other hand...

~

"PAS DE DEUX, BITCH!" Pencil screamed out angrily, bringing the saw down with all of her might.

In an instant, Pin quickly rolled to her side, her body shape helping her escape the swing that would've dug into her skull. Her...plastic? Whatever she had.

Instead, the saw dug into the ground, and Pencil gasped slightly, grasping its handles and attempting to yank it out. Adrenaline shot through her body as she began to tug at the saw, trying to pry it out of the ground.

Little did she know, that a figure had grabbed hold of the crowbar; slowly beginning to approach her from behind...

"Cmon...CMON!" Pencil screamed out, tugging it more, and more, until...

"YES! COME HERE YOU-"

S P R A C K.

Pencil let out a pained yelp, as the saw flew out of her hands. She grabbed her "neck" in pain, her eyes widening as she turned back-

S P R A C K.

Pin swung the crowbar once more, striking for her head at the second try. This sent Pencil collapsing onto the ground, knocking her out cold as a trail of blood trickled down the side of her head.

Pin stood over her angrily, panting as one hand clenched the crowbar- the other clenching a wound on her head.

"We could've done this the e a s i e r way Pencil..." she hissed out, kneeling down and shakily grabbing the saw.

"But you...you wanted a f i g h t...the memories of your beloved M a t c h filling you with a strength that you hoped could d e f e a t me..." she yanked Pencil's head up.

Wait.

Wait.

"But no...not only did you try to break me...but you a w a k e n e d me."

Stop.

WHAT ARE YOU DOING.

"Now...it's time for me to get what I've been needing the entire time...we

could've done this so much quicker, Pencil.." she pressed the points of the saw into her neck..

STOP IT STOP STOP STOP-

S h h k.

"Ah...memories...am I right, Coiny?" Pin giggled out, gently rubbing her thumb over a frigid hand...well...Coiny's hand. She waited for a moment, before she gasped out slightly.

"Of course I remember, why would you think that?!" Pin held up a pair of freshly dismembered hands, the blood still dripping down onto the soil below.

She stood up, swiftly brushing the dirt off of her legs before she looked around.

"Hmm...it only seems fair if we placed you next to the snapdragons...I feel like you'd be able to add some very nice touches to it!" A crooked grin spread in her face, as she made her way around a few plants before gently kneeling down onto the ground. As she pulled out her trowel, she scoffed, crossing her arms.

"What? No! That spot is reserved for a *very* special object..." she

sighed out. "...she's going to add so much to my garden...more colors, more plants, more LIFE! All I have to do is get her! Besides, I know where they're little 'hiding spot' is!"

What are you talking about..?

"Hm?"

What- no, who are you TALKING about?!

"Oh, hush now dearie! You'll see once we finish up over here..." she gently placed the hands in a small hole, standing them in a upright position as she began to fill the hole with dirt.

NONO! I'm not waiting anymore! I-I want to know what you're planning to do!

"Planning?"

YES.

"You'll see soon, goodness! Don't ask me what we'll be doing, just follow me." She smiled.

NO! DO YOU KNOW WHAT PATH YOU'RE MAKING US GO DOWN TO?!

"Uh, no?" She snickered innocently, twirling the trowel in her hands.

You're going to kill EVERY OBJECT in the city! And then, a-and then-

"And what? That was *your* plan, you know."

WHAT DO YOU-

"Listen! Just follow what I do, you're going to be just fine!"

That's what you said last time, and the time before, and-

"HUSH! Look..." she patted the freshly dug earth, slowly standing up from the spot she was seated at before. A warm smile grew on her face as her eyes glanced over at the bushes of snapdragons that sprung in the air- hopefully, they would be thriving with life soon,

with the help of Pencil's luscious hands, of course!

She looked around, letting her eyes roam freely around the garden. She smiled as she saw Golfball's legs, vines of arum-lilies snaking up the leg. Larkspurs twirled around Teardrop's hand; the blue glowing as a ray of sunlight shone upon it. Roses seemed to dance with the wind...yet...

something felt...missing.

But what could it be..?

"GET OUT!" Bubble screamed, shoving Book out of the van. Ruby watched, nodding in agreement as her eyes began to shine with tears.

Book collapsed onto the ground, grunting in pain as she tried to get back up onto her feet.

"N-No, please.." Book whispered out. "Please..."

"Were you working with her?! WERE YOU?!" Ruby stepped out of the van angrily, stomping towards her.

"No- I WASN'T, RUBY!"

"YOU KNEW! YOU KNEW IT ALL ALONG! YOU KNEW SHE WAS DEAD- THEY WERE ALL DEAD!"

"IT WASN'T ME! THAT WAS FROM PIN'S ROOM!"

"OH, SO YOU WERE WITH HER?!"

"NO, NO I WASN'T!"

As the screaming ensued, Ice Cube sat behind the two, her body trembling.

She was tired of this.

She wanted to do something.

And that something..?

"You're going to kill her, then ME, THEN-"

"I CAN'T DO THIS ANYMORE!"

Ice Cube shoved Ruby out of the way, dashing out of the van as she began to run.

Run.

Run away.

They're calling you-

Run.

Run.

See them.

See...her...

Run.

Finally! A new part

Hello everyone, sorry writings been slow...I've been busy.
I have a lot going on and uh...h

Anybody else excited about the Firey plush??? He may not be my favorite character but HE LOOKS SOF

anyways, enjoy! ^^

~Ice

Reconciliation

Don't look back.

Just run.

Run.

Keep going.

You'll feel safe.

Go.

Go.

They're calling you.

They want you.

They need you back.

Turn around.

Go with them.

They're here for you-

No.

No.

Keep running.

She's waiting for you.

***She's** waiting for you.*

They're all waiting for you..

..in the end.

"I think I'm going mad." Fanny breathed out, sulking against the corner of the TLC. Bracelety looked up towards her, concerned at her demeanor.

"What..?"

"I can't sleep. I can't move away from here. I can't do anything right now and its all because of her."

"..Bubble..?"

Fanny shot her a glare, bags hanging underneath her eyes.

"No, I'm talking about Pin- OF COURSE I'm talking about Bubble!" She snapped out. Bracelety grimaced slightly, before looking back up..

"I'm sure they're safe..remember, they're with their alliance!"

"Yeah, an alliance that treats them like shit-"

"LANGUAGE!" A voice called out. Fanny lifted her head to look towards the object that had called that out.

It was Blocky. He sat cross-legged across the chamber, his eyes narrowing towards the two as he overheard the conversation the two were having. A tiny figure laid in his lap, his blades gently swaying in the darkened as Blocky stroked his head gently.

Seems like Grassy and Blocky got along well, since he was now dozing off in his lap.

"Oh- Sorry Blocky!" Bracelety whispered out, waving her hand towards the two.

"I could give less of a fuck right now." Fanny grumbled.

"Stop it with the language! He's just a kid!"

"Yeah, and we're all on the verge of death here, what's your damn point?"

The TLC fell silent, all eyes soon turning to stare at Fanny in disbelief.

"What? Am I wrong?"

"We're safe in here." Basketball sat up, biting her bottom lip.

"Nothing can hurt us."

"Sure, tell that to Puffball."

"She left on her own, and she went down a path that LED her to that psycho! It wasn't our-"

"That killer knows we're here. She knows we're here. Leafy is going to come here, and take us out, one by ONE."

Knock knock knock.

Panic bursted through the chamber, as all the objects scurried to the opposite side of where the knocking was coming from. Bracelety scurried away, fear quickly swirling around in her head, yet Fanny didn't budge to move.

"What is it."

"F-..Fanny..?" Ice Cube gasped out slightly, feeling a few beads of sweat trailing down her face. She pressed herself against the frigid wall, trembling as she desperately tried to get-

"Ice Cube?!" Fanny exclaimed, quickly jumping up.

"ICY?!"

"BRACELETY!"

All hell broke loose for her. Ice Cube began to bawl as she slid down onto her knees, staying as close to the wall as she possibly could. Bracelety dashed over towards the wall where she was, placing a hand on it and trying to help Ice Cube recollect herself.

"Hey- HEY, ICY!" She called out, knocking the wall frantically. Ice Cube wheezed out, weakly banging her foot against the wall.

"ICY, WHATS THE MATTER?! T-TALK TO ME!"

She continued to heave and sob, trying to find the words to speak to her- ultimately failing.

"ICE CUBE, PLEASE, C-CALM DOWN!" Bracelety's eyes filled with tears as she frantically slammed her hands against the wall. This only made Ice Cube panic even more- her body trembling as nausea quickly slammed her in the gut.

As the crying and yelling ensued, Fanny looked up, her eye twitching in annoyance. She slowly stood up, stretching her legs out before making her way towards Bracelety, standing beside her as she faced the wall.

"..Ice Cube."

Crying.

"Ice Cube. That's enough."

More crying.

For fucks sake. I hate this shit. Fanny thought to herself before she gently kicked the wall.

"Listen to me. I need you to stop."

"W-Wha..?" Ice Cube grimaced, looking up as crystal beads of tears slid down her cheeks.

"I need you to stop crying. I hate crying." Her tone was stern, yet it was more gentle- for the first time since being in this cursed little chamber, her tone had changed.

Bracelety stared, her eyes full of awe as she listened to Fanny. Slowly, Ice Cube's cries and wails began to die down, until all they could hear was shaky hiccuping and sniffling.

"Alright Ice Cube. We're here now. You're okay. It's okay." The harsh tone quickly returned.

"N-No..no, I-..I'm not.." Ice Cube whispered out, staring into the blue wall intensely.

"WHAT DO YOU MEAN BY THAT?" Bracelety questioned, wringing her hands together.

"I-..I'm not safe...no one is.."

"WHY?!"

"..Sh-she's after us..I..I had to run..it was all t-..too much..!"

Hearing this made Fanny's heart drop, her eyes widening as her eye twitched slightly.

"..Where's Bubble." She gritted through her teeth.

"Ah-..shes..shes with *them*.."

"With WHO."

"Book.." Ice Cube looked up. "She- oh..I should've..oh.."

"WHAT DID YOU DO?! WHAT DID YOU DO TO HER?!"

"I DIDN'T DO ANYTHING! I SWEAR!"

"ALRIGHT, ALRIGHT, PLEASE CALM DOWN!" Bracelety cried out, raising her hand towards Fanny.

Silence.

"..Alright...Now, Icy...What's going on out there?"

"PLEASE, LET ME EXPLAIN!" Book wailed out, quickly darting around a few trees. Ruby and Bubble quickly followed her; Bubble being wary about where she was running, and Ruby simply crashing into whatever there was. She was fuming- she didn't care what happened to her. All she wanted was that monster to pay.

"Oh I've already heard ENOUGH!" Ruby screamed out, running after her.

Book continued to run- a burning sensation beginning to permeate through out her lungs. She began to wheeze out, clutching her chest as she was beginning to stumble.

She just wanted to stop. She wanted it all to stop.

She wanted her old life back.

Ruby. Bubble. Ice Cube.

Match. Even Pencil.

But here she was- her alliance leaders dead, and with the rest of them convinced that she had been the mastermind of it all.

Book clenched her eyes shut as she came to a halt, leaning against a tree while pained wheezes and gasps escaped her lips. She tried letting fresh air enter her lungs- but with each breath she took, an agonizing sensation burned in her chest.

"BOOK!"

Oh, shit.

Book began to scramble back up, but was quickly tackled down by Ruby- both of them rolling on the ground. Book cried out, as Ruby quickly pinned her down, fury blazing in her eyes.

"You're not hurting ANYONE anymore." Ruby growled out.

"I-I never HURT ANYONE RUBY!"

"SURE you didn't, you fricken' LIAR!"

"DO YOU SERIOUSLY THINK I'D DO SOMETHING LIKE THIS?! MURDER PENCIL, BURN MATCH, KILL EVERYONE IN THE ENTIRE GODDAMN CITY?!"

Ruby stayed silent, pressing her body against the dirt below.

"Oh, you'd definitely do something like this to me."

"GHH- WHAT WOULD GIVE YOU THE IDEA-"

"I loved her.."

Ruby's saddened tone quickly caught Book off-guard. She stared at

her in disbelief, watching as Ruby's eyes began to gloss over with tears. Her grip on Book's arms began to loosen as she looked away.

"Sh-..She may have been mean..sure, b-but deep down, I knew that...that she was something special.." she whispered.

"..I knew that she was a good object...a-and I was right...she was changing..changing for the better.."

Book listened.

"But you took it away from me...you took her away from me, you took my life away...and do you know why you did it..?!" She etched in closer, the anger subtly returning to her.

"..because you were jealous. You wanted to get rid of h e r, so you could have me. I may have played along into your little game, but I'm cutting the strings now- my heart STILL BELONGS to her, no MATTER-"

"SHUT UP!" Book screamed out, tears pouring down her face. "JUST SHUT UP, SHUT UP SHUT UP SHUT UP!"

"WHY SHOULD I?! HUH?! YOU KNOW WHAT YOU DID-"

"I WAS TRYING TO FIND YOU!" Book snapped.

"YOU FUCKING REMEMBER IT, DON'T YOU?! AFTER NEEDLE DIED, AND TEARDROP WAS IN YOUR STATE, YOU WENT TO FUCKING HELP HER, AND WE COULDN'T FIND YOU! SO GUESS WHAT WE HAD TO DO BECAUSE OF ALL OF THE BULLSHIT THAT WAS HAPPENING?!" Book shoved Ruby off of her, shakily standing back onto her feet.

"WE LOOKED AND LOOKED AND EVENTUALLY, PENCIL TOLD ME TO LOOK INSIDE OF PIN'S HOUSE. SHE HAD THE SUSPICION THAT SHE WAS BEHIND IT, YET DID WE FUCKING LISTEN?! NO. I SEARCHED EVERYWHERE IN THAT GOD-DAMNED HOUSE, AND I FOUND THAT SHIT!" She grabbed her head, tears of frustration pouring down her face.

"I WANTED TO SEE WHAT IT WAS, BUT I DIDN'T, BECAUSE I SAW

Y O U. YOU WERE SAFE. YOU WERE ALIVE. AND I-I EVENTUALLY FORGOT ABOUT IT, AND-" Her yelling quickly died down- her expression soon morphing into guilt.

"I-...I had the evidence with me...for all of this time.." she slowly hugged herself. "I-..I could've saved them..Pencil..Match.."

"Book.." Ruby slowly began to stand up, reaching out for her..

"...TB...GB...Coiny...Fries..." her fists clenched tightly..

"S-..stop.."

"G-Gelatin...Puffball...Teardrop.." her eyes narrowed..

"Book..!"

"..Needle...F-.." She fell silent.

Ruby stared at her in disbelief.

She could've saved them.

They could've been here today.

Right now.

Together.

Get angry.

Get angry.

She could've saved them all. Flower could've been here.

Standing next to her.

Holding her hand.

Ruby's face scrunched up, seemingly at the edge of exploding...

Yell.

Scream.

Hit her.

Beat her.

She took her away.

She's using you.

Get her.

Get her.

Get *her*.

Ruby slowly wrapped her arms around Book, letting her eyes close. She didn't utter a word- letting the silence speak for itself. Book flinched slightly at her touch, looking towards her and stuttering slightly.

"Wh-..What are you doing."

"..I'm sorry."

"..No..Ruby, j-just-"

"No, Book, I'M sorry. Th-..This isn't your fault. This isn't." She clutched her hands close to her chest, letting her gaze interlock with hers.

"It IS! B-By not saying anything, by not showing that-..that LIST, I let everyone DIE! THEY COULD'VE-"

"Yes, I know that they could've been alive right now. But wh-what was there to do?"

"I could've showed it to GB, To Coiny, to ANYONE. ANYONE who could take on Pin and defeat her. We could've stopped her, and this mess would've ended LONG AGO. BUT NO!" Book clasped her hands around her head.

"Everyone we knew. Everyone we loved. Everyone we appreciated. DEAD. DEAD WITH NO WAY TO COME BACK, BECAUSE THE RECOVER CENTER IS GONE!"

"Hey-"

"THAT'S ANOTHER THING! I-If I showed GB this, not only would they have been able to STOP Pin, they could've finished the RECOVERY CENTER. That way, everyone who was dead would have been back, and- and-" She sobbed out.

"I-I'M JUST LIKE H E R."

"NO, Book, thats not TRUE-"

"I'M HOTHEADED, I-I'M ARROGANT, I-.. I-"

S L A P.

Book held her cheek, a burning sensation quickly spreading all over her cheek. She fell silent- her eyes widened, and her head slowly turning back towards Ruby.

Her hand was now poised downwards, as she slowly began to walk towards her.

"..Stop. Listen to yourself.." her voice was nearly inaudible, being reduced to a hush.

"I know...you could've done something, anything...but its too late for that. You have to keep going...okay...?" She held her hand out..

"Please, Book...I'm so sorry about what happened before...I-..I promise that its going to be okay..you know why..?"

Book sniffed out slightly, wiping her eyes.

"Wh-..Why."

"Because...you and me? We can make it through. You're intelligent, clear-minded, and ready for anything. Even though all of this made us fall...that doesn't mean we should wait until Pin comes by and gets us." Ruby smiled.

"We can fight back. Together."

"T-...Together..?" Book shakily let her hand intertwine with hers, the soft feeling of Ruby's hands soothing her as Ruby gently pulled her in for an embrace. Ruby comforted Book, rubbing her back gently and placing her head on her shoulder.

"Together."

"YOU HAVE TO HIDE, NOW!"

"B-But where?!"

I-..I DON'T KNOW, JUST HIDE!" Bracelety cried out, frantically slamming her hands against the wall. "SHE'S GOING TO HURT YOU!"

"THAT FUCKING BITCH!" Fanny angrily kicked the wall, tears threatening to make their way down her face. "I HATE HER. I HATE HER!"

"She lied to all of us...Sh-She..." Pen curled up, fear eating away at his thoughts while Eraser held him close, his eyes narrowing angrily.

"Oh, she's going to get it, big time."He grumbled.

"That means sh-she killed everyone! Even Coiny!" Basketball looked down, trying to let her mind absorb what was going on.

"But why?! He was her boyfriend for fucks sake! That bitch is crazy!" Snowball roared out.

A commotion was quickly boiling up in the TLC, yet Bracelety didn't focus on any of the cries or facts- instead, she focused on Ice Cube.

"YOU HAVE TO GO HIDE ICY!"

"I-I don't know if I-"

"JUST HIDE! GO, OR ELSE-"

"OICE CUBE!"

Ice Cube whirled around, panic slamming into her mind at the sudden call. But as she saw the translucent, rounded figure, relief washed away the bricks of fear- running into her arms.

"B-Bubble.."

"OIce Cube, we hoive to go! Now!"

"B-But-"

"BUBBLE?!" Fanny perked up.

"I-IS THAT YOU?!"

"Fanny..." Bubble let go of Ice Cube, rushing over towards the TLC.

"Fanny, I-I'm soiry..."

As the two quickly began to chat, Ruby and Book caught up to the two, reuniting with them and quickly explaining everything that they could towards them all.

Pin peeked at them from a tree, a smirk growing on her face.

Let me guess. Jackpot?

Absolutely.

What now.

You don't sound too excited, hm..?

You've done ENOUGH TO ME. I-I JUST WANT TO-

HUSH! Now, what do we have here...?

...

Datura flowers. Once ingested, one will be unable to distinguish your hallucinations from reality, which is very dangerous. Other effects include tachycardia (heart beats so fast that it becomes inefficient at moving blood around). So..what's your call.

...Oh, maybe I'll handle it the easier way, hm...?

She cracked her knuckles, eyeing the group from afar...

Shocker. Their relationship hasn't exactly...shattered, yet.

Oh, don't worry.

I've got it under my control.

My control.

She walked out of the tree.

---

the distinct fear that micheal or cary has found this and read it still haunts me oop

anyways, hello everyone, boy am I sleepy

its a late upload today, but since I'm going back to school soon, I gotta write as much as i C a n

i hope that my writing is good, i hope you all are enjoying it so far

thank you for reading, i'll see you all in the next part ＜3

~ice

Desperately Missing You

"Can we just stay here for the night?" Ice Cube asked, sitting beside the TLC.

Book shook her head.

"Sorry Icy- we have to go back. We can't stay here."

"But why? Pin knows where we are noiw.." Bubble acknowledged, sitting beside Ice Cube.

"She won't found us there if she goes back."

"Yeah, but then that means that she'll be out looking for us in the places that we were once around!"

"In the middle of the night?"

"Hey, the sun hasn't set yet- and you know how crazy she is. Who knows what she could do!"

"She wouldn't just look around the entire city to find us at 3 in the morning. It's dark, cold, and pretty spooky if you ask me." Ice Cube chimed in.

"YEAH! YOU READ THOSE FACTS, ICY!" Bracelety's voice exploded from the TLC

Book rubbed her temples exhaustedly, letting out a sigh.

"Listen, I know you two want to stay, and I know they're worried about your well-being in this situation, but we have to go. We aren't safe in this open area- she could easily come by here and take us out one by one!"

"Oh! Oh!" Ruby jumped up slightly, waving her hand in the air.

"Why don't we just rest on the roof? You know, like what you and Icy had to do when we first came to Yoyle City!"

"They had to do what now?!" Fanny coldly replied.

"What kind of fucked-up alliance shit is THIS?!"

"Fanny.." Bubble looked towards the side. "Please.."

She huffed out in anger, letting a few moments pass before she settled down.

"Sorry Bubble." She mumbled out. Bubble cracked a small smile, gently placing her hand on the wall and patting it.

"You're fine.."

"Okay...well, we could just crash on the roof! That way, if Pin does happen to wander about nearby, she won't be able to find us around here! And do you know why?"

"...Because we're on the roof?"

"EXACTLY!"

"Ruby.." Book walked up beside her, gently placing her hand on her shoulder. A kind smile grew on her face, as she turned her towards her.

"That is...a wonderful idea, but how are we going to get up there?"

"Well, we can just stack up on each other! Yknow, someone on the bottom, then someone on top of-"

"Uh, don't you think we can get hurt from that..?" Ice Cube glanced towards the roof.

"No! Bubble Can be on the top, you can go on Book, she'll be on top of-"

"Yeah, no." Book took her hands, holding them close to her chest.

"I appreciate the though Ruby, but we have to make sure we can do it

efficiently, so no one gets hurt.."

Ruby hesitated for a moment, until she let out a sigh of defeat, leaning against Book.

"Well...What CAN we do?"

"Is there a way you can try to bust in? You know, unlock the TLC and go inside?" Ice Cube asked.

Book shrugged.

"We don't have a key, and we can't reach that lock. I'm sorry girls, but it looks like we have no choice but to head back to the van."

"Noooo.." Bubble and Ice Cube cried out, quickly clinging onto the walls of the TLC.

"I hate not being able to protect Bubble! I hate this! I hate the TLC!" Fanny grumbled out.

"I don't want Icy getting hurt!" Bracelety cried out.

The two outside began to comfort their partners inside, words of comfort being the only thing that could strike through the walls.

"Aw, cmon you two! We'll be back, we just have to go get that cake from the supervan! Its okay..." Book comforted, stepping forward.

"Can we just stoiy here and wait?" Bubble looked up.

"We'll be foine-"

"Bubble, please. We know that Pin could come by here- and if she seesk you? You'll be gone in the blink of an eye."

"Well, I'm so used to my entoire life disappearing in an instant that, it doesn't really-"

"It's going to affect you if we can never bring you back to life, Bubble. And not only that, but its gonna affect her as well." She glanced over towards the TLC.

Bubble frowned, turning back towards the TLC.

"Cmon Bubble. I hate when someone I don't hate much is in danger. You have to go." Fanny persuaded, her harsh tone still shining through.

"But Foinny...I-"

"No. Just go...please. Its for your own good."

"But-"

"Bubble."

Bubble hesitated, tears stinging at her eyes before she slowly dragged herself off of the ground. The tears that had flooded her eyes were now being wiped away, as she looked back towards the wall.

"...Well...Oi think oi-"

"WAIT! HOLD THE PHONE! HOLD THE PHONE GIRLS!" Ruby exclaimed, dashing back to the TLC. All eyes quickly turned towards her, curious as to what the gemstone had to say.

"I have an idea!"

"Well...what is it?" Book crossed her arms.

"Okay okay- how about, we eat...some Yoyle Berries!" She grinned, licking her lips excitedly.

Book's face dropped, as she rubbed her temples angrily.

"Ruby, please- why on Earth would we eat-"

"She has a point there, though..!" Bubble walked towards her.

"Bubble, please don't tell me your on her-"

"Okay, when an object consumes anything that contoins Yoyle Berries, what hoippens to them?"

"...they turn into glue, right?" Ice Cube acknowledged.

"No, Oicy! They turn into-"

"METAL!" Ruby gasped out, fluttering her hands happily.

"Exoictly! All we hoive to do, is go back so we all can eat a slice of yoylecake we have in the van!"

"Freesmart, supervan?" Ice Cube reminded.

"Soime thing! If we all eat a sloice, we can turn into metal and that can buy us some time, since we're oill pretty fragile.."

"You know...that isn't a bad idea!" Book chimed in.

"Once we turn into metal, we won't have to worry about Bubble popping, or Ice Cube melting! Ruby won't shatter easily, and I won't have to worry about being torn apart or ripped!"

"Uh-Huh! And you know what that means?"

"We...stay here, and fight back together...?"

"Yeah!"

"But we still have to go back to the supervan and get the cake, as well as weapons to help us with this plan!" Ice Cube whined out.

"And I'm tired!"

"Icy, we have to go if we want to stay here with them. Even then, we need some sort of defense mechanism to make sure we stop Pin for good."

"If they don't want to go, maybe I will...I don't mind!" Ruby giggled out, a ditzy smile on her face.

Book shook her head in disapproval.

"Ruby, we're going to stick together. No more separation, no more running off. We stay together."

"How about we wait until tomorrow? We can always hide where Pin can't see us, if she were to walk by."

"...And where would that be?"

"BEHIND the TLC, of course!" She skipped over towards the back of the TLC.

"Ruby...you can't be-"

"That's a great idea Ruby!" Ice Cube exclaimed.

"Ice Cube!"

"Yeah! We can just stay here for the night, and then BAM! We go tomorrow to get everything!"

"And If Pin decides to take a morning stroll by here tomorrow?" Book snapped.

"...We just hoide. Please, Book...can we just stop running away, loike you said?" Bubble yawned out.

Book stared at the three, speechless and left in disbelief at their agreement. She let a few seconds pass, until she let out a exhausted sigh, rubbing her temples.

"...Someone is staying on night-watch, and it ISN'T GOING TO BE ME."

"YAY!"

What did you do with the daturas, hm?

"Oh, hush. You know anything out of the ordinary is eye-candy to her."

The hell are you even talking about? I thought you 'clever' plan was to poison all of them at once!

"You heard them- they ain't going back! So, if they won't go, I guess we'll have to lure them in somehow~"

Pin carefully placed the last datura on the ground, gently smoothing its' petals out. A grin slowly grew on her face, as she stood up, quickly dusting herself off. Specks of dirt flew everywhere, some even landing on the flowers.

Pin didn't mind.

You seriously think this could work. Remember, she has Book all up on her.

"Of course it will work! They're staying there for the night, and you know how Ruby wants to help the team...so, she'll take up the night-watch, and we just have to wait for the perfect time.."

...And what would that time be?

"When she's sleep deprived, duh!" Pin giggled.

"She wouldn't be able to last until 11! So, we pull off a...*beautiful* act to sweep her off her feet!"

Beautiful? Holy crap, you seriously are-

"Shush!"

Pin walked over towards a large tree, carefully pulling out a collage

of painted petals- all mounted and glued together.

....Five, of them. All painted pink.

Ohhh, I see where your going...

"You think she's over her bitchy girlfriend? Pff, the moment she sees these bad boys, she'll have no choice but to follow!" Pin cackled out, wrapping her arms around herself.

"It's full proof!"

And what if she DOESN'T follow you?

"Well, it's nothing my good little trowel won't fix."

Killing her on the spot?

"No. Just letting her get a bit of shut-eye before I get the goods out, you know?"

.....

You better make this work. We've been waiting too long.

I need to take my mind off of all this. We need to. We're going mad.

"Don't worry sweetheart! Once we're through with her, that ecstasy will help you feel better!" Pin patted her forehead, walking towards a small clearing on her path.

She gazed up towards the sky, watching as the vibrant blue color slowly melt into a violet shade.

"All we have to do now, is wait."

..Why don't you kill one of the other Freesmarters?

"Huh?"

You know...Book, Ice Cube, Bubble. It's better to get them out of the way, before you let one of them-

"No no no, trust me on this one honey! A little shine towards our direction wouldn't hurt!"

Shine?

What are you planning to do to Ruby anyway?

Silence.

"...I think it's time for a little sparkle in this garden, don't you think?"

Hours had passed.

The sun was now below them all- the moon shining brightly in the night sky. Stars twinkled and glowed in the atmosphere, and a few clouds lazily drifted across the sky.

And on the ground?

Peaceful.

Everyone was deep into their slumber, dreams flying high into galaxy. Gentle breezes swayed through the trees, sending a shiver down their spines.

Except for Ice Cube. She was used to it.

Hours had passed by now, and Ruby was the only one who wasn't out like a light. She sat against the TLC, her eyes scanning the areas around the sleeping team. Bags of exhaustion hung underneath her eyes, but she didn't mind much- she let her thoughts ring in her mind, preventing her from passing out cold.

Beside her, Book snoozed away. She was curled up, quiet snoring coming out of her every now and then. Bubble and Ice Cube laid against the TLC- not too far from where they were. They leaned against it as closely as they could, not wanting to separate themselves from their trapped chambers.

A small smile grew on Ruby's face.

She was happy for them! She had always known how hard it was for them, with Ice Cube being an alternate, and Bubble..not being well-liked within the alliance.

She remembered Ice Cube's misery on the roof of the clubhouse. The sadness that emitted from Bubble's tone as she fought back tears to reassure Ruby that she was fine.

...and here they were.

Trying to survive, of course...

..But they both had someone.

Someone to keep fighting for.

..but what about her-

No.

Ruby shook her head, quickly shooing the sleepiness out of her system.

No more thoughts like that.

It was going to be okay, for rock's sake!

She's going to bring her back. Hell, she's going to bring everyone back! And things are going to go back to normal, like Book had promised!

Flower and her would reunite, they would go back to dating, and they'd marry!

Well, would she say yes..? She was just a puny little gemstone.

Clumsy..full of mistakes...

...a crybaby..

Ruby shook her head again, desperate.

Stop.

Enough!

Things were going to get better!

Were?

ARE!

What time is it?

I don't know.

It's been hours.

More like three..

Four?

Five?

I just want to sleep..

I want her back!

I'm bored..

Well we're protecting them! Isn't that enough?

Sleep..

No.

Rest..

STOP IT!

Love?

JUST HOLD ON, DAMMIT-

Flower?

Ruby's eyes widened as her eyes were locked onto the area ahead of her. She wasn't sure if her vision was failing on her, but she swore she saw something moving..

..or Someone..

"Ugh- what's wrong with me..?" She mumbled, rubbing her eyes sleepily.

There's a lot of things.

Please just shut up.

You whine too much.

Seriously, go away-

Crybaby.

Stop.

Idiot.

No.

"Ruby.."

A whisper?

Ruby looked back.

There..

There!

Is that..?

No.

She's supposed to be DEAD!

Flower?

Her petals?

Is that..?

Ruby looked down, immediately pinching herself on her arm- just to be sure she wasn't dreaming any of this.

She grimaced.

...Nothing.

She looked back towards the trees..

...there they were..
Her petals...swaying gently in the late night breeze, as a hand reached up and slowly caressed them...

Her..

She..

She was THERE!

FLOWER!

Without thinking twice, Ruby sprang up, her heart overwhelming with joy and relief. As she quickly ran towards the trees, she noticed a few flowers trailing down towards..

She grinned. She didn't know how she had managed to return-

Who cares?

WHO CARES?!

SHES BACK!

MY GIRLFRIEND IS BACK!

SHES HERE! SHES HERE!

Her eyes stung with tears, as she followed the trail of flowers..

I MISSED YOU!

She dashed desperately through the trees, her lungs burning with every cold breath she took.

ITS BEEN SO LONG, I-

"FLOWER!"

"Hey Ruby~"

Wait..

Wait-

You DIDN'T-

"..Pin-"

T H W A C K.

This is kinda bad sorry-

I just retook the SAT and I'm dead right now

But! BFB 14!!!!

And I got me A FIREY PLUSH...the basard

ANYWAYS uh..enjoy I guess

~ice

Shattered Dreams

Here in this garden...

She looked down at her trembling hands, noticing the stab wounds growing deeper and deeper.

Strange, the thicker the cuts got..

And no matter how much blood poured down and splattered onto the floor...

No pain.

Why was she even here?

She looked around.

Where were the others?

She opened her mouth...

Nope.

Can't speak.

Why are you even looking?

You turn pages for others who don't give two shits about you.

How about we rip some pages for them, hm?

Hurts, doesn't it?

Watching bits of yourself being shred into bits, broken into

Why are you even here?

You should be dead.

You should've died long ago.

Bitch.

You're controlling.

You're only using her happiness.

You wanted her dead, so she could be all yours.

Are you sure Pin's the real monster here?

Book shot up, gasping for air as she clutched her chest. Her heart pounded like a drum, echoing through her chest and causing her to shiver...just a little bit.

Beads of sweat dripped down her cover, and she let her eyes stare at the sky above them.

They were in a clearing- the woods around them, with the TLC propped onto a small hill. The sun was slowly beginning to rise- chasing away the ocean blue that blanketed the sky, with the stars

slowly beginning to fade away. Clouds lazily drifted across it all, and the hushed wind of the forest let the leaves dance along with them.

For a moment, Book felt...safe.

Relaxed.

It's been a while since she's felt this.

She may have slept on top of the clubhouse with Ice Cube (and might I add- it was incredibly cold up there), but those were the times where there wasn't a hand-obsessed , garden-crazed murder maniac running through the streets and taking down everyone, one by one.

No.

She had Ice Cube by her side. She heard her quiet snores, which she enjoyed hearing when the morning were quiet and warm. She felt the frigid aura around her bring her closer, and she'd gently put her arm around the small figure.

And Ice Cube would smile.

That smile.

Sleepy, yet comforted, reassured that her friend was still there.

Speaking of it, she'd probably should do it now.

Book carefully moved onto her side, and noticed that Ice Cube was just a few inches away from her.

She was curled up, snoozing away beside the metal wall that separated the doomed from the lost. Her heart continued to beat with the love she had grown for someone else on the other side.

..Just like her.

Book sighed, letting her eyes gaze back up towards the early morning sky as her thoughts began to roam freely once more.

She was tired of running. Tired of hiding, tired of living in fear, never knowing which moment would be your last.

She just wanted a break- hell, she was at the brink of being mentally torn to shreds.

But..it won't happen.

She has to stay strong.

For her team..and for her.

Ruby.

Wait.

Where is Ruby?

She looked towards the other side, letting her eyes adjust to the shifting darkness around her.

..She wasn't there.

Book whirled her head around, checking to see if she was beside Bubble and Ice Cube...

She wasn't there.

Panic began to creep up Book's spine as she quickly sat herself up, rubbing the sleepiness out of her eyes frantically. She decided to get up, looking around the TLC to see if she had gone to the other side of it all..

"Ruby?" Book whispered out, peeking out of the corner of the metal container.

The only thing that greeted her back was the gentle wind that breezes onto her cover.

She shuddered.

"Rubes...this isn't funny, cmon." Book sighed out, trying to keep her cool.

Don't panic. It'll just make it worse.

Shoving the nervousness that she felt away inside of her, she continued to walk around the TLC, expecting to catch a glimpse of the shining gem in her eye. She expected to hear her mischievous giggling, and expected to see the joyous twinkle in her eye.

All she got was the empty air around her, which embraced her in a snap.

No.

No.

Book rushed around, quickly digging through the bushes and peeking behind the trees for her. If this was some sort of joke, she was taking it too far- she KNOWS the situation they're in. Why would she be doing something like this?

"Mmh..Book..?" Ice Cube yawned out, blinking hazily. She heard the frantic footsteps from the figure- quickly waking her up from her slumber.

"What's going on..?"

"Ah- uh, Nothing Ice Cube! Nothing! J-Just stay there, a-and rest!"

"Hmm.." Ice Cube rubbed her eyes sleepily, sitting back up and placing herself against the wall of the TLC. She sat still..

..there she was.

Snoring..quite loudly.

A small giggle escaped her lips as she looked back out towards the forest, and the happiness she had inside quickly dissipated into worry as she stared at her friend; watching her frantic movements made her look around.

What she ok?

What was she looking for?

Who was-

Oh.

See you soon...

Ruby's eyes scrunched slightly, as a sharp pain jabbed through her head. It throbbed inside of her mind, quickly waking her up from the dazed state that she was in.

Lifting her head up, she felt gravity trying to yank her back down. She felt limp...

Empty.

But at the same time, heavy.

She began to move her arm a bit-

...Wait.

Her eyebrows furrowed together as she began to move her arms once more.

Stuck.

Tied up..?

No.

Ruby quickly began to try and wriggle herself free, jerking her arms to the sides to see if she could free herself from the ropes that snaked around her wrist.

They didn't even budge.

Her breathing began to increase as fear boiled through her veins. Her train of thought was frozen, as she began to move around, trying everything that she could to-

C r a c k.

Her heart dropped.

She grimaced at the noise that broke through the silence..as well as the feeling.

She couldn't see it..

She knew.

She could feel it running down her face.

..A shard..

She was breaking...

Oh my rock, I'm BREAKING, I'M-

No. Breathe.

Just breathe.

Relax.

Ruby let her eyes close, while she steadied her breathing patiently. Her heart pounded repeatedly in her chest, yet as she let the oxygen enter through her body, it began to soothe her...

Lull her.

Just breathe.

..Her eyes watered.

No.

Don't think about her.

Not now.

She began to move her mouth slightly, but quickly noticed that it was taped shut- silencing her from everything around her.

No, NO-

Breathe.

Don't freak out. We're not dead. We're not.

...Okay..

Where am I..?

Hazily, she began to let her eyes roam around her surroundings, praying that she'd just be in the woods where she was.

She didn't care- keep her in the woods. If anything, she could run.

But for her, that puny bead of hope was crushed with the boot of reality as another familiar surrounding began to make its way into her mind.

Nothing but the sky that stretched endlessly around her.

Cold, grey floors.

Puny, bite-sized buildings that towered below her, the fading colors of each one haunting the city.

And, with chilling winds that howled as it swung by..?

Wh-..why am I on the-

"Good morning sunshine!~" A voice giggled out, sending shivers down her spine.

As soon as the figure stepped into Ruby's view, she began to shriek out- her wails muffled by tape that shut her mouth, silencing her for the moment. Tears filled her eyes to the brim, while she continued to thrash around violently,

trying her damned hardest to get away from HER.

Pin simply watched, raising an eyebrow in utter amusement.

"Wow...this is new." She let out a soft chuckle, kneeling down at Ruby's level. This only made the gemstone panic even more, as she continued to let put muffled cries and screams of terror.

Oh please. This is getting very VERY old now. Just shut her up-

"Ah!~ No, it fills me with ecstasy to hear her broken cries like this! Please, let me have a moment!"

Stop. Just look at her.

"Look at you!" Pin began to place a hand on Ruby's cheek, slowly beginning to caress it with her thumb, yet Ruby turned away- giving a cold glance back towards her.

See?

"Hm...Come on now, don't be like that dear...I just want to see your gorgeous eyes!"

Ruby whined out, moving her body away from her as quickly as she could.

"Let me see! If Flower managed to fall head-over-heels for them, I want to see them too!"

She moved faster.

"I mean, you're pretty shiny! Are your eyes like that too?"

Faster.

"Please? I just want to-"

P O W.

Ruby slammed her legs straight into Pin's gut, letting out an angered yelp. Anger quickly rushed through her brain, all while she watched Pin keel over in pain.

Huh...

This feels...familiar..doesn't it..?

What. Being in pain.

...No.

Pin's smile grew crooked, as she let her eyes slowly roll towards Ruby's direction. Her gaze immediately locked with hers, and Ruby couldn't help but shrivel up in terror.

Her eyes.

They contained an aura of the damned, with hell's fire blazing in the back of it all. The image of the haunting glow that came from the flames, steamed into Ruby's eyes as it licked around the despairing emptiness of her mind.

Pin smirked.

"Scary...isn't it. You remind me of him..." She sat up on her knees, her arm shakily wrapped around her abdomen.

Ruby's eyebrow furrowed in bitterness.

"Ah ah ah, you know who. You saw him, after all!"

The mention of him quickly made the memories flood back to her, making her wince and shudder in fear. Pin enjoyed this.

Why don't we trigger..a little more out of her!

"Uh-Huh! Don't you remember the blood that pooled around his body? The way his jaw hung so openly? The bones that stuck out of his arms, with his skin looking like confetti hanging off of it! Wasn't that amazing?!"

Nausea swirled inside Ruby's stomach as it all washed back to her. Her face was beginning to turn pale, but her eyes stayed wide open-bloodshot with fear.

"Hm..can't talk much, huh?"

She groaned.

Just do it already for pin factories sake. Why do you TOY WITH THEM LIKE THIS, DON'T YOU GET HOW MUCH TIME YOUR WASTING ON THIS BULLSHIT?!

Cmon' dear. You've been enjoying this too, I know you have.

No, no, I DON'T. I don't want to do this.

Yes you can. Besides, it seems that our little gemstone hear is almost at her "breaking point"!

"Okay..so how about...oh! Woody!"

Ruby shut her eyes.

Don't.

Don't look at her.

Don't.

"Ruby, we've been OVER THIS! Let me see those beautiful eyes, don't you know how much I ADORE them?"

Ruby shook her head.

"RUBY!~ OPEN YOUR EYES FOR ME! We still have SO MUCH TO TALK ABOUT!" Pin's tone was lighthearted and bubbly.

Ruby clenched her eyes harder.

Keep them closed.

Just keep them CLOSED-

"I'm gonna count to three, and if your dirty little eyes aren't open, you're in big trouble missy."

The sudden change in Pin's tone made Ruby's blood freeze.

She didn't want to. Oh, for the love of rock, she didn't want to.

But she threatened-

No. We have to stay strong.

"One." Pin gritted through her teeth.

She's bluffing. She's bluffing.

Don't give in.

Be strong. She would've wanted us to be strong-

Wait...who?

"TWO."

Book..

She's looking for me..right..?

Of course she would! She cares about me, remember?

But Flower..she cared about me too-

But Book helped you through it all!

She's helped you up, she helped you continue on for this long! I'm sure she'd want us to stay strong!

Strong..

Stay strong! We have to, for her! For-

"THREE."

Before Ruby could react, Pin swiftly yanked out her trowel. She gave it a menacing twirl, as she lifted Ruby closer towards her face. She leaned into her 'ear', and whispered..

"I warned you."

And with that, she stabbed the trowel straight into Ruby's eye. A muffled scream of pain shook through the tape that blocked it out completely, and this sent Ruby into a panic- she flailed her twitching legs around while her arms trembled uncontrollably. Thick tears of blood oozed down her cheek as she felt the frigid metal dig into her skull, deeper, and deeper.

Pin giggled, hearing the silenced screams and seeing her thrash around like a fish out of water. This was...entertaining for her.

Too bad it won't last for long.

"Alright..now hold still-"

Pin gripped the trowel tightly, and jerked it towards the side, twisting it and maneuvering it rapidly. The sound of squishing flesh and popping veins sounded like church bells ringing in her ears, making her let out a dreamy sigh.

This felt incredible. Each object that she filled off filled her with more and more ecstasy- it was addicting, and it sent a buzz of excitement through her body, one that made her crave it all even more.

As she twisted the trowel, blood suddenly sprayed onto her face- making her flinch at first, before letting out a chuckle.

"Oops! Sorry...must've cut the eye there...maybe a blood vessel. Who knows?"

Ruby let out a heartbreaking wail, her right eye gazing up to the sky. It was dewey with tears- as well as being extremely bloodshot. The color was draining out of her face quickly, and even the shine against her body began to die down.

Time ticked by with each aching second, and soon enough, Pin yanked the trowel out. Blood splattered everywhere below them, painting the dull grey floor with a chilling splatter of crimson red blood. Pin let Ruby's body collapse onto the floor, tossing her aside like a used tissue.

"Wow Ruby...Your eye looks even prettier up close! I mean..." Pin turned around, holding up the bloodied-eyeball close to her face. The glimmer of life quickly faded way, as droplets of blood trickled down Pin's arm. Ruby, on the other hand, was letting out pathetic wheezes and shaky cries, her body twitching rapidly.

Pathetic. Pin rolled her eyes half-heartedly.

"Alright sweetheart, I think its time that we end things here." She mumbled, placing the trowel down beside her feet. She grabbed Ruby, and yanked her off of her feet.

Almost immediately, Ruby began to squirm and tremble, the muffled wails returning once more. She slowly began to swing her legs back and forth, trying to kick Pin, or hurt her, just to let her go...

Thats it.

S H R I I P.

"For pin factories sake, speak out wontcha?! I'm tired of hearing you mumbling!" Pin snapped.

Ruby gasped out as her lips began to sting horribly. Grimacing, she held back a sob, before stretching them out in pain.

"Wh-What...are you..g-gonna do to me..?!" Her voice was all over the place.

"Oh- I thought you knew by now!"

"Wh-What..?!"

Angrily, Pin stomped over towards the edge of the tower, slowly hovering Ruby over the edge. She jerked her around, gritting through her teeth,

"Such a beautiful view, isn't it?! Too bad it'll be the last thing you'll ever s e e."

No.

"P-Pin, PIN PLEASE, PLE-E-EASE!" Ruby sobbed at the top of her lungs, her vocal chords throbbing from how loud she was. Pin smiled.

"Beg, Ruby. BEG."

"BOOK! B-BOOK! ICY! BUBBLE! HELP ME! HE-ELP!" Ruby hiccuped.

"BEG- Oh..What did you say..?" Pin tilted her head innocently, lifting Ruby closer to her. Ruby's cries silenced for a moment, as she let her eye meet with Pin's gaze..

"B-..Book..Book..m-my Book.." She gasped out.

Oh.

This should be...

"Oh Ruby..don't you realize..They're all d e a d.." Pin smiled.

Ruby didn't even respond to the statement. Her eye glazed over, as

the breath was beginning to flutter out of her body. Her struggled breaths made Pin giggle, as she stared at the pained gem in astonishment.

"Bo-o-ok..Book..H-Help...my Book..."

"She's dead, Ruby..."

"I-I..Book..Book.."

"You didn't protect her..."

"M-My Bo-ok.."

"And do you know why..?" Pin smiled letting her grip loosen.

This made Ruby's eye widen..a glimmer flashing in it for a split second.

"Because it was all your fault. You let her die...Just like Flower."

Pin's finger slipped free.

"Have fun seeing your girlfriend down there.." She waved happily...

Ruby's scream began to die down as she fell all the way down towards the bottom of the tower...

One last glimmer shining from her body...

A shattering noise echoed through out the haunted city...as well as the bones that had shattered and broke amongst the fall.

Her dreams of surviving.

Her dreams of marrying the one she loved.

Her dreams of making it through...

Shattered.

Just like she was.

SCHOOL IS WACK OK

hello!!! How is everyone?? I hope y'all are doing good!
I should be working on homework but i had to finish this ok.....aight

anyways...the lesbians have perished. I am. sorry.

also a irl friend found my stories and i am living in fear

anyways!! Enjoy! wink

~Ice

She's Right Here

"Wow- Who knew that Ruby's remains would be so...*beautiful."* Pin whispered, cradling the remains and limbs of the deceased jewel in her arms.

A soothing aura had filled her body, as she stared at the light that reflected off of these shards.

She had to admit- this was all beginning to weigh her down. The thought of her dead lover was slowly etching back into her mind, seeping through the slightest cracks in the barrier that had formed between her corrupted sense of being, and her true personality that she had lost long ago.

A small part of her wanted to break through- she wanted to throw it all down, and scream, scream until she couldn't scream no more.

Apologize. Turn herself in. And let those three fools bring back the brats that had their lives painfully cut short by Pin's hands.

She didn't care about what would happen to her- as long as she payed for what she's done, and let everything in the city go back to normal.

That small part wanted to end it all.

But, that tiny glimmer of hope inside of her has since been long gone- the memories and feelings of now quickly burning that flame out.

The power.

The garden.

Your strength and capabilities to create elaborate plans and schemes to help keep this garden, as well as yourself, alive.

The ecstasy of your friends begging for mercy, as you stand above them-

ready to snatch their lives away from their puny little hands.

These have been the ultimate motive that had silenced her quiet voice of reason.

But no matter how much she tried, she could still feel that voice trying to crawl back up to her mind- and breaking her out of the darkened fog that haunted her mind.

And so...here she was.

One down, and three left to go.

While she clutched Ruby's remains closer to her, she began to hear the faint, frantic footsteps that were quickly approaching to the area. Pin raised her eyebrow in curiously- quickly sliding behind a large building and waiting for the figure to pass by.

And most importantly, she waited to see who it was,

and too see their sweet reaction to what would be waiting for them ahead.

"RUBY?!"

Book dashed through the city, her eyes frantically scanning every corner and every window to see if she could find her shining gem.

Her Ruby.

Where did she go?

She had to keep the panicked thoughts hidden away, and make a stand for her friends around her. She wanted them all to feel secure and safe, and she wanted them to survive more than anything else.

But two are back at the TLC, not knowing that Book was out.

And Ruby was missing.

She ran through the streets, forcing the tears in her eyes back into her head. She had to stay strong, she had to stay strong,

Stay strong...

Her chest began to ache.

Be a leader...

Her legs burned.

Protect them.

She slowed down...and a glimpse of red quickly caught her eye.

Protect them.

"RUBY?!" She called out, rushing towards...

The puddle of blood shined from the sunlight that reflected off of it, as the shards stuck out of it like a sore thumb.

This, was what was left of her.

Book stumbled towards the puddle...

That day, the contestants in the TLC swore they could hear the most heartbreaking and chilling wail- one that had managed to reverberate through out the city, and even break through the walls that had trapped them all.

Days went by, and soon, the colors of the leaves began to shift their colors. Going from a sweetened shade of green, to a vicious scarlet, somehow showed the mood that was portrayed from the city.

Harsh.

Weakened.

Dead.

The breeze danced through the air, the autumn chill carrying an eeriness as it passed through, what was once, a city that thrived with the scampering objects that called the city 'home'. Darkened puddles of dried blood stained the science museum, and the laboratory that once belonged to the science duo was now untouched and abandoned- a date similar to the museum before they had found it all.

Not much was heard through the city. One could usually hear Firey's screams of terror from afar- of course, it being because of his fear of heights.
There was also the whirring that came from the countless inventions and machinery Golfball had created, was now silenced, as each machine eventually died out, one by one.
The chatter from the freesmarters that had annoyed the others living there, left nothing but dread in replacement for it all.

Everyone,

Those who had brought the city back to a partial functioning,

Had died off.

And as for our three remaining residents...

"Book, we're running low on food...I think we should try to get some more.." Ice Cube suggested, her tone hushed and gentle.

No response.

"Maybe we can all go together...I-..I know it's hard, b-but like you said..we have to keep going..maybe we can move out and go hide in Golfball's lab?"

Nothing.

Ice Cube frowned, staring at the figure in front of her. She was curled up, facing away from the two as dents and tears that were created into the seats of the van, surrounded her.

She had never seen her like this. Ice Cube never saw Book as a violent, raging object. She was kind, clear-headed and rational- someone who kept their heads up high through out this entire crisis.

But now, here she was- after raging through the van, and destroying nearly everything inside, she laid pathetically in the corner, clutching a few pebbles in her bloodied hands.

Well...not really pebbles.

Shards.

Her shards.

Ice Cube grimaced, quietly stepping out of the van before she turned back to face Bubble.

"She isn't responding.." her voice faltered a bit.

Bubble frowned, glancing back towards the van.

"We hoive to do something- like you said, we're running low on food.."

"But I-I don't want to go back into the city! Not after what she had found!"

"We could try to go back to the clubhouse? Or maybe Golfball's factory- she has to have some sort of food supplies in there!"

"I tried telling that to Book, b-but she didn't answer.." Ice Cube looked up at Bubble, her eyes bloodshot, and quickly filling with tears.

"I-I'm so scared Bubble, I-...I've never seen her like this, sh-shes never like this! I-I don't want her to get hurt, b-but-"

"This is a unique situation, and in toimes like these...you see a side of others that usually remain hidden." Bubble placed a hand on her shoulder area gently, sighing.

"We can't really blame her, oicy. She lost Ruby..."

"B-But-" Ice Cube but her lip.

"Sh-She...I-..."

Bubble hushed her, tenderly wrapping her arms around her and holding her close. She was careful to not hold her too tightly, just to keep her safe from the threat of being popped. Ice Cube sniffed, burying her face into Bubble's arms and eventually beginning to cry.

Seconds passed. Her heart throbbed with grief, as her gentle sniffles soon began to raise into broken cries of pain.

She wasn't the one to break down in situations like these. Hell, she'd always hold back her tears when Pencil and Match would mistreat her.

But now..

She couldn't.

Everything was gone. Everything and everyone she has known.

The Book she had once known. Her gentle and kind touch that soothed her whenever she had thrown herself into Book's embrace.

Her words of comfort. Those sleepless nights on the roof, when Book

would hold her close against her cover, and reassure her that it would all be okay.

She would bring back the fire in Ice Cube's eyes, giving her another chance to get up and face a new day of, what she thought, were filled with dread and annoyance to an 'alliance' she didn't want to call her 'friends'.

Now she couldn't believe what she would see as a 'problem'.

She sniveled, shaking her head and looking back up to meet Bubble's broken gaze. She managed to crack a small smile, before her trembling voice let her speak:

"R-..Remember...How I used to complain about how Pencil and Match used to treat me?"

"I do." Bubble responded blankly...almost curiously, wondering why she was bringing up the subject of what was happening before this mess.

"I...was an idiot.." she whispered. "C-Complaining about how I wasn't allowed to live with you guys inside of the clubhouse...I-I remembered wishing for them to just..disappear..vanish...get out of my life.."

"Oicy.."

"A-And now...they're...I-I..." She choked up.

"I can't...I wish I d-didn't say any of that..I never wanted any of it to happen! N-Now they're dead, o-our alliance, our friends, I-"

Everything collapsed. Ice Cube wept, her body trembling in Bubble's arms as tears slicked down her frozen cheeks. All the while, Bubble sat silently, letting Ice Cube cry into her arms.

She didn't care about the fact that they were taken away from the TLC.

She didn't care that her head was pounding with pain from the

migraine that was hitting her like a truck.

All she could think about was keeping it cool,

For her.

Ice Cube.

She's been through...a lot. Poor girl hasn't been able to sleep well because of the chaos that had been unfolding.

That, and because she was afraid of Book.

She had become more violent, screaming angrily and destroying everything she came in contact with after the incident.

And that, was only the beginning of it all.

"Book! There you are! Where did you go? W-We thought you were taken away, o-or something!" Ice Cube had jumped up in relief, rushing towards the stumbling figure overhead.

Bubble sighed, as she turned back towards the wall she was up against.

"Whats going on now." Fanny grumbled.

"She just coime back..."

"Did she find her?

"Well-"

A panicked scream made Bubble jump up, as she quickly turned back to face the two.

"AH- OICY?!"

"We're leaving." Book gritted through her teeth, holding Ice Cube tightly in her her arms. She stomped towards Bubble, her eyes blazing with rage and sadness.

Bubble moved back.

"B-Book, What hoippened?!"

"We're going back."

"B-But- But Foinny! Bracelety! We can't-"

"WE'RE GOING BACK, I SAID!"

Now that Book was moving closer to her, she noticed the cuts on her knees; blood oozing out of each tiny gash. Her cheeks seemed sunken in, tears staining them while bags hung heavily underneath her eyes. Her hands also had blood snaking down her palms, the droplets of crimson staining the ground below them.

And all the while, the others were yelling in the back.

"BUBBLE?! BUBBLE, WHAT IS SHE DOING TO YOU?!"

"ICE CUBE?!"

"DON'T YOU FUCKING HURT HER- PLEASE DON'T DO ANYTHING TO HER! PLEASE!"

"We're going back to the VAN, and we are NEVER LEAVING." Book screeched out, angrily grabbing Bubble's arms and yanking her onto her feet.

"No!" Bubble yelped out, trying to pull her arm away from her..

But what made all the voices dissipate around her, was when Book whirled her head around and stared her down-

Her gaze.

Her emotions.

Her heart...

Shattered.

Just like she was.

"Do you think we're gonna make it out of this..?" Ice Cube hiccuped, still curled up tightly in her loosened embrace. Bubble's glance shifted towards her, as her eyes dimmed slightly at the thought.

It was three against one.

Armless, fragile, and...the only one who can stop her,

Against the one who managed to wipe out an entire city.

"...We Just hoive to pull through...no matter whoit happens."

"B-..But if we die..?"

"..Oicy, we just have to pull through. We do our best to survoive, and if we don't...we don't."

"B-But what about Bracelety? And Fanny? Th-they don't know what's going on, she took us away and all they must've heard was the-"

"I know...but they just have to woit a little longer. We're in a serious situation...and as much as I love Fanny, we hoive to stay here and leave them be. They'll be fine."

"But-"

"They'll be fine." Bubble looked down at her, her eyes closed as she gently placed a finger onto her lips, hushing her.

"We Just...have to make it through. For us."

A sense of unease filled Ice Cube as she sat up, gently squirming out of Bubble's hold. As much as she wanted to help Book through,

Help everyone in the TLC become free,

Help Fanny and Bracelety..

...she just had to pull through.

Keep her cool.

...

"What now..?" Ice Cube sat up in Bubble's arms, letting Bubble gently wipe the tears that had made their way down her cheeks.

"Well..we hoive to get Book back up on her feet." She mumbled lowly.

"I hate seeing her loike this."

"It scared me.."

"I know...which is why we have to bring her back. She's just lost...and I don't blame her."

Bubble gave Ice Cube a gentle squeeze, before standing back up, facing the van calmly. Her heart thumped with a slight panic, knowing that if Book went off on another raging rampage, she'd be the one who bit the dust.

But she had to do this.

Book has to snap out of it. They have a chance to fix it all- a chance to fix the recovery center and bring everyone home.

And a chance to defeat Pin's plan.

She stepped up, and slowly moved forward to where Book was lying down, letting the silence hover above the two for a solid minute.

"Book, we have to keep moving. There's no point in woiting around and planning anymore."

Book didn't respond.

"Book, PLEASE." Bubble gritted through her teeth.

"I-If you want, we can help you- I don't knoiw- bury what you have left of her, but-"

"NO!" Book shrieked out, tears pouring down her cover.

"YOU AREN'T BURYING HER ANYWHERE!"

"Book, Ruby isn't there anymore."

"I MADE A PROMISE!" She wailed.

"A PROMISE TO PROTECT HER! AND I-I'M NOT LETTING THAT GO! I'M NOT LETTING HER GO!"

"Book, you did what you could-"

"LEAVE US ALONE!" She slammed her fist against the bottom of the car, shakily lifting herself up.

Bubble squinted.

"Book, 'us'? What do you-"

"R-Ruby says she wants you to leave us *alone."* Book stared straight into Bubble's soul, her eyes filled with insanity.

Bubble began to back away, cautiously trying to not set her off.

"Th-Those are her SHARDS! B-Book, she's gone! SHES GONE!"

"No she ISN'T!"

Book watched as Bubble stumbled out of the van, all while she shakily made her way to grab the door. She shot the two a angered glare...

..before it slowly lifted into a crazed smile.

"..Bubble...don't you *see..?"*

Pin gently patted the mountain of dirt that held Ruby's hand in the air, smiling as she brushed her hand against Flower's lifeless hand.

Book held back a sob..yet..

Pin giggled.

"S h e ' s...right h e r e...!"

"Don't worry Flower...she's right *here."*

To whoever said senior year was easy- perish

It's just busy
BUT GOOD

BECAUSE IM GOING TO HOMECOMING with a very pretty girl so!!!
Gay time

But hey everyone!!!!! It's been too long and I'm sorry):

Anyways we got some sad boy hours up in this part. And we're getting close to a infamous scene.....I'm excited!

And as you can tell, my writing has gotten! WORSE!

But it's ok. It's ok.

Anyways, I'll talk with you guys next time! Hope you guys enjoy!

~ice

Losing Me, Losing You

Tired.

Just...so tired.

Book was laying on the van floor- clutching the now-dull shards that was once, alive and well. No sunlight dared to enter there- the shadows lurked with haunting auras that tried to pull her out of reality, but grief was working its magic- keeping its barbed arms coiled around Book, and holding her against the soothing feeling of the carpeted floor of the van.

Songs of misery were on rewind in her head- the whispers of hope and dull lights of happiness ultimately washed away into the sorrowful melodies that never seemed to end inside of her. There were moments where Book would burst into tears, and there were moments where Book laid in dead silence, staring intensely at Ruby's shards in her hands.

Maybe she was hoping that she'd move.

Or maybe she was fantasizing about other possibilities- anything instead of this one. She unlocked the little box of dreams and worlds she had once shoved away from her mind, and simply let them run wild.

When Book wept into Ruby's bloodied shards, Ruby had jumped behind her- placing her soft hands on Book's trembling shoulders. She'd yell out in a mocking tone, teasing Book about the reaction and the sudden scare she had made just for her-
and Book? Well, she'd embrace her into a hug.

She could even hear her voice in these little dreams of hers.

"Why are you crying?! It was just a joke, ya goof!"

"I-I was so sure- I didn't- y-your shards- wh-"

Ruby giggled softly, gently caressing Book's tear-stained cheeks and brushing away the globs of tears that had sneaked past her hands. "Shh...shh...I'm here, Book...I'm here.."

Book could feel the comforting embrace of her arms, as she shakily rested her head onto her chest. Hearing her heart beat ever so softly inside her, Book's eyelids began to grow heavy, the fear inside of her slowly fluttering into a happily hushed sensation.

She was still shaken by the incident- but, with Ruby's arms wrapped around her, she couldn't help but feel relieved that it was all a prank. She could've been dead- and she would've been kneeling over that pool of 'blood', her tears of sorrow mixing foggily with the crimson below her.

Oh, how lovely would it have been.

But instead of being held by Ruby, she was here, embraced by the cruel, autumn atmosphere that seemed to linger with the dead.

She wished she were dead.

She could fly around non-stop, and she could hear the chatter of what once used to be her friends.

Laying here for the past week now hasn't been a blast, but its what she would've wanted anyways.

Its funny- thinking about all the things you once had in the grip of your hands, and wishing that you still had it all with you. Because

now that it's gone, its gone.

...

She wish she could've been there, at least. Been there by her side, comforting her until she was ultimately tossed off of the side.

But why would she want that? It would've been much, much worse- seeing the person you love so much, getting murdered right in front of you- and you, not being able to do a single thing about it.

Then maybe she would've wanted to speak to her again. At least apologize for the promise she had ultimately broken- protect her, remember?

She did everything but that. She could've stayed up instead, she could've been the one who fended Pin away from the group, hell, she could've been the one who died instead- and at this point, she didn't give two shits about dying.

It's all hopeless. All of it.

What was the point of even moving forward anyways. She was going to die. She was going to die by her hands. The hands that killed...her.

And once she's dead? Its Bubble's turn.

And after Bubble, Ice Cube's on the chopping block.

But Book didn't care. Nothing seems to feel right anymore in this life. Caught in the webs of loss and destruction, entangled in the self-hatred that was kept so toxically captivating by the small spider of misfortune.

No, not small. More like, giant- because the number of dead bodies were rising faster than my self-esteem ever will.

Well, this situation really shouldn't have the most dead bodies- more like the ocean, since its the biggest graveyard on the entire planet, and, seemingly a garbage chute for people who like to fuck us all over.

...

Why are we forced to move forward, towards the destructive path that the people we once knew and loved created for us?

Not even create- they destroyed what was once, the bright and hopeful future of their lives. Maybe they could've competed once more, or maybe they all could've become closer- like a family.

Maybe the alliance would've mended back together. They could've included Ice Cube and herself, and they wouldn't have to worry about the freezing nights they'd spend on the roof.

Maybe Ice Cube and Bubble could have had a chance with their lovers- locked away in a small, metal box, far from freedom but safely enclosed by the walls that Pin will never be able to reach.

Book's fist clenched.

...How lucky they all must be.

Innocently oblivious to the hell that is burning from the outside. They didn't have to experience the stress and panic of finding a dead body every so often, their corpses mangled and misshapen in many horrific ways. And the only trademark that confirmed that these were murders?

Hands.

The corpses hands were no longer there- they were cleanly cut off, a pool of blood replacing its figure instead.

Is that the reason why Pin was doing this?

Hands?

What was the reason behind it? What's so special about it?

...Her hands were soft.

Oh for fucks sake, here we go again!

Down the pity hole- seriously, Book? Weren't you better than that? Pencil and Match are long gone- and you're the only one in this dysfunctional alliance who seems to have her mind together. So get up, and do something about it.

Ruby's telling me to stay here. She likes it here.

Bubble and Ice Cube are planning to leave, and this is the shit you're doing? Get up, you're going to die if they try to leave this place!

We're all going to die anyways. All under her hands...hands...hands...

And what if THEY die. Bubble? Ice Cube?

I'm just delaying the inevitable every time I protect them. Just let it happen- let it all unfold and nature will take its place. Besides, the quicker I'm killed off, the quicker I can see her again.

I just want to apologize for what I wasn't able to-

Have you forgot how much Ice Cube means to you? You aren't close-close, but you've been there, by her side, through good times and bad- and now you're just going to let her walk away from you like that? Pathetic.

What a way for me to get out of bed.

Listen to me- they're outside. You've been hearing them say that they were going to go back to the TLC- to stay with Fanny and Bracelety! Aren't you scared?!

No.

You had a plan. The blue prints to the recovery centers are just back in GB's lab, untouched and safe! YOU'RE also a recover center manual! Don't you want to save everyone?

No.

...

Please. It hurts- I miss her so much, too. But we have to keep moving

forward- its what she would have wanted for us.

I want to be with her.

But don't you remember the promise you made her?

The broken one.

Yes. The 'broken' one. You promised to bring Flower back-

She's back with Flower now. There's no point in bringing her back anymore.

There is a point. You can bring her back- that promise can be fixed if you just bring her back, dammit.

Why.

You bring her back, and then you bring everyone back- and all of you can get your justice against Pin.

How?

By any means you would like. She has taken away so much from you, from the alliance, from everybody that you've ever known. If you get everyone back, you all could do whatever you'd like to her.

...anything?

Yes. Let her pay for her sins, and drown in her own blood after bathing in the blood of the others.

Book clutched the shards closer to her chest, letting her eyelids lower in exhaustion.

...

Wouldn't you want...just a tad bit of vengeance? After putting you through a endless shell, and seeing each of your team members drop like flies, I was expecting you to be a bit more...angered, you know.

I'm so tired..

So am I- but I want her to pay.

Listen, I can't sit here anymore- she's gone. I wan't to-

Saying you can't do anything isn't going to make your hopes and dreams come true. You aren't going to wake up tomorrow, expecting to hear Pencil yelling at you for sleeping in the van. You aren't going to turn around in shock, because Ruby is standing right behind you, calling for you and holding you in your arms, telling you that she loves you with all of her heart. She isn't going to thank you for doing everything you can, you aren't going to feel the soft kisses she would give you in the morning, you aren't going to enjoy her warm hugs, her cute laugh, none of it. Do you know why?

It's because she's dead, Book. She's dead, and she's gone, and there's nothing else you can do anymore.

She isn't here anymore.

It's just you.

All by yourself.

And you can stay that way, if you'd like. Unless...

By this point, Book was in tears. She was shakily turning the shards in her hands, watching as a few sparkles managed to shine their way through the darkness.

She wanted her back. Although she continued to tell herself that she didn't need her, that death was hanging over all of their shoulders...

...she just wanted her back.

There was something inside of her that was yelling at her to get her back...but it was being drowned out by the amazing feeling of grief that we had all experienced one too many times already, haven't we?

Haven't you?

No?

Yes?

Well...

She could..get her back..

But how is this going to work...

Book pondered for a moment, her head beginning to throb in pain..but, all this thinking was beginning to get her systems back up and running. She slowly sat up..still clutching the jewels as shakily as she could, but she began to think.

Get up...and get out there.
Find whatever GB had left behind...and finish it.

Rebuild.

Fix it all. Bring them all back.
Work together to tackle down that monster, and bring her to the justice they deserve.

Recover.

Fix them all.
Fix herself...fix her friends...fix everyone.

Reconcile.

"Are you sure about this..?" Ice Cube looked up towards Bubble, her frail voice cracking a bit from the nerve and unease that was slowly eating away at her. But Bubble replied in an instant, seemingly not bothered by anything that had been happening for the past few days.

"Yes."

"B-But..what about Book..?"

Bubble rubbed her arms a bit, letting her eyes shift away from the smaller figure. "Listen, OIcy- I love Book, b-But I can't just wait aroind anymore until Pin comes over and kills me- I wanna at least talk to Foinny, at least one more toime.."

"One more time..?"

"OIcy." Bubble gave her a dark look, kneeling down and placing a gentle hand on her head. It pained her to say this to her-...But it had to be said.

"We oiren't going to make it.." She muttered. "No matter whoit we do...Pin is oilways going to find a way around it."

The look on Ice Cube's face was enough to make Bubble's heart pop. She had feared the idea of death- back when she was younger, she had always been so petrified to ponder about what was waiting on the other side for them all, once their time had come. She had tried to find comfort in the situation, but it usually led to downward spirals of existencial crisis's and heavy debates that would overwhelm her, so it was best for her to stay away from it all.

But being a bubble? Death is always the outcome.

Ice Cube's eyes were already shining with tears, as she sniffled, looking down and shriveling up fearfully. "I-..I don't want to die, Bubble-"

"OIcy..."

If you fear death, don't.

It's going to happen.

To you, to me,

To everyone, some way or another.

Being scared of death at one point..Bubble had now grown used to it...

And being destroyed by seeing everyone around her drop like flies for the past few years? She personally didn't mind joining them as well.

But now, standing here in the open, staring down at a friend who is still petrified at the idea of death looming so near, not expecting for their last moments to be cowering below a knife-wielding maniac

who you once called your friend?

...Slowly, Bubble knelt down, and wrapped her arms around the tiny figure. She held her tenderly in her arms, feeling her sniffle and cry softly as the situation was finally sinking in.

Ice Cube was scared. But Bubble was numb.

She wanted to move forward and be with the person who had her heart...at least once more, before she was finally put to rest.

But she was patient. There she stayed, holding Ice Cube in her arms as she sobbed like a small child. She didn't care that she wasn't prepared for death...no no.

When the time came, she would hold her close...and step into the darkness, together with her.

"I don't know what's next.."

Pin crossed her arms, a unsatisfied frown growing on her face. She tapped her foot on the uneven dirt below, and let her eyes scan her works in front of her.

Of course, it was all beautiful. The garden was practically overflowing with life- the petals of the flowers seemed to have a soft aura surrounding them, and even when the sun is down, they seemed to emit a soft, heavenly glow from them.

It seemed magical... something that she would had never imagined like this before.

But still, there was something missing..

"And just to think," she began, "I was walking around, back and fourth, stressing over a stupid little dream that would soon open many wonderful doors for me? What a little wimp I was.."

You still are.

Oh...you're still here. Pin rolled her eyes.

What are you even doing anymore, honey. It's all as clear as day now! You see, I've already gotten everyone in...and now there's only three left! A joyful grin quickly grew on Pin's face.

And maybe? We can even get to all of those little objects in- what do you all call it- the TLC...?

I don't care anymore. I just want to stay and-

And what? Apologize? Cry, try to stop me? Well, guess what honey, that isn't gonna-

Say goodbye.

"....What?" The sudden news shattered through Pin's mind.

...you heard me.
You were right. There's no point in me being...here, anymore. I know what you're going to do...and I have no choice but to accept what you're going to do.

At first...Pin stood there, shock numbing every other sensation she could of felt at that moment.

And then..a giggle.

Giggles.

And then..

Pin was cackling, wiping her eyes as tears were beginning to pour down her face. "WOW! I never knew you were so...WEAK! Where was this strong, independent leader I've heard SOOO much about, huh?!"

I just can't do this anymore. Even if I do fight back...who am I going to come home to.

Who am I going to run into anymore, without them looking at me and cussing, cursing, hey- even beating me. I won't be able to go anywhere because of the tainted image I...painted over myself.

"Uh Huh..!" Pin giggled, gently fumbling with a small lily of the valley.

And if I can't do anything about myself anymore...then I'd rather be with them. Because at least they'll know that I wasn't the one who was doing all of this.

"You really miss those dead-beats?"

They're my dead beats. And yes, I do.

"Then LEAVE, dear! If you want to go diddle with your closest 'friends' again, just pack your bags and leave! It is that simple!" Pin crossed her arms.

But a moment of silence passed...as the air around her had begun to grow heavy.

Confused, Pin began to look around as the atmosphere was growing darker. Fog swirled through the vines that constricted around the limbs that were sliced away, and the leaves seemed to sway, the soft rustling giving off a hushed warning towards her. Her eyes narrowed..as this was beginning to grow familiar.

All too familiar.

But don't worry...you won't really be alone, once I'm out of here..

"What the fuck are you talking about." Pin's lip curled angrily. "What are you-"

I could be with them, yes...but, as we both know, they aren't really...settled in, yet, yes...?

And I'm sure they'd love to finally have a break...

...Figures were beginning to form around her. She shakily began to stumble back, trying to avoid anything that she was pulling from her sleeves...but the closer she got to the gate, the thicker the fog would grow.

You loved them too...

You loved him, too..

...I hope you don't mind...but we're all pretty tired...would you like to come and join us..?

As we lay in these fields of our flesh...with the sunshine shining down on us...

And while we are hearing your begs for mercy.

Imagine actually having talent??? God I wish

I don't even have anything to say at this point. I'm tired, I'm sad, I lost everything

Kinda wanting to yeet myself into the ocean baby

I just want to give up, because these are never good, nothing I ever do is goooood

Also, writers block? Sis, she's my friend

It's almost 12 am and Im crying

-Ice

Keep Moving Forward

Flipping through the abandoned sheets of paper, in a quiet laboratory thats slammed in the middle of a ghost town, was not how Book wanted to start her week. But here she was, doing it anyway.

Being away from people who would usually break the silence constantly made her used to knowing what day it was, what time it was, where she would go and what she would do. But, the people around her would always pop up unexpectedly- and a surprise would follow along them, some good, some bad, and some, even shocking.

Thats the fun thing about being able to roam around the city. There were people you knew everywhere, and you woke up each morning wondering where the day would take you, and what people life would bring to your doors. Each day would become a new experience for you to frame up and hang onto the walls of your memories, and they'd still be there- shiny, perfect, and ready to play once more when you decide to take a trip down memory lane. And when you'd lay your head to rest for the next day, you would hardly be able to remember the dream that carried you through the blank darkness- you'd wake up, drowsy, of course, and begin to wake yourself up for the next day.

But as this crisis went on, each day became more heavy and barren. One would wake up, and let out the blessed sigh of relief- thankful to at least wake up and see the sunshine pouring through the blinds. You'd continue to trudge through the day- doing the routine that you thought would be necessary and helpful to get you through this disaster, but with each day passing, became more mind-shattering and bearing. You begin to feel your brain melting into a strange, pink goo, oozing down your spine and sinking down into the soles of your feet.

What makes it worse, is the dreams. The sun would slowly ooze into

the Earth, morphing into the moon that would then rise up and shine brightly in the sky. You'd stay awake and count your blessing, and make sure everything around you is in a spiffy and functioning order. And once you rest your little head, the vivid nightmares that stab through your brain and freeze the blood running through your body would instantly snap you awake- the memory of it keeping you frozen, and petrified to take one small step outside of your bed.

But one isn't just afraid of the darkness. One is more afraid of what's inside of it.

This all becomes repetitive- You'd crave to escape this world and go outside, just to see those familiar faces once more so you could feel a refreshing breeze wash away your worries. The sight of their faces and the sound of their voices would feel like the first gasp of air you'd take once you've reached the surface of the water.

But you can't. Those people were robbed from the experiences they have worked oh so hard for, and they will no longer have any chances on experiencing them. And for that, you can blame the thumbtack with the knife.

This all has taken a toll on Book's mind. She was unable to think clearly, unable to understand the heaviness of the situation around her. She would wake up each morning and instantly begin to cry, clutching the gleaming red shards of, what used to be, her best friend for life.

But she had snapped out of it.

She was done. Fuck everything that had happened her, fuck mourning, fuck crying, fuck checking the doors around her and making sure they were well locked.

Fuck living life safely. If she wanted to see a change to the end of the story, she was going to make it happen- whether everyone would've liked it, or not.

And now, here she was. Looking through the graphs and diagrams that once below to the sport-ball scientists of the group, who's phantoms are possibly watching down on her right now, and scolding

her for going through such precious information.

..Book frowned. A small breeze sent a shiver down her spine, as she slowly began to resume her search. Ever since she stepped foot into this lab, she couldn't help but feel an eerie sense of hopelessness and pain. When she made her way down the stairs, she could sense the presence of familiar figures walking right beside her.

"Ugh.." Book shook her head. "Once I'm finished, I have to take a nap..- wait, no..I can't take a nap right now...I have to finish this before I do anything else.."

She then looked up. "But...rest is important...I could become seriously affected if I don't get enough sleep-"

"If you sleep, you could never wake up to see the next day. It isn't worth it."

"But I could mess up, because of fatigue, headaches- Heck, if anything were to happen, I won't be able to fight, or run fast enough!"

"But the more I sleep, the more time I waste- I need to use every second I can. The sooner I bring everyone back, the sooner we can stop Pin, and put this stupid murdering spree to an end!!"

"....I'm talking to myself, aren't I."

"Yes! Yes you are."

Book sighed, forcing herself to rub the sleepiness out of her eyes as she continued the search.

Screw whatever she was feeling.

And screw the possibility of her dead pals watching her. She would apologize once its all over- besides, this is for the best anyways!

If they didn't bring them back.

She would.

"Arent'cha mad about the fact that she's digging through all of the desks and drawers..and making a mess of it..?"

"I would be mad, in any other cases. But in this one, no."

"Bleh!"

"He's right. She's doing this for us- Book is one of the smartest, strongest and hardworking objects I have known around here- besides GB..- but I know she can finish it. If you both started on the machine, I know, with a little bit of time, and patience-"

"And strength."

"-She can be able to finish what you have started."

"...I sure hope so."

"I know so. You two have definitely put in a lot of work anyways..."

"Ruby's right. Remember how long we'd stay up to try and fix that thing..? I'd make you and I endless cups of coffee, and you and I would crack up at the sleep-deprived jokes we'd make when we were in the middle of working through it all.."

"Wow. Are...you two okay?"

"Firey..don't be so rude."

"Well..besides the fact that I have this splitting headache..I'd say we're doing pretty good...I at least didn't come alone."

....

"Oh..TB..uh- please don't cry.."

"..Sorry GB.."

"You two got lucky. I sure wish I came along with someone.."

"I know Pencil..but hey..at least you aren't alone anymore. You had someone waiting for you...like I did."

"You girls are so cheesy."

"Oh, come on Fries- not only did you have one object waiting for you- you had two!"

"And we both came at the same time...I know you were worried and upset about us..-"

"Yeah, you need to chill Fries. It ain't that bad up here! Look- we can float!"

"Oh, Gelatin.."

"..Say..what are we gonna do when we..somehow get back..?"

"Needle- we're obviously going to stop her. We can't let her go through round two again-"

"Shut it, Firey."

"You shut it! If it weren't for you, we wouldn't have been stuck in this stupid mess! Its your fault we're dead!"

"Hey- back OFF. It's not like he knew either, Firey."

"Fries, if it weren't of his constant nagging- and his stupid love towards her- maybe Gelatin could have been down there with Book?"

"...Cut it out."

"Boys, boys...please."

"..Sorry, Leafy."

"Thank you."

"...You should've seen how Coiny reacted when you died though, Firey. It was honestly kinda-"

"NEEDLE!"

...

"Also, like...if we do...manage to come back roobes...whats going to happen between you and Book..?"

"Yeah..! A-Are you going to leave me..?"

"Match, Flower- I won't..! I won't...but I at least still want to keep her in my life. She helped me when I lost Flower...but when I get back there, I'm going to help her win back what she lost."

"..But she lost you, silly."

"That's right!-"

"Look..!!"

"What? What is it, Woody?"

"Mh. It appears that she has found our blueprints for the unfinished recovery center we were trying to build. Good eye, Woody."

"Do you think she'll be able to find where the machine is, GB..?"

"Definitely. Lets just hope that..nothing gets in her way, alright?"

"Oh- thank GOODNESS YOU'RE OKAY, ICY!!"

Tears poured down Ice Cube's face as she happily leaned against the

frigid wall- separating the two from the terrified and concerned crowd that was locked away in the inside.

"I-I know...I'm so happy we made it back.."

Fanny let out a grumble. "What the hell TOOK you both so long?! We were worried sick- and I HATE BEING WORRIED SICK!!!"

"Foinny..." Bubble stepped towards the TLC, placing a gentle hand against the cold, smooth metal.

"W-We were on lockdoiwn- we couldn't leave, b-because Match, Pencil, Ruby- Pin goit them!"

"What the fuck is WRONG with her?!" Eraser shouted, distress breaking though his laid back tone. "That's it- you two have to hide. She's dangerous!"

"Armed, AND dangerous!! Get it? Cause of the hands???"

"...What the fuck, Pen."

Bubble shook her head, wiping the beads of sweat that had made their way down her face. "We aren't hoiding anymore- we came to visit all of you, even if its the last thing we ever do."

"Bubble, this is a suicide mission- are you TRYING to get yourself killed?!"

"Foinny, oi'd rather die staying close to you, than dying in a DEAD CITY...the last thing oi want to hear is the sound of Pin saying some stupid, crazy stuff."

"Well, I-"

"Sorry to interrupt Bubble...but I'm surprised at the fact that you've made it this far. I mean- how many objects have died?" Blocky blurted out, raising an eyebrow.

"Uh..Oicy?"

Ice Cube looked up. "..I'd say about...sixteen.."

"Sixteen?? Holy shit- how the hell did she leave you two, the most fragile out of everyone, for LAST?!"

"That bitch is probably saving the easiest for last." Fanny hissed angrily. "..Do you remember the order of each death, Bubble?"

Bubble frowned. The only faint memories that grew in her mind, were not only the discovery of someone's death- but the discovery of the dead body. Was that something she wanted to put in a neat, compromised list, for the world to read through? Or, at least- listen to.

"..D-Do oi have to..?" Bubble asked, her voice now reduced to a hushed whisper.

"Yes, you do actually. Now spit it out!"

"HEY- she doesn't HAVE to if she doesn't want to! I hate it when someone pressures another object into doing something that THEY don't want to do- its FUCKED UP!" Fanny snapped back. "if you want to figure out what order they died in- hell, even HOW they died- why don't you go ask Pin herself?"

"Oh, I'd love to Fanny! Too bad we're stuck in this stupid box until the day we all rot and DIE."

"Or until Pin comes around and finds a way to kill us all." Eraser mumbled.

Suddenly, everyone was cut off when the soft voice of a child made it through. "Wait..what..? Grassy's going to get killed..?"

"No sweetie, you aren't going to get-"

"Hey! He has point! Who knows what Pin could do to us-"

"Well, she did manage to shove Firey off the roof of the Yoyle Needy.." Ice Cube mumbled softly, the pressure beginning to build up inside of her. She couldn't take any of the arguing anymore- she was sick and tired of it all.

And the only objects that could see that were still around. The

problem is, one is stuck inside of a van, frozen with grief, and the other one was right beside her.

"...Are you really going to tell them..?" Bubble knelt beside her, placing a hand onto her back and rubbing it slowly.

"..Yes."

"Are you sure you're going to be alright..? I mean..you know how..hard, it was, to even talk about how they all passed..why on earth would you decide to talk about it now?"

"Why shouldn't I?" Ice Cube then stood up, her mind suddenly going blank. She was disconnected from her mind, to the rest of the world- she was on a blank slate, preparing to scribble all over it and pour out everything she had been forcing to hold back for ages. She wasn't going to stop- she didn't care anymore.

It's all fun and games until someone in the group snaps.

"Well...theres a lot of ways everyone died, actually. But it wasn't really a big deal...Firey had 'fallen off' of the Yoyle Needy- of course, thats what we all thought- but thats where it all started. After that, Rocky was found dead- someone stabbed him, right in the middle of his head. And then, Woody was found dead in the forest- his mouth was slit from side to side. Oh- and then, Flower? She was with us for a while..but then, she began to puke...and puke...and puke...to the point, where nothing but blood would just-pour out of her mouth, right..?"

"Oicy- oi think its time you stop-"

"Oh, and then there was Needle...but Gelatin found her, and after GB and TB did their little investigation, its turns out she had been strangled...and then there was Teardrop, and she was poisoned...i found Puffball dead on the beach...there was knife in her eye, and there was rainbows...everywhere....Gelatin was poisoned, but he had somehow managed to survive- it wasn't a big deal anyways, when he didn't die, we knew that she would somehow find a way to get him off the face of the earth-"

"I-Ice Cube, I think we get the point-"

"And then, Fries went missing...we just gave him up for dead. And then, there was Coiny...when he went missing, we decided that this wasn't funny anymore- it was time to do something. I mean- if the love of your life were murdered, I'm sure you'd curl up into a ball and cry your eyes out, just like Book did with Ruby- but not even two days passed, and the next one to go was Golfball- we found her dead body..I never knew what the inside of her brain looked like..cool, right..?...and then Tennis Ball wasn't heard from in a while..."

"I-Icy..?"

"Oh..you know how Match could have herself light on fire? Yeah...turns out she cant be left with a fire for too long...Pin burned her alive..we found Pencil's head dangling in front of the freesmart van.."

"...And Book came back one day...Ruby's shards in her hands."

"And then Ice Cube and Bubble were found...and thats where the story ends!"

Bubble's heart nearly stopped when she heard the voice. All of the rushing waves of thoughts that were repeatedly crashing onto her suddenly went deathly silent, as she could feel her face turn completely pale.

All her worries.

All her fears.

Gone.

That's because they were standing right in front of her.

"Bubble? Helloooo- where'd ya go?"

"Oh, don't worry boys- and girls! They're right here!"

"..NO!"

Pin stepped forward, a smirk gleaming on her face. She clenched the trowel in her hands as she stood over the two trembling figures below her-

So weak...she loved it.

"Taking a small walk from my perfect garden surely brought me a bunch of surprises! But this..? Ohh, I NEVER thought this would be waiting for me! But, enough of my rambling.." She giggled, stepping forward.

"Are you ready to have some *fun*..?"

---

hey!!! you're just in time for the end of the WORLD!!

nah guys, I'm kidding- but hows this coronavirus treating you?? I've been stuck in quarantine for two weeks, and i have a whole MONTH left- oop.

and my senior graduation? my MUSICAL??? sis, thats gone.

ANYWAYS IM SO SORRY FOR THIS LATE UPDATE!!! I've been noticing more people finding this and i wanted to continue because,,, i don't wanna let y'all down.

anyways, I've been working on some art stuff more, and I gotta say I'm really happy with this chapter?? i feel like I'm improving, and I'm actually excited to see how all of this unfolds in the future (:

but i hope you guys have been doing well! please stay safe out there!!

-ice

Plan B

"NO!!!" Ice Cube shrieked, scrambling away from the woman who towered over them. "NO, GET AWAY FROM ME!!"

The sheer panic from her voice began to light a fire of confusion and worry inside of the TLC. Eyes began to open, bodies began to tremble, and hearts began to race with sheer fear at the unknown situation that was happening outside of their walls.

Shaking, Bracelety began to slam her hands against the wall. "ICY?! WHAT'S GOING ON?!"

"SHE'S HERE!!" Ice Cube shrieked. "SHE FOUND US!!"

"WHO DID?!"

"PI-"

Ice Cube's words were cut off, as a pair of hands slapped over Ice Cube's mouth. She forcefully yanked the smaller object away, holding her in a spine-crushing grip to prevent her from slipping away.

What was the point of letting her go? No one was around to save her now.

Well...except for Bubble. But from the looks of it, she seemed to know her place very well.

Despite all of the yelling from the prison beside her- including the frantic calls from her dearly beloved "friend", who was trapped inside- there she stood, as still as a statue while her eyes twinkled with fear.

She didn't bother to run. She didn't bother to hide.

Because she was, in simple terms, the easiest one to kill, out of every

single object that lived in Yoyle City.

Oh well. Saving the easiest for last, after all.

"Staying quiet as usual, huh..?" Pin giggled, happily swaying Ice Cube back and fourth as if she were a rag doll. "That's very good of you to do...ya good girl."

Bubble didn't respond. She clasped her lips shut, and let her fists ball up shakily as she helplessly watched Ice Cube thrash and struggle in Pin's arms.

"Well? Aren't you gonna do anything?" Pin smirked, eyeing the girl in front of her. It didn't take much to see the whirlwind of thoughts swirling inside of her eyes- frantically trying to pull out the right one that can save her from this mess.

But nothing would. She knew what would happen if she ever so lifted a finger towards her direction.

Surprisingly though, she wasn't annoyed...nor angered...nor frustrated. A sickening grin was plastered on Pin's face, as she stood completely still. The struggling girl in her arms didn't seem to bother her at the slightest.

"..Good choice. Now...I need you to do as I say." Pin stated calmly, slowly approaching the trembling object.

"..No." Bubble whispered. "No, I-..I won't-"

"What was that?" Pin smirked, suddenly squeezing Ice Cube's withering body in her arms. This made a small crack pierce through the air, and what followed was a throbbing cry of pain that came from her- hot tears pouring down her pale cheeks.

Panicking, Bubble collapsed onto her knees, her entire body now quaking in fear. She could only imagine what atrocious plans Pin had ahead of her- and who knows how many they would be involved in.

"NO!! DON'T HURT HER!" Bubble begged, hiccuping for air through the pained sobs. "PLEASE!!"

"BUBBLE!! DON'T FALL INTO HER SHIT, FIGHT HER!"

"YEAH!! BEAT HER UP!!! NOW!!"

"ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME?! YOU'RE ADVICE IS GOING TO GET HER KILLED! I HATE YOU, I HATE ALL OF YOU!!"

Oh.

A small smirk grew on Pin's face, as a sudden realization quickly dawned over her, filling the darkest corners of her mind and flooding it with the brightest idea of them all.

There were more.

Of course there's more- more OBJECTS. They're all INSIDE.

Oh, I know. But you don't get it.

What?

There's more. More of *them.*

....And?

Oh, come ON. Say it with me now, dear: more objects...

More objects..

Can bring us..

Can bring us...

More...

....

Oh, you CAN'T BE SERIOUS. There's no way we can even GET TO THEM IN THE FIRST PLACE!

Oh..sure we can.

And how's THAT going to be possible?

...Watch.

"Alright now! Who could be POSSIBLY interrupting my PRECIOUS bonding time with the two most..LOVELIEST.." Pin gritted her teeth. "..Objects in ALL of Yoyle City!"

"Oh, pipe down Pin! We know about what you've DONE!" Pen yelled angrily. "And we aren't going to let you hurt ANYONE, ANYMORE!"

Pin couldn't help but giggle. Small bubbles of laughter burst through her lips, even as she continued to forcefully hold Ice Cube still in her arms. "Oh Pen! You were always the dull-minded friend of the group, weren't you? Don't you realize that you and your precious little friends are stuck inside of the TLC..?"

"Uh- Yeah! Obviously!"

"Then how do you expect to stop me from finishing the job that I *have* to do..?"

Furious, Bracelety slammed her hands against the wall, her body trembling from the fear of the uncertainty of what was happening on the other side. "DON'T YOU EVEN THINK ABOUT HURTING ICY, YOU- YOU MONSTER!"

"Aww, why not?" Pin frowned, swiftly lifting Ice Cube into the air. "Wouldn't you like to know what the sound of a shattering *body* would sound like..?"

"NO!!" Ice Cube cried out, convulsing and kicking her legs frantically. "NO, PLEASE PIN!! PLEASE!!"

"Why not?? I think everyone inside of the TLC would LOVE to know what a dying person would sound like!"

"STOP IT!!"

The enticing smirk on Pin's face was a look of complete satisfaction. She didn't care about how loud Ice Cube was wailing- nor how loud Bracelety slammed those frigid little hands of hers against the thick metal walls of the TLC. She simply smiled and stared, soaking up the euphoria of the situation around her.

Why should she be afraid of this, anyways? No one was around to hear any of it. The only bodies that remained in this city, were back in her garden- serving as the empty decorations that dangled in the air. Some, even served as small little stools for her to step on when she needed so-

Like Rocky.

But oh well, we aren't here to ramble about the bodies, aren't we.

We already have one in our hands.

Not yet! Just keep listening, dear...

"Bubble?! Bubble, where the fuck are you?!"

The sound of Fanny's voice seemed to snap Bubble out of her feared mindset; her mind quickly melting back into the reality that was weighing her down. She shook her head, quickly scuttling closer towards the wall and pressing her back against it.

"F-Fanny.." She could feel her heart racing inside of her- each beat filling her veins with terror. "I-"

"Bubble. Keep your voice down, and listen to me." Fanny mumbled in a hushed whisper. "You need to get the fuck out of here."

"I-I can't leave Icy! You know that!"

"Bubble, she's a LOST CAUSE. At the end of the day, the only thing that will matter, is YOUR OWN WELL BEING. Just- leave her behind!"

"Fanny, please! She's my friend!"

"I know that, but guess what?! I hate friends- and these are one of the reasons why! You have to let go!"

By this point, Bubble was in tears. She hiccuped, trying to find the strength to continue to speak cohesively to her partner on the other side. "Fanny, please..."

"Bubble. It's either SHE dies, or you BOTH die. We can find a way to bring her back!"

"And how do you know that..??"

"I heard those idiots talking about these machines- what did they call them...uh-"

"Recovery centers..? Oh goodness, I remember those! Don't you, Bubble?"

The sudden voice nearly made Bubble's heart stop, as she quickly whirled her head back towards it. "PIN!!"

"Oh, calm down." Pin huffed, taking a few steps closer to the trembling girl below her. "I just wanted to hear about what you and your girlfriend were talking about."

"It's- it's none of your business, Pin!"

Oh.

Pin's teasing smirk slowly dropped into a scowl, as she took a few steps back. There was nothing but a burning anger in those soulless eyes of hers- and that was enough to silence Bubble into submission.

"..So. You wanna act all tough and strong now?" Pin uttered, slowly

beginning to move her hand from Ice Cube's side, to the top of her head.

"Ah- no!! I-I didn't mean to- I just-"

"Nope."

W H A M.

"WHAT THE FUCK WAS THAT?!" Snowball yelled, clenching his fists tightly as he glared at the walls surrounding him. The foul language that sprouted from his mouth made a familiar object gasp, as he and his friend covered the ears of the younger object who sat in between them- tilting his head innocently, and simply wondering why they had covered his ears so suddenly.

"Grassy can't hear...!" The kid giggled, a sweet smile curled up on his face. "Why does ma and pa have to cover Grassy's ears..?"

Basketball shook her head, not hesitating to let out a sigh and give him a motherly kiss on his forehead. "That's because some people in here are saying very naughty words, Grassy.."

"That's right- and SOME people don't know how to contain those words!" Blocky huffed.

"That's because WE DON'T CARE, BLOCKHEAD!" Fanny snapped, turning back towards him. "We're worrying about bigger things out there! I hate when people try to control me in over what I can and cannot say!"

"OH PIPE DOWN FANNY! NOBODY ASKED YOU!" Snowball huffed angrily.

"JUST SHUT THE FUCK UP!" Eraser snapped. "YOU GUYS ARE SO DAMN ANNOYING- AREN'T YOU GUYS FORGETTING ABOUT THE FACT THAT THERES A MURDERER OUTSIDE?!"

"NO!"

Blocky shook his head in disappointment at his buds choice of words- ESPECIALLY around a child.

A child that he...took under his wing, of course. Come on- What else was there to do in this prison? Mark a line on the wall as you continue to count the days until your glorious release into freedom?

If you're gonna be stuck in a box with a bunch of strangers around you, with no set idea about when you'll be able to escape, you might as well make some connections to pass the time- because in the end, its the brightest moments you experience that seems to make time tick a little bit faster than usual.

That, was Blocky's case- sure, he did have the boys around to keep him company, but he still felt as if he was missing a certain...connection, with someone. A small bond, that could spark into something much bigger than he could ever imagine.

And thankfully...the little guy had scuttled up to him once the whole 'funny doings' business was brought to his attention long ago.

He sighed, gently removing his hands from Grassy's head and giving him a kind smile. "Now..promise me you won't use those words right now, ok? You're still too young to be sayin' those kinds of words.."

"Don't worry Blocky! Grassy won't say them! Grassy promises, he won't ever say them! See?"

Grassy sat up, using his finger to create a gentle crossing motion over his chest. "Cross Grassy's heart and hope to die..."

"Stick a needle in your eye.." Blocky chuckled, letting his fingers run through the swaying blades of grass that came from the kid. The sensation was nothing more but a mere tickle to Grassy, as he cuddled closer to his 'father', a comforting smile on his face.

There was nothing but a eerie silence that filled the TLC. Besides the small bang that occurred beforehand, it was suddenly very quiet from the outside, causing everyone to exchange a few concerned glances towards one another.

Especially from the two lovers, who sat anxiously against the wall. They kept their ears open, fearfully waiting for any other signs of life that could emerge from the other side. Whether that be a cry, a bang, a yell..

They just needed to know.

"..Why is it so quiet..?" Bracelety's voice was reduced to a low whisper, her eyes nearly bulging out of her head. She turned towards Fanny, her body beginning to tremble from fear. "Fanny, why is it so quiet..?!"

"I-I don't know!" Fanny snarled, lifting herself up and hitting the wall with a forceful kick. "HEY! BUBBLE?! WHAT THE FUCK HAPPENED?!"

"LANGUAGE!" Hissed Basketball.

"Yeah Fanny, LANGUAGE!" Pin's taunting voice sneered from the other side. "You wouldn't want your precious little BUBBLE saying those words now, would you?"

By this point, there was nothing but rage in Fanny's veins, as she continued to rapidly kick her leg against the wall. "YOU! WHAT THE FUCK DID YOU DO TO HER?!"

W H A M.

A pained cry suddenly pierced the silence.

"Wait a minute- that was-"

"ICE CUBE?!"

Pin lifted Ice Cube's head, a triumphant smile on her face. "Surprise surprise! You were right, Bracelety!"

"WHAT ARE YOU DOING TO HER?!" Her voice quivered with fear, as she was fighting the urge to punch the wall with her fist.

Hearing the raw emotion in Bracelety's voice, only made Pin chuckle. "Now, calm down...I'm just teaching you all a lesson on what happens if you try and talk back to me!"

As Pin cackled, Fanny looked up in a panic. "Bubble- what is she DOING?!" She whispered.

"Sh-She's slamming Icy against the wall-!" Bubble heaved, tears pouring down her swollen cheeks. "Please, stop..!! Let us go..!!"

"For the last time Bubble, I'm tired of hearing you BEG. I truly thought that by now, you'd all understand how this works..!"

"Well, we DON'T Pin!" Pen's voice cut through the walls. "Why the hell did you start MURDERING people out of the blue?! We never even hurt you, Pin!"

Oh.

Why...did we start murdering people...out of the blue.

...They just don't get it. Everyone doesn't get it.

..Do you get it?

Of COURSE I DO. We both know why we're doing this- its our job...and its for the greater good.

greater...good...?

Oh, don't you start any of that shit with me either. You know what? Lets just move on.

Move on to-

"Hm...so you really want to know why I started doing all of this."

The sudden shift in Pin's tone sent a shiver down Ice Cube's spine. Despite the fact that the world was spinning endlessly around her, she dragged herself over to Bubble's side and threw herself down. Fearful for their lives, Bubble wrapped her arms around her smaller friend and lifted her to her feet, beginning to back away.

But before they could even make a run for it...

"Take one more step back, and you'll be seeing fireworks tonight."

....Fireworks?

"Pin, what are you talking about...?" Bubble whispered softly,

clutching Ice Cube closer to her chest. She could sense the unease piling up on her shoulders- the pressure from the situation nearly making her pop.

Ecstatic, Pin skipped around them, a mischievous smirk plastered on that haunting face of hers. "You see...you could just run off, and leave me here so I can try to chase you! That might sound really fun for you and Ice Cube- especially because you could use the exercise- but I'm honestly done with running and chasing, Bubb. Which is why, I came up with a Plan B! Also known as, Plan BOOM!"

"Plan..Boom..?" The color drained from Bubble's face, making her look like she had seen a ghost. And that made Pin feel as if she were on Cloud Nine- floating over to a large bush, and raising her arms in the air.

"Ladies!" She began. "You both know how fragile and weak you are...which is why I've decided to spare you!"

"Spare.."

"Mhm! The greatest gift you could ever receive- I think everyone would've killed to be in your place.." Pin giggled, the memories of her victim's final moments flashing through her head. "I wanted to spare you...alliance..remember?"

...Bubble didn't know how to feel. She shot Ice Cube a worried glance, only receiving a fearful one in return.

Being spared, by the woman who tormented the people she once knew and loved, for months...? But...

"Of course, I do need you both to do me a quick favor. No good deed comes without the hard work, doesn't it?" Pin smiled, folding her hands neatly in front of her.

Uh oh.

"Wh-What do you...want from us..?" Ice Cube squirmed in Bubble's arms, glaring over at Pin.

"Oh...nothing much, really. But I did hear...that those recovery

centers ARE nearly finished, hm..?"

"W-Well...yes...but-"

"And...I don't see your dear precious Book with you girls..." A somber sigh escaped Pin's lips, as she lifted her head towards them. "...You both know, that if everybody comes back...they won't be very happy with me, yes?"

The girls nodded, not uttering a single word.

"Mhm...I'm sorry to say...but I don't think I would appreciate it if the recover centers were fixed. Don't you guys like it this way? It's quiet, its peaceful...nobody's out trying to pop Bubble, or tease Ice Cube.." Pin smiled. "...Wouldn't you both like that..?"

"Wh-.." Bubble squinted towards her...what..

"So. I have a little plan for you." Pin smiled, stepping towards them and placing a gentle hand on Bubble's shoulder. "...Go find Book...and...do whatever you'd like. Strangle her...burn her...hell, toss her into a shredder..! Go crazy..."

"WHAT?!" Ice Cube shrieked in Bubble's arms, the fear shattering through her chest. "NO WAY! I CAN'T HURT HER, I CAN'T!"

"I killed Coiny." Pin snapped. "It isn't that hard after you take the first swing."

"No- No no no, I can't do this..! I-"

"Alright! Well, if you choose to refuse my wonderful offer, not only will I take matters into my own hands..." Pin reached behind the bush...slowly pulling out...

"I'll have to turn towards my next option! Plan BOOM."

The nausea nearly made Bubble drop Ice Cube out of her arms..but she clasped her pale lips shut, as she held on just a little tighter. She felt as if someone was squeezing her stomach, ready to make her pop. Ice Cube buried her face into Bubble's chest....

No longer wanting to stare at Bomby's limbless corpse that laid on the ground.

Beside him, laid a small tank of gasoline...and a small lighter.

"...I'm sure that this bad boy can still light the place up!" Pin stated cheerfully, clapping her hands in delight. "..It'd be fun to hear them all burning alive from the outside, wouldn't it?"

No.

Thats when they broke. Bubble collapsed onto her knees, frantically rocking herself back and fourth as she could no longer hold back the tears within her. She blubbered frantic apologies, shaking her head and silently surrendering to the powerful figure who stood above her. Soft crying could be heard from Ice Cube, as she simply kept her face hidden from Pin's view.

No.

Please.

She couldn't lose her.

She couldn't lose her Fanny.

Her Fanny.

Her Fanny.

Her...

Of course, Pin didn't want to resort to this. She didn't want to watch as their fleshes melt within the hellish flames that would soon blaze through the TLC. She wanted to feel their corpses- dance with them through the night, as she would spill her most juiciest of secrets to. She wanted to see their bodies stand proudly within her luscious garden...bringing it as much life as it could possibly receive.

But she'll do what she must- anything to get the job done. Besides, watching the two girls crumble before her filled her with delectation- something that she yearned for ever since day one.

She silently kneeled in front of them, slowly reaching out and placing a hand on Bubble's shoulder. She rubbed it soothingly, letting soft words of comfort dance on her tongue.

"It's okay...It's going to be quick.." Pin whispered, slowly reaching behind her, and grabbing the trowel that was left beside the body. "You're going to be okay.."

She gently placed the trowel in Bubble's hands...watching the troubled soul stare at it helplessly.

Yes...

Yes..

It will all be over soon.

Plan B boys! plan b

anyways, hello. It has been a while...

I am finally able to walk- I've recovered from the surgery I had, which is rad! Plus, schools over, so Ill hopefully have some more time

to write on my hands.

I have to start working on the legends and curses fic because yik e s- haven't touched that in ages.

anyways! I hope you enjoyed reading!! :)

Thank you all for the support, it means a lot to me!!

Have a good day!

-Ice

The Minds We Had

Oh- and girls...?

What else do you want....?

I forgot...to make this, much more clear for the both of you...I might as well do this.

Wait, what are you doing-

No, NO STOP!! STOP IT!!

NO!!

"Nearly complete...oh, thank the library.."

Book wiped the oil off her cover, an accomplished smile growing on her face. She had thrown herself into fixing the Recovery Center- gathering all of GB's and TB's blueprints and data scales, and working on it herself. She knew that wishing wasn't going to be enough- she didn't want to cry any more tears, or grieve over the lost life of someone dear- she was going to bring them back.

All of them- from Firey, the first one who was killed, to her dearest Ruby, the most recently killed- hell, she wouldn't even mind bringing back the ones with the nastiest attitudes, or the ones who were terribly weak before having their lives taken...

The more objects, the better. She needed to take her down.

Hell, she never thought that it would be this way. She would remember when everyone was blowing these murders off as some sort of joke- shrugging it off, saying that it will blow away and be nothing but a memory of the past...

And look at what's going on. Everyone's dead. And Book isn't going to go down without a damn fight.

Thankfully, she was sure that Pin would be looking through every place where the Freesmarters would have been- The Freesmart Supervan, The Clubhouse of Awesomeness, and, funnily enough, the Yoyle Needy. She'd practically flip the whole place over to try and find her in broad daylight, just to get whatever she needed for her own goals.

Was it ecstasy that was luring her to kill? Was it passion? Did she lose herself after staying in the same place for countless amounts of days..?

Book shook her head. She didn't know, and she didn't care about that right now- she was already stressing over the fact that she had left Bubble and Ice Cube alone.

But they aren't alone- they're probably visiting their special lovers at the TLC.

And in order to do that, they had to travel over to the TLC. And if they had come across her...

Tears stung in Book's eyes, and this made her jump. She quickly wiped them away, holding back the guilt that was poisoning her mind and spirit and quickly snapping herself back in the right direction.

She will bring them back. No matter what it takes, she will rebuild this recovery center bit by bit, and she will refuse to let anything get in her path.

Even if that means if she gets hurt too.

She continued to work- drilling in a few screws into the metal as she lifted the tattered blueprint close to her face. Focused, her eyes scanned through the endless scribbles of notes, trying to find the next step in this recovery plan. As the pair of glasses began to slide down her face, she quickly pushed them back, blinking as her vision quickly repaired itself.

Yep. She needed glasses. Ever since she began to work on the repair, she could feel her vision growing blurrier than usual when she tried to read GB's frantic writing on the blueprints. It was a struggle since she had to focus on arming and fixing the machine and hold onto the golden ticket to help her with repairing it.

But, the glasses that were left on GB's desk seemed to be calling her name. Sure, they made her look even more geeky than usual, but she was at least able to see what was in her hands.

'Okay..' She thought to herself, lifting up a fresh new gear. 'So this connects to the engine...and the larger one goes beside it... and then the tube goes- no, no...that goes in later.'

'But then the screen would have to go in the front... I need to add a few new buttons for that- the screen is completely cracked.'

'...And after that..The crank goes right on the side of the

machine..and apparently, that must be everything for the completion..'

Book sighed. '...Okay..we know what we're doing up ahead..let's just focus on the now...because if we do, everything will unfold smoothly..and it'll all be fine.'

'Life is gonna go back to normal. I can wake up on the roof of the clubhouse, just like old times...and then Ruby will climb up with a plate of breakfast in her hands, and a shining smile that brightens up my day. We'll talk, we'll eat, we'll have fun and catch up before Pencil drags us away to another alliance meeting.

'Would I even mind being an alternate..?

'Absolutely not. I'd give anything to be an alternate, sitting in a damn team meeting right now.

'We'd walk together to the Yoyle Needy... we'll pass Needle and Teardrop..who'll be happily chatting away as they stroll through the city...

"We'll pass TB, GB, and Rocky...the two giving me a small smile, as they move forward with their journey...

"And we'd hear Firey and Coiny bickering as usual. That's something I never expected to miss..'

'And we'd be standing...hand in hand...no missing limbs, no pain...

'Nothing. Not anymore.'

Book sighed, sitting back up. Although she would let her mind drift off into the perfect future that she had created out of comfort, she still couldn't stop thinking about everything that had happened. Horrid memories and emotions crashed over her out of the blue, and they'd startle her out of her focused mindset as she worked. She knew that no matter how much she'd yearn over the past, no matter how many tears she'd cry over her failed promise to protect Ruby...

Nothing was going to change. The past happened, whether you like it or not. And sure...you might end up completely broken, and you may

even feel like there's nothing left for you in this terrible world...

You have to keep going. The future, of course, is in your hands- and you have the power to choose how you take that next step.

Putting that mindset into good use has helped Book. She'd take frequent breaks, to let her mind relax and clear up from the clutter that was beginning to pile up within it.

She'd be sure to get some rest, but keep herself safe as she worked. Making sure everything was locked down was one thing- but she always made sure she was carrying some sort of weapon that could help her defend herself, just in case the worst did happen. She'd eat, she'd clean up, and sometimes she'd pay a visit back to the van.

Used to.

Now that she was so close to completing everything...she needed all the time and focus that she could. This was the only thing that could end this whole mess- they all know who the killer is.

And they could stop her together.

Together.

Together.

Book sighed, placing the drill down beside her. She stretched, looking up at the nearly complete machine, and smiling in pride.

She couldn't wait to see her again.

They'll be together.

Together.

Lifting herself up from the ground, she stretched, letting herself feel the relief from sitting down for far too long. She could feel the blood running through her tired veins, as she let her body relax.

It was time for a break anyway. How long had it been since she started working?

...Hours.

Walking away, she failed to notice the two pairs of broken eyes that were piercing through her soul. They stood in the darkness, their gazes shifting as they watched Book make her way into the kitchen.

Nothing went through their minds as they stared at, what used to be, their closest friend. Their minds buzzed with an empty static, and the white noise only seemed to be growing painfully louder and louder as the seconds ticked by. Hell, even as they made their way to the lab, there wasn't anything to be felt- besides, the pain from...that...was stinging more harshly, especially since there was no way of treating the damage.

The damage *she* was responsible for.

Who? *Her?* But what about...her? She knows how fragile we are, *and yet she threw us behind her as if we were nothing.*

She's doing something for a good cause...she's going to-

No. No, we aren't going to let this slide by. It's her, or everyone stuck inside of there- *including, them...*

I can't lose them. I can't lose *her*. She's the only person who's ever supported me...heck, the first person who made me feel alive for the past few *weeks.*

But what about-

All she did was cry about Ruby and then leave. We tried helping her, but obviously, *it wasn't enough.*

Maybe she feels bad...maybe she wants to talk to us again.

Doubt it.

Please, we have to think this through, just one more time-

We've thought it through enough. And we made a decision.

But-

Move.

We could make this easy...we can let it all out.

We can make it, how you'd want it to be...

Thump.

"Hm?" Book lifted her head up, placing the jar of jam down onto the table. With the lab constantly being as quiet as a mouse, she found it strange as to why a small noise would come from...well...anywhere. Hell, it caught her off guard- she was already so used to the silence by now.

She stared at the empty doorway for a few seconds, before shrugging it off, and returning to her lunch. She smeared the jelly over the slice of bread, humming softly as she tried to break the silence around her.

When she finished, she screwed the lid back onto the jar and began to make her way towards the cabinet where she had gotten the jelly in the first place. For a lab, GB had surely made sure that she had everything she needed for survival here...

It was almost like a bunker. No- it was scarily similar to a bunker. Besides the labs, the rooms had no windows, no vents, nothing- it was closed off, almost hidden from the world above.

Hell- if it was supposed to be some sort of lab, with bunkers- then why were the bunkers even there? What was GB even preparing for?

Was there something that she knew about....?

Book sighed. She closed the cabinet door and turned around...

...only to freeze at the sight of the two girls in front of her.

Her heart dropped.

Surely, she shouldn't be afraid- these were her friends, for heaven's sake! They must've come by to say hello, or check up on their friend, who was working on a solution to try and save the rest of them!

But that wasn't the case, as she noticed that Bubble's left hand was sliced off, and Ice Cube's calf and foot had been ripped from her body. The bone could be seen from the hot flesh that dangled and bled from the cut. Blood was still oozing down from both of their wounds, but judging from the looks on their faces, they had already lost enough blood to nearly pass out.

Bubble was clutching Ice Cube close to her chest with her arm- but with her other arm, she was clutching a large knife.

Book immediately took a few steps back from the two, raising her hands in defense. "Woah...Woah...guys, what the heck happened to you..?"

Ice Cube's blank eyes spoke more than the silence that looked over the three. She stared at her for a second, before slowly lifting her head towards Bubble, nudging her body carefully against hers.

"...We've had enough." Bubble spoke slowly. "We're tired of living each day in fear, knowing that she's after us. The three of us. I'm tired of living through the same pain, knowing that this isn't going to get better anymore. I've been telling myself, ever since this started, that things would somehow return to normal- the murderer would be caught, and we would've continued on with our lives. But as this got worse and worse, I was beginning to think...and wonder...about why she was doing this. Specifically, why she hadn't killed us off first."

"We didn't know that she knew about our trips to the TLC." Ice Cube whispered. "You know how we go and speak to both Fanny and Bracelety- the only two objects that cared about us. Besides, we're the weakest and quietest of the alliance- we both know that we were a burden to the team....a burden to you."

Clenching the knife, Bubble's lip curled as she glared down at Book. "...Now she's threatening to blow up the TLC- and light all of them on fire. I've been trying to convince myself that what I must do is wrong and that you're a wonderful friend who has done her best to protect and take care of us. But then I remember that you spent all of that time, after Ruby's death- going insane, and talking about some nonsense. You'd lay there, while we tried to make sure that we would survive another night in this hellhole. We wanted to at least bring you along to the TLC, so you could try and calm down from her death. But instead, you didn't listen. You did nothing."

"Which is why we have to do this."

Flames of anger shone brightly in their eyes, as Bubble staggered over to their frightened friend. She brandished the knife in her hands, her movements becoming much faster and erratic.

"W-Wait- wait, you're going to kill me?!" Book shrieked, trying to frantically scatter away as Bubble inched closer to her. Slamming her hands onto the table, Book stared in disbelief as she watched, what once used to be a kind and gentle soul, approach her with a death glare digging into her soul. She shook her head.

But, with a blank look on her face, Ice Cube nodded. "That's the plan."

"..we have to, anyway...besides.." Bubble raised the knife, trembling. "..we aren't losing the one thing that makes us happy."

She brought the knife down onto Book's hand, burying it deep into her flesh. She showed no emotion as Book screamed at the top of her lungs, her hand now twitching in pain. Blood squirted out from her wound, staining the blade that dug deeper into her hand- before being yanked out with brute force.

Whimpering, Book clutched her trembling hand, glancing back up towards the two. "P-Please...Bubble, you don't have to do this- I-I Can help you..!! Please!!"

"You've had enough time to help." Bubble growled a bit, stomping towards her. "It's too late now."

"I-It isn't!! What did that bitch tell you?!" Book screamed, dashing over to a corner of the kitchen and grabbing a dirty, stained crowbar, lifting it up angrily.

"She told us nothing about you. We're just making sure we don't lose the one thing we love." Bubble swung down the knife, trembling. "And we'll do anything."

"Anything to protect them." Ice Cube chimed in, staring down at Book, as they moved closer, and closer...

For fucks sake, what did she fucking say to them?!

Protect what?! No one's around to talk to them anymore! If anything, they should be talking about her instead!

Sure, the death of Ruby did affect her- no, it destroyed her. And she felt terrible about not offering Ice Cube and Bubble a shoulder to cry on when they realized they were the only ones left in the city. It was her job to be there for her teammates- for her friends..

And now, look at where they ended up. She was trying to save them...and they were trying to kill her. And for what?! For everyone who's dead, or-

Wait.

"B-Bubble, did Pin threaten to kill Fanny?? Bracelety??" Book yelled out, moving back as the two only moved closer to her.

You'd expect them to respond. But, instead, they slowed down, only staring down at the object- a hint of remorse shining in their eyes. And this was enough for Book to take it as a yes.

Clutching onto the crowbar shakily, she began to walk towards the two, shoving her fear and anxiety back, as much as she could.

Just speak to them.

Talk to them.

Be there, as much as you can. Make it up to them...

You weren't there when they needed you the most.

"Okay...please, just...listen to me..."

Focus.

"Why should we listen to you...? You probably aren't even listening..."

Don't let them get you.

"Yes, I am! A-And I'm sorry I wasn't there for you, I should've been there for you- when we lost Ruby, with every day that followed after that, I should've been there for you!"

Keep going.

"You should've. It's too late now."

No.

"N-No! Listen, I have a plan- I can save everyone! I can even save Fanny, Bracelety- please, just let me help you, just this once!"

No.

"Come on, stop it! Please! I can help you!"

No.

"NO!!"

Step.

Step.

Step.

Pin made her way into the abandoned laboratory...looking around, as the silence embraced her into it all.

This is stupid. You'd better believe that they're both dead by now.

So? It only gives us a good reason to blow up that stupid chamber filled with idiots.

That's going to kill them, genius. Don't you need all of their-

Hands? Yes, I do need them...

Then how the fuck are you gonna bomb up the place, and expect them to dance out without a scratch?

Shush. You'll see...I have my ways.

Really..?

Why, yes- I learned that from you. You always had your ways when it came to killing...but of course, you were always so scared to do so. Which is why I came to help in the first place~ Doesn't that feel sweet?

...It used to.

Whatever happened to the minds we used to have..?

Nothing.

....

Don't tell me your thinking of *him* again, honey.

Why do you care about that? He wasn't even yours.

Well- technically...yes, he was, but-

And what about Leafy?

She suddenly came to a halt, her hand gripping onto the railing tightly. Her eyes stared at the steps below her, trembling slightly in shock as the name seemed to echo in her head.

Leafy.

No- no, she's dead. Its over with- we did what we had to so she wouldn't-

She's dead.

You killed her.

It wasn't like that! I-

Huh...

Drives you crazy, doesn't it?

And yet... no matter how hard you wish for it to have never happened...for it to be divine, and no longer drive you, or me, crazy...

It won't happen.

....

Huh.

You were the only friend I've ever had, anyways...the only friend I've ever needed. Not her.

Well, I'll be damned...ain't that flattering.

It should be. I could tell what you were going through- and goodness..if I had never popped by to save you...who knew what else could've happened..?

Not that... look.

"Well well well... would you look at that! Looks like those two weren't so weak after all..."

She looks so much prettier when she's knocked out...

And I'm sure she'll look so much prettier when she's dead.

---

sjhfgdshjd was this good?? I hope it was, I'm trying to put myself back into a writing schedule and I really hope that this came out well.

I'm currently open to criticism- help a girl out, I'd appreciate any feedback!

anyways, hello! I'm back, and jshdgfgshja i come back with this.

I'm currently preparing for college...packing, and working...but I am going to write as much as I can over the summer, because uh- yeah. who knows what its gonna be like when I go.

But other than that- enjoy!

-Ice

Shredded Hopes, Down the Drain

Gh...

.....

Oh...my head...

...

Ru..by...

..

Please...

...

Don't...go.....

Hey, Book?

Wh-..ah..

Book, wake up! It's morning, sleepyhead! It's time for breakfast!

Oh..already...? I just..fell asleep...

Nah, silly! It's 9:00! Come on, I made you and Icy your favorite breakfast!

Cmon' Book...Sorry Ruby, she doesn't sleep really well up here..she gets really cold..

What?! What do you mean?! Haven't you done anything about it, Ice Cube?!

No!

Ok, ok, that's enough...I'm up..

...

'Psst...Book....'

...

Book, is this true..? Why didn't you tell me..?

Oh Ruby...I just don't want to bother you, or the alliance anymore..I..I know I'm just a burden to all of you- as much as I hate it-

NO. Book, look at me.

Ruby- y-you're-

You are one of my BEST FRIENDS. Don't you EVER say that you're a burden, because- you're not!!

R-Ruby-

I'm always gonna be by your side, but you? You need to understand that you are amazing! You're perfect in every way! A-And you gotta understand that you are SOMEONE. You deserve the same respect and care you give everyone else, and-

Uh, Ruby??

Yeah, Icy?

I-I think you're hugging her too tightly-

Oh! Aw jeez, sorry about that Book!

I-Its...Fine....

.....

'Book.....'

...

So as I was saying, you deserve to be treated equally. You don't deserve any of the crap that Pencil and Match are throwing at you- so! What did you say that was making you uncomfortable?

I-..It's just really cold, especially during the night...And I-

SAY NO MORE!

Wh-..What...Ruby, you didn't let me finish-

I said, SAY NO MORE! You know WHY????

No, I-I don't, I-

Because you're going to DIE!!!!

.....

Wh-..Wha-..Ruby...?

That's right Book! This is it! The final act!! I know you've been having trouble sleeping, but I don't mind going out to watch you scream out in agony!!!

N-No- Ruby, something is wrong-

NOTHINGS WRONG! Everything is playing out! And I'm gonna help!

Help?! Icy, are you hearing this?!

Uh, yeah..she said it's time to wake u p...

W-Wake up-?! Icy, come on, don't do this to me- you're just hearing things, yes..?!

Wake up Book... It's time to wake up...

We're already awake!! We're at the clubhouse, we're on top of the damn roof!! I-

WAKE UP, BOOK.

Ah- Hey! What are you-

WE TOLD YOU!!! ITS TIME TO WAKE UP, BOO K!!!

Ruby- Ow, hey- let go of me-!!

NO MORE H I D I N G.

"L-LET GO OF ME!!"

ITS TIME TO WAKE UP.

"STOP IT, P LE A S E!!"

WE'RE ALL GONE N O W.

"NO!! NO NO NO, DON'T!!"

ITS TIME TO WAKE UP.

"NO!!!"

YOU'RE ALL BY YO U R S E L F.

NO ONE IS AR OU N D TO S A VE Y O U.

ITS TIME TO WAKE UP.

OPEN YOUR E Y E S.

THIS IS IT.

YOU NEED TO WAKE UP.

WAKE UP.

WAKE UP.

W A K E U P.

R U B Y!

Book swerved her head slowly, before her eyes shot open, a gasp of horror escaping her lips. Her body immediately jerked forward but was forcefully held back towards her, keeping her down and stiff. This only made her wince, as she let out a soft grunt of pain and exhaustion.

"Ugh.." She murmured, struggling to open her eyes as pain crashed over her body. She felt stiff, and her lungs felt as if they were ablaze, filling her chest with something so thick, that it was causing her to breathe with no ease. She took her time- taking deep breaths, letting the first wave of pain slowly simmer into nothing but a splash, and she let her eyes peel open, looking around to see where she was.

But, it was to no avail. All she could see was darkness.

"Great..," Book uttered. "What could possibly be going on now..."

She sat up, beginning to move her arms- but she quickly stopped, at the realization that...

She couldn't move at all.

That's when she noticed the ropes. Her body was tied up, held tightly

to her own body, with her ankles tied together as well. Panic began to rush through her veins as she began to wriggle and thrash around in the ropes, doing anything in her power to help get these damn things loose.

Though, the memories flooded back into her mind.

Bubble and Ice Cube.

The fight.

The recovery centers.

Their *hands*...

Shit.

Oh, shit.

Where was she.

Meanwhile, another figure stood in the darkest corner of the room. Quietly dusting off her tools and trowel, Pin was preparing for the next step of her plan- obviously, the most well-known part of it.

She had noticed that the number of contestants had finally dwindled down to a small fraction of what used to be before. She remembered noticing the few remaining contestants- noticing how they lived in the endless loop of fear and sadness, not knowing if they would be able to live to see the next day. She especially eyed the Freesmarters- almost, in awe at the fact that they would stay so close together, even for the tiniest of errands.

Looking for a missing team member.

Going back to the clubhouse to gather the things they needed.

Staying in the van for as long as they possibly could.

Pin had to admit- it was a good strategy to get them through the night- after all, it was difficult for her to snag them away and do

what she had to do for the sake of her garden.

But alas, the tower soon came crumbling down, when Match decided she would play some ridiculous kindergarten game to try and toughen herself up- all while getting the things they needed to escape.

And after that, one by one...they all fell into her hands, helping her with her own civic duty- the one she had kept ever since she had planted the first seed in the garden-

Keeping that garden alive.

But, at this point...Pin had dropped the act she once carried. The mask of fear that she would slap onto herself, back when they were discovering the bodies that were dropping like dead flies, was nothing but a mere phase. She knew that they wouldn't have suspected a damn thing from her- with her amazing talents of being able to defend herself on the spot, she was able to get herself out of the electric chair so many times now, and since there was just three of them left?

No point in acting now is there.

Though, she had to admit- Book's curiosity was growing stronger as the days went by back then. She knew that she was feeling something- as if there was something very wrong that was going on, about the murders, the missing contestant, and the murderer. She was beginning to connect the pieces of the puzzle- that is until her poor little gemstone 'slipped' off of the tallest building in Goiky.

What a shame...Wh*at a shame...*

What?

Oh...its nothing, dear... Look at how shiny these tools are coming out to be? Aren't they....dazzling...?

...You're sick.

No, I'm not...I'm you, after all. And, with both of us here now, I say we marvel at all the beauties and wonders that we have created.

Whatever you say.

Hmf.

....

Well...This is it.

Really?

Yes..well, look around...don't you see that they're the last three...?

... Oh...

Exactly. Now, let's keep working. This machine isn't gonna build itself, y'know?

..Why should I.

...Uh, hello? The garden? Its health and nourishment? US??? I seriously thought you'd be on board with this all- even when there are only three fools left to behand! Don't you dare tell me that you're feeling....regretful....

And so what if I am? I-I have a right to feel this way.

Really? So you're feeling this way now- even after helplessly murdering every object you've known and loved here, one by one? That is sad. So, so sad.

How is it sad?

Because it shows that you never cared about any one of them. Firey, Rocky, Woody...Not even Fries...

Stop.

Or..your precious Coiny...

SHUT IT. YOU weren't feeling high and mighty too, YKNOW.

Well of course, and that was because of your ridiculous breakdown. That's enough with the tears- we've used all of them back in the beginning for his

exact reason! It is time for you to shove this guilt and sorrow deep into your gut- and embrace the feeling of ecstasy and power that will soon wash over you! Don't you get it?! This is what you've WANTED, Pin. This is the plan you wrote with your own hands- the plan you've kept for so long, crafted ever so carefully, and the plan you've played out ever since you shoved Firey off of that tower. I'm so sorry to say this, but it's too late to call it quits now. Why? Because EVERY ONE OF THEM IS DEAD. And it's time for you to FORGET about them because trust me when I say, if they were here right now, they would NOT be oh so happy to see you. In fact, they'd be chasing you out of the city- don't you remember Leafy's situation?! Yes, yes, it would be just like that! But they wouldn't just chase you out in the blink of an eye...no...they would want to catch you. They'd want to capture you and chain you down. Imprison you in the darkest of chambers, and if you think you'd be getting out of that situation with your head in a basket?! FORGET IT! Ha, they'd be doing so much worse to you. So, SO much worse.

So why even bother with this sadness?! This PAIN?! It means NOTHING to them, and it should mean NOTHING to you.

...

Throughout that whole speech, Pin had been clenching her spare fist tightly. Digging her nails into the palm of her hand, she didn't even flinch at the warm liquid that was beginning to trickle down her fingers, and splatter onto the cold, hard floor.

There was no pain. The only thing she could even feel was the weight of endless thoughts that were rapidly swirling inside of her head, causing her to do nothing more but stand there, and try to absorb everything that she had just heard.

...Come on Pin...Remember why we started this...

The ecstasy..of watching them shrivel beneath your feet...

And the garden...don't you see how lively it is....?

...Stick with me...And I'll keep it this way...

..Fine.

Perfect! Now, are the shards taped on?? It's time to start.

How do you know?

How do I know? Psh. Take a look dear...

....

Looks like nap time is over...she was curious for far too long. She had it coming, anyway...

But, it's the end of the line here. Time to show that hot-headed bitch that curiosity, does indeed, kill the cat.

Book was still continuing her struggle, that is until a soft chuckle made her bones turn into ice.

She looked around, and it wasn't long until a glimmer caught her eye. It was continuously flashing and shimmering- almost as if it was being spun around in someone's hands.

Hands.

Oh.

Book's mouth curled into a scowl.

Shit.

It's Pin.

Smirking, the thumbtack slowly walked forward, making her way towards Book with a trowel that gleamed with the moonlight- the same moonlight that poured into the building from an open window, with pieces of... Something... glued onto it.

Those pieces..they looked oddly familiar...

"It's nice to see you're awake Book." Pin smiled, as she put the trowel down and crossed her arms. "I was beginning to think that you were never going to wake up. Who knew that the two objects that were the easiest to kill, could also be the ones that could hit you the hardest..?"

Book looked up at her, anger bubbling up inside of her.

"..I should've known from the start. It was *you*, wasn't it." She growled lowly.

But, ignoring the rage that was coming from the smaller figure, Pin only smirked as she nodded with pride.

"Yup! It was all me! It was me all along!"

"You FUCKER!!" Book screamed out. "YOU KILLED EVERYONE!! EVERYONE!! WHY?!"

"Why? Oh! You see, ever since we all moved here, it's been a blast! Living and laughing with the others, playing around, and showing

them what I could offer- such as my amazing baking skills since GB was kind enough to help me get my limbs back!! But as the years went by, it got SUPER boring. And my garden! Ugh, my garden back then. When I started to plant, and it all started to grow, it was too plain. Too boring! I needed to do something about it!" She paced back and forth slowly.

"But then I thought, what if....just, *what if,* I could use. Something. Someone. To help out with the garden. Using *them* as some sort of decoration, or Miracle Grow, that would somehow help my plants grow more wonderfully!"

Disgusted, Book's face slowly turned gaunt as she continued to listen to the woman in front of her.

"So, that's how I came up with my plan. THE Plan. The plan that would help my garden to grow into the best it could be, and becoming the true gem of Yoyle City! Though I have to admit, the thought *did* scare me at first. But I decided to pull it through, once. Only once. Well, that's what I thought.." she giggled.

"And, well, I decided to start with Firey! And we both know how that ended."

"YOU-"

"Monster? Yes, I KNOW. Please Book, can't you be a little more creative with the name-calling here..?" Pin asked softly, beginning to trace her finger along with Book's cover. "It's getting a little boring..."

Though, she jumped as Book yanked her face away from her hand, letting out an angered huff. This made Pin pout, crossing her arms as she stood in frustration against the girl.

"Oh come on! Why are you so upset?! You know, you should be a lot more grateful for this- this is a total honor for you! Because you're pages? Guess where they came from?! They came from trees! You were a tree once!" She grinned.

"Which is why I'm bringing you back to where you once were!"

Book was staring at her with a confused look, not understanding

what the thumbtack had been rambling on about, but it didn't take her long to notice the small remote that she clenched in her hand. The bits and pieces of her thoughts soon came together, as she failed to realize what was around her.

She hadn't even noticed the large machine that stood coldly over her...the strange port almost looking like a-

"I know what you're thinking- heck, you must be really confused! But don't worry! I can make it work!" Pin giggled, hoisting the figure into her arms, and walking her over to the intimidating machine. Book's heart immediately began to race, as she struggled within the ropes- all the while, Pin was carefully holding her over a slot-like area. It was too dark to see- and a feeling of uneasiness wasn't helping her focus at all.

"Wh-What are you doing..?!" Book shouted, wriggling her body frantically. "What the hell is this?!"

"Oh! It's nothing much! I mean, I thought this would be the only way to do this! Creatively, I guess." Pin shrugged and pressed a small red button on the remote.

Almost immediately, a loud squealing noise began to fill the air around them. Book felt as Pin was quickly lowering her into the slot, and after a few seconds of panicked struggling, and endless attempts to free herself, she let out a loud scream of pain as she felt her legs getting pierced and shredded into pieces.

A shredder. It was a fucking SHREDDER.

With each sharp piece of metal that tore into her flesh, her screams only grew louder. She could feel the knife-like mechanics digging deep into her bones before yanking itself back out, only for another pair to bite into her flesh once more.

This caused her mind to go blank. No longer was there any order, nor any civilized thoughts to try and get through this rationally- no, this was a panic- and it was only going to get worse from here.

Blood driveled down Book's chin as her lower body began to sink into

the shredder, beginning to get torn to bits. This went on for a moment, and before the shredder could eat away at her more, Pin turned off the shredder. The ear-piercing volume of the shredder quickly went down, as she looked down upon Book, smiling with nothing but power and joy running through her veins.

This.

This is what you wanted. This is what you've been CRAVING, ever since THE FIRST TIME.

The voice's words echoed in Pin's mind, as a crooked smile was plastered onto her face. The sheer joy of watching as someone's life was being ripped out of their hands- by her OWN?

It's nothing but breathtaking.

It's amazing.

It's...euphoric.

Tears poured down Books flushed face as she could no longer feel her legs; nor her lower body. Blood gushed out of her open wounds, beginning to stain the machinery underneath her- as well as the floor.

"Well, looks like it's starting to get a bit jammed huh?" Pin chuckled out, pulling out her trowel again to fidget and play around with. Small shards were taped onto the object...small shards of-

"Looks like we'll have to get rid of the remains. Or, keep them! It's for the garden after all!"

Book looked up, her eyes quickly growing murky. Grimacing, she let out a cough, causing blood to spurt out everywhere in front of her.

Though, Pin didn't seem to mind. She smiled and slowly wiped a bit

of blood from Book's mouth.

"My garden is gonna look fantastic once I'm through with everyone! Ruby DID add a beautiful shine to it, haha.."

Book's eyes suddenly widened at the mention of Ruby. She looked back up at Pin, fear, and rage in her eyes over the mention of her closest friend.

Her friend, who she found dead, days ago.

"W-What do you..mean.." Book rasped out, her body beginning to tremble as anger boiled inside of her.

Pin only let out a quiet chuckle, twirling the trowel she had with her fingers.

"W-WHAT ELSE DID YOU DO TO HER?! WHERES RUBY?!" Book screamed, her eyes suddenly gleaming with fury.

Pin then stopped, staring directly into her blazing eyes. This quickly shut any confidence that Book had left, leaving her with nothing but the heavy feeling of despair in her heart. She trembled, her eyes letting out an occasional tear that would roll down her cheek. Though, Pin didn't have time for tears.

She bent down to her level and held the trowel so it could be visible to Book.

"Heh, take a look."

Book blinked a bit, her vision blurring in and out repeatedly. She shook her head and attempted to focus on the trowel once more.

"Do you see this...?" Pin whispered, waved her trowel in Book's face as her vision began to grow better, and then worse. The light around her was dimming, and growing, before she finally managed to see the shards clearly.

The shards...

Shards...

Shards of...red..?

Wait...

"Didn't she make it look wonderful?~"

Books eyes widened In horror as her vision cleared up...

Ruby.

A shard of Ruby.

Even worse- it was the shard where Ruby's eye was. Book could see it as clear as day- Ruby's eye was widened, and lifeless... but still filled with the fear that carried on with her...

Even after death.

Book could feel the fear that Ruby must have felt, when her time was

up.

Her lip trembled, as she tried to let out anything, a scream, a cry, words, something...but she couldn't. She began to sob silently, her entire body beginning to tremble violently as the emotions grew overwhelming.

Too much. This was too much.

No, no- I have to-

I can't....I-...

Ruby...

Noticing that Book was beginning to twitch and murmur to herself, Pin sighed and grabbed the remote.

"Aw, man...I'm sorry you had to find your stupid girlfriend like this Book. But, let's be honest here." Pin smiled. "Things were never gonna work out between you two anyways...no matter how many stupid promises she made."

"R-..Ruby...No..no.."

"...Ugh. Don't you get it?! The MOMENT you would have revived her, she would have scrambled over to that skank girlfriend of hers! She was NEVER yours, Book. FORGET IT!"

"M..my..Ruby..."

"......You know what? Fine. It's been fun talking to you Book, it really was. Hell, even knowing you was a blast- I'm never gonna forget the black eye you gave me! Though, to be honest... I'm gonna miss you're intelligent facts and stuff, but I guess it's time for you to go..!" She smirked.

Yet, there was no reaction from her. Book ignored her, panting heavily as she kept her emotions in.

She refused. She refused to give her some sort of show to make her smile. And if she was going to die by Pin's own work...then let it be the biggest fuck you that she could ever give.

Pin slammed her hand on the button, and, with all her strength left, Book began to laugh out. She laughed, not caring that she had only a few seconds of life left, or that the overwhelming pain was beginning to make her feel lightheaded. She only laughed...

She wouldn't let her words grow like roots in her head. Not in her dying moments.

Instead, she turned her head, and with a shaky smile on her face, she whispered..

"Have fun in hell...*b i t c h*..."

Her vision quickly blacked out, and as she felt her shoulders shred painfully, she glanced up.

"R-..Ruby...I'm...*here*..."

And suddenly, blackness enveloped her vision, as her final words were overpowered by the endless screeching of the shredder.

Oh what fun, am I right?

Hi everyone! I'm so sorry this took forever to do, I am now in college and the stress of this and all the chaos going on rn has me slumped. But GUESS WHAT I WAS ABLE TO WRITE.

This entire scene was written three times, the first time was back in 2018. I'm honestly really proud of how far I've come with my writing, and I hope you guys are enjoying it all too.

But, yeah! Happy early Halloween, and I will be getting back to the swing of things as best as I can! Thank you all for the support!

Enjoy!

-Ice

Life's Purposes

"BUBBLE?! BUBBLE FOR THE LOVE OF GOD, TALK TO ME!! SAY SOMETHING!!"

"ICY- ICY?! BUBBLE, WHERE IS ICY?!"

"WHAT THE HELL ARE WE GONNA DO NOW?! WHAT IF THEY'RE DEAD?!"

"THEY AREN'T DEAD!! SHUT THE FUCK UP AND LET ME SPEAK, PEN!! I HATE IT WHEN YOU IDIOTS ARE TRYING TO INTERFERE WITH WHAT I'M DOING!!"

"WELL WHAT YOU'RE DOING, IS YELLING AT A FUCKING CORPSE! WE NEED TO GET THE HELL OUT OF HERE!!"

"ABSOLUTELY NOT! IF WE DO, PIN'S GOING TO FIND US-"

"SO WHAT, WE LET HER KILL US ALL OFF IN HERE?! DOES THAT SOUND BETTER, DONUT?!"

.....

"..That's what I thought. Everyone, get up. We're breaking the hell out of this thing."

Sprinkling the remains of a dead bitch over the garden is surely how I wanted to start the morning.

Oh please! Haven't you heard about RRR?

Well duh. Reduce, reuse recycle.

Exactly.

The sun was barely rising over the horizon, yet this wasn't enough to stop Pin from continuing her works.

Yet again, has anything been able to?

Well, after the events that took place not too long ago, she quickly gathered up Book's remains from the shredder. Needing to preserve the fresh scent of ripped paper and despair, she cradled the pieces in her bloodstained arms, and took a peaceful stroll as she headed towards her garden.

There was no need to hide anymore. After all, everyones gone. Looks like the fun had to come to a stop eventually...

And it was too bad. It was definitely a sight to see- watching the others run around like beheaded chicken, panicking as the sun would sink below them- and throwing accusations left and right like a hot potato.

Though, she must admit- the agitation that sliced through her when these accusations were quickly turned towards her was the one thing

she would miss. The way her heart raced as her friends would list down the findings of their investigations, and the way her world would crumble as these findings were slowly beginning to connect to her.

'ITS HER!' They would scream- pointing right into her helpless face as she stood there, like a deer in headlights. And with no where else to go, she would quickly retreat- either to her home, or to the one she loved the most.

The warmth of Coiny's arms as she ran into them, acting out her innocence and trying to fool those desperate fucks- slamming them with guilt after trying to accuse the most *innocent* object out here.

Ha ha.. ha...

Coiny...

Coiny..

Hey. Get your mind off of that sad sack. He's gone.

Oh- Well- I...

I- I- What? Spit it out bitch, I don't have all day to listen to your pathetic venting. We got work to do!

What work.

Well, we've got to throw these bad boys around the garden! Like I said, these precious pages are going straight to the Earth- it'll help give the soil some new nutrients for our plants!~

Oh.. Thats nice.

..Are you ashamed?

What? No, no I'm not. I'm just tired.

Sure... sure...

What do you WANT ME TO SAY?!

...Pin...

This garden is all you have now.

The deeds are finished.

You went through with this- you said yes... and sealed the deal as soon as you shoved Firey off of that cage.

Pin frowned.. her eyes slowly glancing over towards Firey's lifeless hands, as they protruded from the Earth.. his fingers so frigid... and still..

But around them..? Canna lily's and pansies bloomed with life, as marigolds had snaked their way around his arms- with the flower blooming right on top of the back of his hand. The burning reds and blazing orange colors filled Pin's eyes with a strong sense of passion..

And fear.

Oh, come on.. there's no need to be afraid anymore, Pin. I don't get why

you're still so petrified... even months later..

.. Because you enjoyed how that felt.

How he thought you were there to save him from his terror... standing over that cage, as you were able to PULL HIM out of that dreaded nightmare- after being trapped for so, so long...

It isn't fun to be enclosed in such a state... poor thing was ecstatic..

..That is.. until he realized that you weren't there to HELP.

But.. but...

Ah ah ah~

It all started with that push... and oh... he thought you were being playful... until that push, turned into a shove.

The LOOK on his face when he was dangling off of that cage- the way he BEGGED for your mercy, and screamed for his life...

And he wasn't the only one.

Remember when Rocky's face dropped as soon as the knife plunged through his skull?

What about Woody- remember the look in his eyes when the blade grazed against his cheek?

Flower's dying breaths, after vomiting her insides out, and croaking in her lover's arms?

The way Needle thrashed around in your grip- realizing YOU we're the one who decided that her life would end that day.

Teardrop choking on her own blood, realizing that her life was quickly slipping into your own hands.

Watching as Puffball's body tensed up, as soon as that knife plunged right into her eye.

Gelatin's wails for his father-figure, before they were cut off- as you finally

shut that kid up.

God... it felt AMAZING, didn't it.

I-... I was scared. I just- I didn't know what to expect after-

Admit it, Pin. You enjoyed it. You took it all in.

Didn't you obsess over being a leader of your own team, back in your younger days? Didn't you thrive off of the power that you had in the clutch of your hands?

This, is what you felt when you killed.

Power.

You loved it when the others were at their lowest points, begging for you not to kill them, to let them escape with their lives in their hands.

You let this power pierce into you, and flow through your veins as a crown of blood stood right on that pretty little head of yours.

That power was what kept you going.

And, you know what..? I think its time for you to let go of these 'friends', Pin.

There aren't any friends in this life. There are no best friends, or tight-knit circles that these fools constantly tell you of.

They're nothing. Nothing but people who are out to get you, use you, or even harm you.

You tell them your darkest secret- and they're already five steps ahead, planning to use it against you, so they could grow more. They may smile and wish you the best of luck, but behind your back, they're cursing you, wishing for nothing but the worst to happen to you.

You may think that Coiny has forgiven you- but think again, Pin. He was only doing so to comfort the fact that he was dying- all because of you.

Hearing all of this, left Pin standing right in the middle of her garden. Her eyes gazed over the sea of hands that were sticking out of the Earth, with a few flowers growing around or on them. She could see Flower's corpse, standing tall and high with the support of the camellia's that snaked around her body and chest. Rocky's corpse also laid beside her- used as a stepping stool to reach and work with the flowers that have grown with the abundance that Pin has provided for them.

Its a big price to pay to have a garden like this..

And I know its hard.. to accept you new life... and set future.. but...

Its a sad, sad reality Pin- and its time for you to accept that.

"Ok... Bubble, we're gonna try this again. And I don't care HOW LONG this takes- this might as well be the ELEVENTH time. Bubb... can you please just say something? ANYTHING?"

Fanny waited. She pressed her head against the cold, metal barrier that stood between the two- and yet, despite all the frantic conversations that were happening around her, she didn't hear Bubble mutter a single word.

This, frustrated her. Yes, she shouldn't be upset- something must have happened that scared the living hell out of her- possibly scaring her into silence.

But they were running out of time. With only HER left standing, who knew when that pin-headed bitch would strike again.

And Ice Cube...?

... They haven't heard her at all.

She knew Bubble was there- she would hear her quiet sniffling and broken whimpers, but nothing came from Icy's side.

And this, scared Bracelety to know end.

"Bubble, JUST TALK TO US!!" Bracelety shouted, slamming her hands against the wall. "TELL US WHAT HAPPENED!!"

"DO YOU THINK YELLING AT HER LIKE THAT IS GONNA MAKE HER SAY ANYTHING?!" Fanny snapped, swerving around to face the object. She could see Bracelety fighting tears, as her hands quickly balled up into fists.

"OH!! ITS EASY FOR YOU TO SAY FANNY- AT LEAST SHES HERE FOR YOU!! I HAVEN'T HEARD ICY- AT ALL!! SHES MISSING!!"

"ICE CUBE IS NOT THE FOCUS RIGHT NOW- BUBBLE IS. AND IF YOU COULD STOP YELLING, MAYBE SHE COULD TELL US WHERE SHE WENT!"

"WELL SHES TAKING TOO LONG!! I WANT ICY NOW!!"

"WELL WHAT IF ICE CUBE IS DEAD, BRACELETY?! WE HAVEN'T HEARD HER SPEAK, WE HAVEN'T HEARD HER CRY, HELL, WE DIDN'T EVEN HEAR HER WHEN BUBBLE CAME BACK!!! AND YOU KNOW WHAT THAT FUCKING MEANS?! IT MEANS THAT PIN MUST

HAVE GOTTEN HER!! MURDERED HER! FOR ALL I KNOW, SHE COULD BE SAWING OFF ICE CUBE'S FUCKING LEGS AT THIS POINT! AND YOU KNOW WHAT?! YOU NEED TO LET IT **GO**."

Panting, Fanny angrily threw herself back against the wall. She didn't care that Bracelety had tears running down her cheeks- or the fact that her eyes were as wide as they could be, only staring at her with pure disbelief.

She had to get over it. Ice Cube was the weakest link of them all- and by this point, she's definitely long gone.

...But.. if it were Bubble.. would she have acted the same way?

Both of them, were the weakest of the entire group. Why the hell didn't she kill them off-

No, no no no. Bubble's still alive. She's here. She's right here. She's-

"...Icy..."

Fanny perked up. Was that-

"Icy... Ic y..."

Oh, GOD-

"BUBB???" She sprang up, feeling the wave of relief washing over her. She faced the wall, feeling her eyes stinging with tears of joy- as she finally heard her say, something.

And she wasn't the only one. Bracelety scrambled over, quickly slamming down right beside Fanny as she stared at the wall with a great intensity.

"Where."

"Icy.."

"WHERE IS SHE?!"

...And then, came the sobbing.

Fanny jumped. "Woah- Bubble, whats-"

.....

She left.

She didn't know where she was headed off to.

She said could feel herself bleeding out.

Icy wasn't there.

They came back together- they were right by each other, with the intent goal of returning to reassure them that they had survived.

But she wasn't there.

Was it a hallucination? Was it all just some sort of nightmare that she hadn't woken up from?

Was she still in that cursed lab, knocked out cold with Icy by her side?

She wasn't there.

No. No, no no. What does she mean.

They came together.

She came down. She turned right.

She's missing a leg. How could she have managed to separate if she could barely walk.

She wasn't there.

Icy wasn't there.

Icy wasn't...

"So if you're here... Then..."

"No... No, NO NO!"

.....

Ashes, ashes, we all fall down.

Well, I doubt this is equivalent to ashes... they're just shredded pieces of paper.

Still! Its her ashes Pin, and you should be PROUD of how far you've come. I mean, don't you remember when you first killed Firey? Psh, you were so SCARED! It was honestly a enjoyable sight to see~

Um... no it wasn't. If I would have gotten caught by anyone, I would have been dead meat.

Well, would you rather get caught with one object's blood on your hands? Or would you rather have gotten caught with... oh, I dunno.. MOST of their blood on your hands.

Oh, shut up. There's no need for those comparisons anymore- everybody is already dead.

All your friends... oh, goodness, all of your friends are dead~

Why do you feel the need to remind me?

Don't you see? There's no need to worry anymore... everyone is gone, and they all left you behind- so stop stressin' out about it... relax...~

.... Am I supposed to feel comforted by that fact?

YES! I know you may be wondering why, but, listen! You no longer have to feel anxious, or worried, or even scared- who the hell is going to catch you now??!~

...

Oh, come on. Don't be like that! Look at how far we've come- Oh, don't forget to throw some of those shredded pieces around Ruby's hands, dear!! You wouldn't want her to rot away, and leave her dearly beloved Flower again, Hm?~

Pin sighed. By this point, she had gotten used to it- she had long gotten used to it. The voice had become endless- it was the first thing she would hear when she woke in the morning, and the last thing she would hear at night. It was apart of her- making her decisions for her, telling her where to go, what to do, and how to do it- and any attempts for fighting back was hopeless.

Walking over to where the lifeless hand poked out of the ground, she began to sprinkle Book's shredded pages around the soil- watching as it absorbed the moisture from the Earth, and settled beside the two star-crossed lovers.

Or would it be the star-crossed trio...

Eh, who cares. They could figure that out on their own as ghosts.

As Pin finished, she took a deep breath, letting herself take a stroll around the garden. Its been a while since she had done so- and you

know what... she might as well, talk to someone. Help her garden thrive off of her, you know?

"So! Have you all been enjoying your stay here?" Pin's voice boomed through the air- letting the breeze carry it in between the blooms of the garden.

Of course.. there were no responses. But Pin strolled by, letting her hands run across the ones that were standing high and mighty. The memories all came back in the fog of the past, but she would only admire it from afar-

After all... getting too close, wouldn't be so good now... *would it.*

Sighing, Pin knelt down beside Rocky's corpse- leaning in to take a listen.

"Huh... Well, I'm glad you're liking the stay here, Rocky! I told you that you would be allowed to run around the garden- after all, it was made with not only my hands- but yours, too!"

"Oh- what was that, TB?.... Well, I KNOW he doesn't have any hands! Its just a figure of- ugh. You just stay there and keep doing what you're doing- after all, those primroses look fantastic! You should definitely keep working with GB-"

"Book...? Oh... darling, don't be upset! You've got that pea-brained girlfriend of yours right by your side! I'm sure Flower could let you share the wealth, huh?? OH- and please, thank Ruby for me- I always knew that her gem shards would come in handy, these roses are THRIVING! I might even go after her sisters, to see what THEY could offer to my garden... what do you say, Book?"

"Book...?"

The sudden response caught Pin off guard. Her head quickly turned towards the back, and there, she was met with the sight of-

"Book.. B-Book..."

Ice Cube's frail voice was like the sound of alarm bells in Pin's head. Her eyes narrowed, watching as Ice Cube would drag and push herself towards her, a trail of blood soaking into the dirt below. Her pale eyes would scan the area repeatedly- Pin could practically feel the panic raining over her atmosphere.

Yet- why was she freaking out?

This was ICE CUBE she was seeing right now.

This should be EASY.

"Well, well well... If it isn't the little headache, Ice Cube." Pin sneered, crossing her arms. "What are you doing here? I thought you were out in the city, trying to hide your pathetic self from me."

"Book.. wh-where is... Book..." Ice Cube wheezed out, her eyes glaring back up to the object that stood over her. "... Sh-.. She's around.. here.. I know it.."

"Oh- Book? The clingy, hot-headed bitch who almost killed me a few months ago? Oh- I have her here!"

As soon as Book held out the leftover remains of Book's cover, Ice Cube had no hesitation. She sprang up and bit Pin, angrily sinking her teeth into her arm, and not stopping until she could feel the bone.

This made Pin shriek. Book's scattered remains fluttered around the two like confetti, as Pin had dropped them and began to bash Ice Cube's head with her fist. The sound of flesh being torn into made Pin stumble, and this, was enough to snap out of it.

THE TROWEL- WHERE'S THE FUCKING TROWEL?!

I DON'T KNOW- I HAD IT-!

FIND IT BEFORE THAT ANIMAL RIPS YOUR FUCKING ARM OFF!

FUCK- FUCK, FUCK FUCK!!

Pin's eyes filled with tears as she dug her nails into Ice Cube's skill. She could feel a thick substance running down her arm, as she began to grab whatever she could to try and make her let go.

Pebbles- thorns, ANYTHING. She yanked a few roses from the bush, and began to stab the thorns into her- even scraping them against her cold skin, as she could feel her teeth digging deeper into her flesh.

But even then, Ice Cube didn't let go. Hot tears ran down her face as she felt the thorns piercing her skin open, letting fresh wounds pour out even more blood than before-

She was going to die. She could feel it.

But even so- she wasn't going down, at least without a fight.

She murdered her friends- murdered her teammates- murdered the friend that she had seen as a mother figure-

And there was no way she would be let off the hook for this.

She wanted blood. She wanted her dead.

She wanted revenge.

Even if everyone is dead, she could feel them watching. Phantom eyes were on her- as the atmosphere had come to a complete stop. She knew, she knew from the bottom of her heart that they were watching. And they were rooting her on. No matter how many times Pin would slice Ice Cube open- that only made her bite even deeper.

Pin was now desperate. She slashed and sliced the smaller object, but to no use- as the blood was pouring down around them. She sputtered out in pain, stumbling back onto her feet as she was headed to the last thing she could think of.

"S-SO, YOU WANT REVENGE, HUH?!" Pin growled out, slamming Ice Cube onto the ground, and throwing herself on top of her. Ice Cube only glared at her- her eyes bloodshot, as a fire burned behind them.

But that fire quickly hissed out, as Pin had..

Rocky...?

Oh.

No, NO-

"HERE YOU GO, BITCH!! R-REVENGE, AT ITS FINEST!!"

And with that, she brought Rocky's corpse down- slamming it right onto Ice Cube's teeth. The soft sound of crackling could be heard, before Ice Cube's muffled screaming quickly overpowered it.

And there she was. Holding down a screaming Ice Cube, staring as her teeth had been broken and even knocked out of her mouth- blood quickly turning these screams, into gargles. Open wounds stung from the atmosphere, and was quickly absorbed by the Earth- letting it take the blood into the roots of the plants.

Pieces of torn flesh dangled off of Pin's arms. The waves of pain slowly faded into a numbing sensation, as the sounds around her slowly melted into a ear-piercing silence.

Don't you see... this is your purpose.

Don't you hear how she's screaming? Those teeth of hers- you knocked them right out of the park...

And now, her life... it's in your hands.

How will you go about this...?

...Making her pay for it.

But of course!! I say- you go on ahead!! Kill her! We both, know the drill-

No no.. I'm taking my time with this one.

Oh? How so...?

Do you know how to ice-sculpt...?

God, this is all over the place.

I have been struggling for the past few days- my mental health is really bad, and it took me a lot of time to try and get back to writing again. I had been suffering from writers block and art block- I barely had any motivation to try and do these things. Home life has been bad, and now that I'm back in college, things might slow down a bit.

I'm sorry if this is just, disappointing. I try my best to keep improving when it comes to my writing, but things have been... a bit bad for me, so I'm really trying to push myself to get back into the swing of things. So all I'm really asking is please, be patient. And again- I'm

really sorry.

But... hi, how are ya? Sorry for the down mood there-

We, are nearing the end people- we are so close..... we've got a storm comin

I hope you guys enjoyed this part... it was really nice to write again after a while, lol.

And hiiii if anyone makes any fanart- pls tag me..... i love seeing what y'all make and I just wanna share the LOVE

i think thats it...? i think

Hope y'all enjoy, and thank you guys for the support. I love you all <3

-ice

Hope We're Still Friends

//MASSIVE TW FOR THIS CHAPTER. I know I put one towards the beginning of the story- but I feel like this is needed in this chapter. Please proceed with caution.
EDIT: TW for gore/cutting!! Not really self-harm but similar to it-

-

Staring at the clouds above, Bubble had blocked out all of the chaos that was taking place beside her.

There was nothing but dread in those eyes- hidden conversations and fears swirling within them, yet was there really anyone around to notice..? Anyone around to even care?

Of course- there were those who were currently trying to break out from the Locker of Losers; with the sound of clashing and banging swelling in the atmosphere, she could tell that they were giving it their all to try and break out of that prison.

But what was the point of doing so? The cycle would repeat. She would see them all as fresh meat- a assortment of hands that are all

waiting to be ripped off by her own.

...

...It has been so hard, lately.

Too hard.

Waking up and realizing that this cycle is only going to repeat again, and again. And of course, certain cycles may feel more comforting than others- one may feel afraid about breaking out of this cycle, because it offers this sense of comfort and familiarity.

Nothing will ever change. The same people around you will never leave. The one you love the most will never leave your side.

But with this cycle, there's something thats more stronger than that sense of familiarity- something that not there to try and comfort you, but to hurt you. Its waiting for you- and once it sees you in its sight, it begins to crash on top of you. It tries to knock you down, again and again, until it sees you crumbling to your feet.

Harsh, isn't it? Hasn't everything been a little too harsh right now?

It just feels like it. Things have only gone downhill.

No matter how much hope or praying you could ever do, it only goes downhill. Life, never seems to give you a break.

She tried telling them that this wasn't worth it- with everyone dead, there was no way that they could stand a chance against her. After all, she was capable of picking off the others, one by one- all to feed into her sick desires.

And not only would she take their hands- she would rob them of their innocence as well. She's seen how that pin-headed bitch dealt with the youngest of them all.

She could only imagine how much she could do to the youngest one that stuck inside the TLC.

But, no matter how much she tried to protest against their decision, it didn't change their mind. Their decision is fixed- and their giving it their all to try and bust out of that safe haven of theirs. She just wished that they could listen- if Pin was able to wipe out the entirety of the crew out here, it wouldn't take her long to destroy all of them in there.

After all, she was numb. After she killed her own boyfriend, understandably.

Sighing, Bubble sat up- fighting the waves of dizziness that were slamming against her. After having her arm cut off by Pin, she had lost so much blood- and having passed out in the lab after cornering Book, she was able to get the wound wrapped up.

Lets thank Golfball for being a nerd.

She was able to take care of her wound, as well as Icy's...

Icy.

Bubble shut her eyes.

No. No need on going back.

She's gone.

She's gone, just like the rest of them.

There was no need on going back and trying to save the day. It all ended the same way; someone went out of their way, tried to save or

avenge the ones they loved, and yet.. they lost.

All to her hands.

As the tears began to sting at her mind, Bubble shakily covered her face- a dreaded sense of static beginning to overflow her tired mind. The frantic babbling from Bracelety and the angered yelling of Fanny didn't change anything- it was all fading away into nothingness, leaving nothing behind but the memories of the past.

Back to when things weren't so crazy- when all they had to worry about was team challenges, and eliminations.

They really took that for granted, didn't they...?

"Ugh.." Bubble murmured, weakly lifting head back up to face the metal box that sat beside her. Inside, she could hear the endless discussions that were bubbling back and fourth- ideas between breaking through the metal, to burning it down- with... whatever resources they had in there.

"Tell me! How the hell do you EXPECT us to burn down two thick layers of metal wall! Huh?! Come on smart guy, spit it out!" Fanny snapped, glaring at the object that was towering over her.

Even with Snowball's terrifying image, it didn't scare Fanny one bit- I mean, what could? The man is a fucking snowball, if she threw that mini-Firey back at the guy, it'd be over.

Snowball gritted his teeth. "It was just an IDEA, Fanny. Don't get your blades into a twist."

"A shitty idea, really."

Three more seconds, and Snowball would've snapped that little fan like a twig- but Bracelety quickly stepped in, dragging the figure away from the scene. She giggled nervously, Not minding the fact that she could have been mauled if any of them stepped out of line.

But thankfully... they didn't.

"Okay..!! Why don't we try and- work together, with this? I don't

think dying in here would be much of a good idea!!" Bracelety giggled nervously, letting her eyes glance around the tense atmosphere.

The tense feeling radiated outside of the walls- to the point where Bubble could shiver at the silence.

There was nothing she could do. She had the strength- although nobody ever believed her, she was pretty strong for someone who could pop at any second. But with one arm, and a stump that nearly bled out- what else was there to do?

She could only sit back, and continue listening to-

N O O O O O O O!!

As the scream echoed through out the city, Bubble's eyes snapped open- the familiar tone making her blood freeze.

Ice Cube.

It had to be Ice Cube- everyone was fucking DEAD. The city was close

to being abandoned once more- and judging from the sound of that scream, it seemed to be coming far north.

No- No, no no no no- Ice Cube...!!

She got her.

She fucking got her.

Yet.. why didn't she feel anything anymore...?

Hearing about Firey's murder, she could remember passing it off as an accident.

But as these murders continued to grow more frequently- to the point where everyone was getting plucked off at the blink of an eye...

The more numb she grew.

Why should she even try.

She's having her way with her.

Ripping her limbs off.

Sawing through her bone..

Watching.. as her struggling was becoming.. well.. more and more useless..

...The frantic chattering from the TLC was beginning to ground Bubble back to reality- and this only made her realize..

They were trapped.

Pin's killing Icy.

And as soon as she's done with her, she'll be coming for Bubble.

And once Bubble's out...

"Well, if you choose to refuse my wonderful offer, not only will I take matters into my own hands...

I'll have to turn towards my next option! Plan BOOM"

...She couldn't...

She can't leave them- if she does, they're going to freak out-

They won't be able to focus on busting out of there.

But if she stays..

What if she can beat her..?

Save everyone.. get them out.. and put this nightmare to rest..

Finally have their lives back on track.. and live in peace...

Yet... if she fails...

There's no point in waiting.

I'm so*rry Fanny*.

A moment of hesitation passed through, before Fanny ultimately shook her head. "As much as I hate to say it- Bracelety's right. If we keep fighting like this, we'll kill ourselves before Pin has the chance to kill us."

"...Well why can't we off ourselves so Pin can't kill us? Easy way out-

plus no one can get hurt!" Pen laughed out nervously, looking around the TLC with a smile...

But nobody was smiling.

"...Pen. Seriously. Are you ok?"

"Ok ok, enough. Come on. Anymore ideas?!"

"We could always try and saw through the metal!" Saw chimed out.

"Or slam our way and break through the barriers?" Bell looked up. "Can these walls withstand the force of all of us?"

"Who knows.. Hey, Bubble! Do you think you can spot anything that can help bust us out of here?!" As Fanny spoke out to Bubble, Blocky groaned out in annoyance.

"Seriously?! You're going to rely on the silent little bitch outside?! She's probably dead!"

"SHUT IT BLOCKY. Bubble??"

...

No response.

"Wait- Bubble?! BUBBLE?!"

Oh, heavens- this was TOO much fun.

For once.. I have to agree. This was more lighthearted than I thought it'd be.

Seriously? Pin, you haven't had this much fun in AGES. And please- tell me, when was the last time you managed to catch your breath and DESTRESS?!

....I guess you're right.

God, Pin.. where would you be without me?
You'd probably have your hands full of thorns and dead leaves- hell, you probably would have OFFED yourself at the dead state of this garden.

....

Wow... no back talk today dear..?
I've taught you well! Look at how far you've come, Scarlet..

I'm so proud of you...

Really.

Come on! You've made it so far- you could BARELY fathom the idea of pushing Firey off of that cage!! And now..?

Oh, shut up. Do you always have to resort to that whole situation again?

Of COURSE I do. Besides- it was hilarious! Watching you freak out at the sight of a KNIFE.

Pin lips tightened together as she had no choice but to listen to her.

She continued to do her work- scraping and slicing here and there, with ice shavings continuously floating down beside her, like pale pieces of confetti.

Except with this... it's going back to her garden. Confetti is too much to deal with-
It's everywhere, it's messy, and ultimately, it does more damage than harm! No point in having something that silly around.

After all- when it comes to your own work, you don't need anyone holding you back. Your focus has to be put into the future that YOU want- and constantly wallowing in self-doubt and fear is only going to hold you back.

After all, that's how it was before this- everyone was already making their time in this city worthwhile, while she was suffering with a dying garden..

...and those never ending nightmares.

Ah- careful, dear! We wouldn't want you hurting yourself with your trowel now, do we..?

I know, I know..

Good- be sure to scrape a little of the edges here! Remember- this is going in your garden- in your HONOR! It'll be the centerpiece of it all-

Didn't we already have Flower as the damn piece here..

Psh- she's nothing more than a damned scarecrow. You're garden needs a more... *personal* touch, to it.

It is your reflection- the ULTIMATE source of energy for this garden to radiate, and to continue radiating for the years to come!!

...And to share this garden.. how..

...You're already sharing it, dear.

"PIN?!"

Oh.. oh god-

See...?

You're never alone.

"Pin..."

"Bubble? Oh my, what a strange little reunion we have going on here!" Smirking, Pin whirled her head to face the object- twirling her bloodied trowel in between her fingers. Staring at the droplets of blood flying off of the trowel, Bubble's face morphed into a angered scowl.

"What the fuck did you do." She gritted through her teeth. Her legs trembled- threatening to give up at any moment, as a result from everything the poor figure had to endure.

But still- as painful as it was, she stood her ground- preparing to give it her all, to try and end this demonic little bitch.

But- yet, there she was- staring back at her with that stupid smirk, and that stained trowel in her hands.

"I SAID, WHAT DID YOU DO?!" She screamed out, stomping her leg.

"Uh- Me? I'd be asking you the same thing, sweetheart! What did you do? I'm still not done tidying up the place!"

"WHAT DID YOU DO?! WHERE'S ICE CUBE?!"

Hearing Bubble's voice boon through the garden, Pin jumped- taking a step away from her. She could feel the emotional wreckage radiating off of her poor, worn-down soul- and something inside her should have tugged her away from the scene..

But she just had to laugh.

Seriously- This was BUBBLE she was speaking to. The most fragile of them all!

There's no need to be scared by someone who could pop at the lightest insult thrown at her.

Smirking, Pin began to make her way around Bubble- humming softly as she stalked around the poor little thing.

"Hmm... are you sure you'd like to see what you want...?" She asked softly- ignoring the fact that Bubble was inching closer.

"I said. WHERE. IS ICE CUBE."

...I don't know if we should-

No no no! Let us... show her what she wants.

"...Fine! Don't say I didn't warn you.."

"Warn me-?! Wh-"

Bubble stared in utter confusion as Pin began to walk towards a darker part of the garden- but, that confusion quickly turned into horror, as her eyes locked onto-

"....P-..Pin..."

"Hm?" Pin looked up, smirking slightly as she lowered the figure into the center of the garden. "Oh- you probably think those are *my* eyes dear!! Turns out, it's just-"

"..Ice Cube.."

..With horror clenching her heart.. Bubble's face turned pale as she stared at the small block of ice..

...Well... what used to be a block of ice.

Oh, that was Ice Cube Alright-

...but her body..it was..
...she had been carved.. as-

"Cute, isn't it? She's me!" Pin giggled, happily resting her arm against Ice Cube. "It took me so long to do this- but, if I'm going to be honest? It was more of a stress-reliever if anything.

"But, it was just the touch I needed for my garden! More of a-personal touch, you get me?"

"Personal- I-..I.." Whatever words that could have escaped Bubble's mouth, have quickly vanished at that moment. The shock of seeing her only friend.. like this..?

..Horrifying.

But that word wasn't enough for Ice Cube- the never ending pain in her eyes screamed volumes towards Bubble. It was like she was telling her to kill her herself- just to put her out of her misery.

You'd think being carved into something so minuscule wouldn't do much damage- but towards her, it was similar to being flayed completely..

And having her muscles and organs squeezed and shaped by hand.

"..Speechless, huh? I know, dear- it's breathtaking. But, it's for my garden- and anything that goes in my garden, has to be in its best shape ever." Pin stopped, slowly beginning to approach her. "Of course- it's the same excuse, over and over. 'It's for my garden! This will help my garden flourish! Oh, those hands? It'll fertilize my plants completely!!' But, you know me dear- always trying to keep everything in check!"

Distraught, Bubble could only shake her head, clenching her fist while she watched Pin circle around her- similar to a predator stalking its prey. "...I-..I don't know.. do I even know you anymore..?"

"...No, dear... you NEVER DID!"

Hearing Pin scream, Bubble stumbled away- noticing that the object was scampering around her. She tried to jump back- trying to find a way to escapes Pin's method of capturing her..

That is.. until she felt something hard and cold slicing into her arm.

Slicing..?

The pain was barely there- with Bubble's eyes shakily lowering down to her side, she saw a fresh, gaping cut on her upper arm.

The numbness that Bubble once felt was slowly beginning to dissipate, as the stinging hopelessness of despair was beginning to scrape its way underneath the flesh of her open would. Her head whirled around, only welcoming another slice being swiped down her other arm.

"Oop- Too slow, Bubb!!" Pin cackled, watching as Bubble was attempting to hold in her screams of pain. "I mean- come on! You might as well scream- there's no one LEFT!"

With each passing second, Pin began to inch closer towards her-

swiping her trowel against her precious skin, and admiring the crimson droplets that oozed down her wounds. Each cut, began to get more than a squeak out of Bubble- as they slowly morphed into grunts..

And shrieks...

And finally... *screams* of pain.

"COME ON, BUBB!!"

Slice.

"YOU WANTED YOUR VENGEANCE, RIGHT?!"

Swipe.

"THEN COME AND G E T I T!!"

Swipe.

Slash.

Stab.

Cut.

Cut.

Cut.

Cut.

CUT...

Wrist..

My.. wrist...

No... no...

There was nothing that could ever bring Pin joy, as much as the sight of Bubble's arms being covered with deep gashes- blood gushing out of them like an endless stream. She caught a glimpse of her left arm- smirking with pride as she noticed a deep gash right on her wrist. It was deep enough to show the damn bone!

With the laugher bubbling up inside of her, she twirled the bloodied trowel in her hands- giving it a teasing kiss.

"Wow... I'd say that I did a damn good job out there, don'tcha think?" Pin chuckled, watching as Bubble was struggling to keep her balance- with the endless amount of blood that was running out of her, the world was beginning to spin..

Leaving her behind.

"Ohhh... You poor, poor thing.." Pin cooed, slowly making her way towards the figure. "The weakest one of the group.. being nothing but a massive fuck-up once more! It's hilarious dear...

"You came all this way... to try and save THIS armless little freak- only to realize that her time on this planet, is OVER. You had to WATCH, as all of your friends and teammates dropped like FLIES!! And now, when there's nobody left to watch, you come and try to STOP ME...? How STUPID could you possibly be?!

"Everyone is watching you right now, and they feel UTTERLY embarrassed. After all- THIS was the best they could get for revenge?! You're an EMBARRASSMENT, Bubble. A FAILURE. YOU wouldn't be able to fathom the idea of keeping something you love.. alive.."

"...Actually, I do." Bubble snapped, shakily stepping back. "I.. at least.. was able to keep the ones I loved alive... and I-..I didn't.. kill them *myself*."

"Oh please, Bubble. That doesn't *bother* me anymore- and if you're stupid little self is trying to use that airhead of yours to break me- well.. it isn't gonna work. Not this time.. and not ever."

"Oh.. you think.. I'm going to use words to break you..?"

..Pin's heart quivered as she heard Bubble's tone. With her smile beginning to drop, bit by bit- Bubble was beginning to inch closer towards her.. blood pouring down her trembling arms.

"Ohhh.." Pin then nodded, as if she were to understand Bubble's.. tactics. "..Oh, Bubble... if you're seriously trying to *threaten* me here- I say just give it up. Threats during times like these- can only bring hope to the one who's trying to *win*, here."

"..Well luckily for you.. I've already won."

Bubble's hand then slammed onto Pin's neck- as she forcefully slammed the thumbtack into the soil. This caught Pin off guard; being taken aback by the sheer strength coming from her, she began to try and get her off of her.

Wheezing out, Pin shakily lifted the trowel in her hand to pop the bitch out- but Bubble didn't miss at all, slamming her knee onto the elbow that carried the damned thing, and tightening her grip on Pin's throat.

She hated violence. She would cry whenever she stepped on an ant.

She was the easiest to kill- Pin saved her as the final object so she could simply pop her and call it a day.

But with this...? Watching as this two-faced monster thrashing and squirming under her hold..?

Oh, the idea of taking her time with Pin sounded heavenly. She didn't even notice that a menacing smirk was slowly across her tired face, as she watched Pin's infuriated expression melt into a petrified look.

"Aww... would you look at this...!" Bubble whispered, her dilated pupils shooting straight into Pin's eyes. "And I was told, that you were nothing but *dangerous.."*

Pin's chest began to feel like it was bursting into flames. Tears pricked at her eyes as she continued to kick and thrash around, frantically doing anything in her power to get her off of her.

The more she tried to reach for her trowel, the more pressure Bubble would place on her neck- and this caused her limbs to twitch, as she was beginning to hear a deafening ring in the back of her mind. With the burning sensation only growing stronger, Pin was beginning to feel her trachea crumbling within her grip- and the world around her, began to grow cold.

WHAT AM I SUPPOSED TO DO?!

Get her OFF OF YOU.

THE TROWEL- I CAN'T MOVE MY HAND-

COME ON!! GODDAMMIT DO SOMETHING YOU STUPID LITTLE-

I CAN'T- MOVE- MY-

.....you're nothing without me.

That power you felt... the love you received.. the comfort I gave you to help you out of the most dire of situations...

No one is going to treat you like I did.

No one.

You're mine... you always were... but it seems that she's trying to take you out of my grip.

....Who're you gonna choose... Dear....?

"I-...I SAID... GET.... O F F!!!"

With all of her might, Pin slapped her hand onto Bubble's arm- and with brute force, she stabbed her fingers into Bubble's stump, forcefully gripping the bone of her wrist..

And yanking it out.

A deafening crack echoed through out the garden.

But strangely... not a scream... not a shout...

Pure silence.

A hushed wind danced through the garden, causing the plants to sway and wiggle with endless joy. It nearly sounded similar to hushed whispers- carrying the endless secrets that Mother Earth decided to pass along. The colors bursted with an endless sense of comfort and joy, as the sun was already high in the sky..

Noon.

Pin blinked.. rubbing her eyes.. as she slowly began to feel herself.

Beating heart..

A cold body...

Bloodied hands...

She....

"I-..I'm alive.." She murmured.. smiling as the realization quickly settled in. "I'm ALIVE!!"

Cackling, she hugged herself- twirling in delight before looking towards the two bodies in front of her. Of course, Ice Cube was sitting in the center of it all..

But beside her.. laid Bubble.. a pool of blood quickly growing underneath her.. as her wrist-bone protruded out of her. Bits of her flesh were scattered below it, with some dangling off of the damn thing. Her cuts and gashes revealed her ulna, and it soon began to attract the flies from the place- as they were beginning to circle around the poor thing.

To others.. this could've been saddening.

But with Pin..? She had to laugh.

"HA! What did I FUCKING tell you, Bubble?! You WASTED YOUR TIME. I WON." Pin yelled.

Yet.. Bubble didn't respond. A soft wheeze came from her bloodied mouth, as her eyes were fixated onto the clouds above. This made Pin raise her eyebrow- wondering why she was ignoring her.

"HEY! I'm TALKING TO YOU, BITCH! Why don't you LOOK AT ME?!"

Silence..

"..Fine." Pin huffed. "Be that way! After all- this is THE END. I WON, and YOU LOST."

She won...

The mere thought of it made Pin smile, as she turned around, beginning to make her way towards the shed. "After all, I was the one who-"

Pin then froze... a Sharp chill running down her spine...

As Pin locked eyes.. with her own dead body.

Oh my god, is this the end? :]

Jk hi- how are y'all doing? Are y'all ok?? I hope so...

God, this took me forever to write- with the end of college approaching, I've been getting projects and exams like CRAZY. But it's been really fun getting back into this fic.

Im planning on completing it around the same time BFB 30 is out- the end of a series with the end of a fic!

But I won't say my goodbyes just yet. We're close! But I'll save that for the end.

Anyways, I hope you enjoy! Stay safe!!

-Ice

Going Up?

"...Wait- no, no no- this has to be some kind of joke-" Pin stuttered, approaching her corpse as she was beginning to try and poke at it. "I-I'm just knocked out-! Yeah!! Th-This is all just a dream, and I'm probably asleep- I just have to.."

As much as she tried to convince herself that this was nothing more than a strange dream, she knelt down, trying to feel her body and check for any signs of life. But instead, her hand fazed right through her chest- causing pin to jump, and quickly pull her hand away from it.

She was dead.

After all this time, she was dead.

Pin could feel her heart beginning to pound with fear as the gravity of the situation began to sink in, but was that truly her heart? Or was it nothing more than a simple feeling- a lingering memory of what she would usually feel when she was alive..?

Was it another nightmare? Or a hallucination, of sorts...?

No no- cut it out. Focus.

Try grabbing the trowel- this just has to be another sick joke.

Holding her breath, Pin hesitantly reached towards the hand that was clenching the bloodied trowel. She wasn't about to give up. She couldn't- she made it this far, she went out of her own way to kill everyone she ever knew and love, and she wasn't about to kick the bucket in this way.

But, her fear was soon confirmed; just as she was about to grab the thing, the bloodied hand fell limp, and the bloodied trowel slipped

free from her loosening hold.

"..No..." Pin's voice was reduced to a whisper, as she slowly stepped away from her body. It felt as if she was shrinking- staring hopelessly as her body was beginning to fall apart, and let go. Blood was slowly oozing down her open mouth, with her eyes gazing at the sky- bloodshot, and lifeless.

This can't be- this SHOULDN'T BE HOW THIS ENDS.

She killed EVERYONE- she killed EVERYONE she knew just so she could enjoy the garden that she has strived for, since day one. And now, here she was- her spirit standing in the middle of her own creation, not being able to take her gaze away from her own dead body.

Though, as she was beginning to step away, she barely noticed that she had stepped right through Bubble's body.

But even as the white noise around her died down, the sound of Bubble's faint wheezing could still be heard.

Pin looked down. She stared at Bubble's chest- watching as it slowly rose, and fell with every labored breath she took. Ice Cube was in the same position as she was, but the poor thing was fighting to stay awake; her eyelids becoming heavier and heavier during each second that passed by.

But with Bubble...

Each labored breath didn't faze her. The stinging wounds from her arms no longer brought the endless waves of pain that would drown her in her own sorrows.

Instead, she had tears in her eyes- some beginning to slip down her blood-stained cheeks, and cleaning them from the reminder of what she had to endure.

And even as the salty tears made their way down, a small smile was radiating on her tired face. Her eyes were locked onto Pin's body- staring at it in complete awe..

It practically made the poor girl let out a soft laugh.

"I-..Icy..." She murmured out, slowly turning her head towards the carved figure that stood beside her. "..W-..We.. I... did it.."

Ice Cube's expression had been filled with nothing but pain. But as she heard Bubble, the corners of her mouth slowly lifted- with tears of relief washing away the pain that she had to endure.

And when Bubble could see the corners of her mouth lifting up, laughter began to bubble up her throat- trembling as she was beginning to push herself closer towards her friend.

After everything.

Firey's murder.

Woody's murder.

Rocky's murder.

Having to stand by and watch as everyone they knew were killed by someone they *thought* they could trust- with the haunting knowledge that they were next, was utterly painful. It hadn't been too long until they put all the pieces together- saving the most weakest for the last.

But she proved her wrong. She proved all of them wrong.

Bubble's quiet, hoarse laughter was the only thing that swayed with the breeze; filling the hushed garden with a sense of relief of hope and peace, as the woman who created this mess, was lying dead, right in the center of it. The sun was shining warmly down on the two- blooming across their skins, seemingly as if the sun itself was taking the two into its hold.

With this sense of unfamiliar sense of peace slowly melting into her, Bubble curled up. Her eyes glanced up towards the sky as her eyes poured endless tears, and her mouth was quivering. With the stress that was burdening her endlessly finally beginning to lift off of her chest, this genuine feeling of peace was new- much like a hard pill to swallow. The joy, the pain, and the sadness was all that was left in her- and with no more strength to move, all she could do was let the tears flow.

"Sh-She's..dead.." She sniffled, letting her eyes close as she took in a breath of fresh air. "Sh-..She's.. finally dead.."

But... even in her moments of victory and relief..

There was no one around to celebrate with the two.

With a pained gargle, Ice Cube's leg twitched- slowly moving towards Bubble's body. She nudged her, doing anything she could to try and gain Bubble's attention- all the while, fighting the urge to let her eyes come to a close.

The look in her eyes, was enough to let Bubble know that Ice Cube was beginning to slip away. And from what Ice Cube could see..

Bubble was ready to go, too.

She was just... fighting it .

Her heart throbbed with pain at the sight of her struggle, as the tears continued to make their way down. Ice Cube continued to nudge her, but- Bubble refused.

Why was she trying to refuse it..?

By this point, the damage was done. Death was inevitable- carrying them both in its palm, and waiting for the perfect moment to strike. And when that time did come, there was no going back- as much as you'd wish to go back, and try to enjoy the moments while you could...

It would be over.

And if Bubble was left... no one would be there to help her.

Or at least.. comfort her.

But what about Fanny..?

Bracelety..?

The thought of everyone who was trapped in the TLC... anxiously waiting.. for their return..

Waiting for the two of them, to come back.. and set them free- just so they could have someone to lean on..

Isn't that what they both wanted..? Something as simple as having someone to be there... at least, for her.

She was scared.

..But there's no escaping it.

After all.. they had each other.

Through out this nightmare- they had each other.

And they'll step into the darkness together.

With no one, holding them back.

"P-..Please.." Using the remainder of her strength, Ice Cube sputtered out- moving her leg towards Bubble's arm. "I-...I can't.."

"I-..It's okay.." Bubble whispered, gently placing her hand on Ice Cube's leg. "I-..It's okay..now.."

"N-No... Bubb.. Please.."

"Ic y.. just.. sleep.."

"Gh k.." Whining.. Ice Cube felt her eyes fill with tears at the gentle touch of Bubble's hand.

She had forgotten what it was like- to be cared for this way.

Living under the endless fear that you'd never wake up was something that washed away her ability to feel comfort- even when she slept in Book's arms..

Book...

"B-..Bo ok..?" Ice Cube stuttered out. "B..B..B o ok.."

"..She's waiting for you.. she's here.."

"..Plea se.. I-..I'm.. scared..."

Hearing those words, Bubble could feel a tinge of peace in her heart. You'd expect there to be a tinge of sadness- even a pinch of fear...

But; after everything.. it was time for her to rest, too.

"D-..Don't be.. scared.." Bubble whispered.. gently taking a hold of Ice Cube's leg. "...Let's.. go.. together.."

"J-..Just.. us..?" Ice Cube murmured, letting her eyes connect with Bubble's.

Holding on with their gaze, was just enough- as Bubble's grip was beginning to loosen.

"Th-..the two of us.. together.."

"B-..Bu*bb*.."

"We won... let's... sleep now.."

A deafening silence soon filled the garden once more, as Pin stared at the two girls in front of her. Yet, she frowned- noticing that as they fell limp, their eyes opened once more, slowly glancing at the world around them.

Pin didn't understand- she didn't know how she was killed- or why she's still here- but her rush of thoughts were quickly silenced, as voices began to fill the world around her.

"BUBBLE?! YOU DID IT!!"

"Ice Cube- Icy, you're back!!"

"We didn't expect something like this for an ending- but holy MOLY, I'm blown AWAY!"

With the cheers and laughter growing louder, Pin began to turn around- trying to look for the source of laughter. But it didn't take her long.

As she glanced upwards, she could see a few clouds breaking open- the embrace of the light wrapping around her skin. Well- it took her a moment to notice anything; squinting so her vision could adjust to what she was seeing in front of her.

But she didn't expect this.

She didn't even bother to notice the two souls that were standing beside her- taking small steps away from their own bodies.

They were nothing but shocked- stunned, at best. Obviously, the two understood that it was their time to go; what was the point of clinging onto your own hope while your blood was looking all around you?

A harsh reality, really. But there wasn't anything left to do in this world, now that everyone was resting in their own little bits and pieces. Unfortunately, in the same place.

It was nothing different from a trip down memory lane. Bubble let her eyes roam around the garden- taking note of the hands and pieces that stuck out from the earth, and letting her thoughts drift over the last memories she had with the others.

Flower's body, of course, stuck out like a sore thumb. The last time Bubble saw the poor thing was when she was dying in Ruby's arms.

But when she woke up, how did she even react to her dead body that was in the ever loving arms of her dearly beloved? Was she angry?

Confused?

"Icy.." Bubble spoke out, slowly looking back down towards her. She no longer saw her in that damned carving of Pin's image- but instead, she was healed up, and back to her normal self- well, besides the faint scars on her body and legs. The small figure heard Bubble's voice, yet she continued to stare at the scene in shock.

"Bubble..?

"Hey.."

"..Why are we here..?"

"..I don't know.. I know, we're..."

There was a moment of hesitation between the two, but that didn't seem to stop the voices from calling out their names. A few figures could be seen reaching out for them happily- trying to do anything they could to get their attention.

And it worked.

"Oh.. are we..?" Ice Cube whispered, slowly stepping beside Bubble. The taller girl placed an arm around her, staring up at the light in awe.

"Yeah.. but look... everyone's there.." She whispered, holding the small cube of ice close. "I think they're waiting for us... I mean- we can hear them..."

"I know.."

"Well..? What do you say..?"

"...I'm scared..."

"There's no need to be.. come on.."

Wait... where are they going..?

Why aren't they taking *me..?*

I'm their friend... I didn't mean this- I didn't mean any of this..-

Did you..?

No- please, please please- let me go-

Pin's chest stung with dread, as she watched the two girls slowly ascend towards the light. The cheers and cries of a happy reunion poured out from the light, as the figures could be seen approaching the two- clapping, hugging, and even a few sniffles that escaped the jubilant sea of chaos.

But not even this was enough to soothe the one who was left below. She jumped, trying to claw her way towards the light- and reach towards that sense of familiarity she once longed for.

Come on- come on, please!

I don't know what's left for me- I'm dead-! There's no one around-

why are they going up? Where are they going?! Can't they just-

"Pin...?"

As Pin heard the voice, she could feel her heart drop into her shoes. She didn't know where it came from- but there it was, as clear as day, calling to her to try and gain her attention.

"...Coiny..?"

"Pin.."

Oh.

Oh no.

Tortured souls. Tortured souls who are pissed off and carrying some form of pitchforks. Tortured souls who could be using their hands to-

No. No no. That can't be- they're already dead. What's the point of-

"Cmon Captain.. look at me.."

There was nothing she could do.

Pin took a deep breath, and she slowly glanced back up towards the clouds- hugging herself tightly as the panic was settling in once more.

But as she locked her gaze with the lover that she had killed, everything came to a stop.

Coiny's warm smile was beaming off of his face. He looked down at her, giving her a gentle wave before he let himself become lost in her hypnotizing gaze. With his eyes filled with relief and comfort, he stared down at the woman he knew and loved- tears slowly beginning to fill them.

This was it.

Was it..?

He's taking you in..

But why..? Why is he..

"Cmon Pin.. we don't have all of the time in the world here." A voice chuckled.

Fries...

"We've got some catching up to do! We're all here, and now we need you!"

Gelatin..

"Come on, don't be scared! It's over now, and we'll be here for you!"

..Book..

"I know things weren't too hot back there, but we'll listen, and we'll stay by your side no matter what!"

Match..

With the comforting words giving Pin the closure that she deserved, she could feel her fears slowly melting away- seemingly lifting her towards the light.

She had gone through this battle for so long, and she had fought it all

by herself. She needed rest...

And when she saw Coiny warmly opening his arms and reaching out for her, she knew she needed them.

She needed him.

"Coiny.."

"Pin.."

"I.."

"I love you Pin.. please.. come with us... and rest.."

"I... I'm coming, Coin-"

A hand then grabbed onto Pin's ankle- digging its claws into it

furiously, causing her to gasp out in pain. Confused, Pin quickly looked down..

Only to be greeted by.. herself... a demonic grin stretched on her broken expression.

"Going *u p. . ?"*

"No- No, I-I THOUGHT I-"

"Oh, *P i n. . ."*

Holding onto Pin's ankle tightly, The Pin's figure then began to morph, with the sickening sounds and crunches making Pin flinch. She was terrified- convinced that the horrid voice had finally been put to rest.

But as her body regained it original shape and form, with steam and blood rising from it...

Pin cried out in fear.

"So*rry P i n..."*

Evil Leafy twitched.. beginning to cackle, as the earth underneath her talons began to split open.

"But we' r e going d o w n...."

"NO!" Pin screamed out, soon turning back towards the others. "GUYS- GUYS, HELP ME-!"

But she was cut off... as the laughter had returned...

All of them had smirks on their faces- watching the scene in, what she could assume, pure ecstasy. She whimpered, frantically scrambling to grasp onto Coiny's hold..

But as her fingers brushed his, he slyly pulled his hand away..

Giving her a simple wave.

"Sweet dreams, Pin..."

"H*a v e fun in H e l l...*"

And as the light began to dim, the last thing anyone could recall, was the damning sounds of Pin's screams, as she was dragged into the boiling pits of hell..

As her garden was left behind.. locked with the haunted memories of it all.

The End

Late into the afternoon, the leaves of the city fluttered through the air.

Yoyle City. An abandoned place no longer lingering with a sense of mystery and nostalgia- but instead, tainted with the blood and the scars of many. With the objects that once called this place home now lost forever, it was soon returned into a lost city once more. No one wandered freely- the wind would inhabit the dead streets. The soft chatter amongst them no longer there, the song of the waves of the Goiky Canal were there to fill up the silence.

And with the Yoyle Needy standing high in the air, a metal cage was swaying side to side ever so gently- with no one inside of it.

Typical...

Or was it..?

"Ok- you guys are going to look up north, you guys are gonna go to the canal, and we'll be looking for that Science Museum. Got it?" A wooden block crossed his arms, looking around the group of objects around him.

"GOT IT!" Yelled a blue bracelet, already beginning to observe her surroundings worriedly.

"Keep in mind- they were repairing it and putting it back together. So if you find anything.. it's best to clean it up."

"Ugh- I hate instructions! Let's just GO!" A blue electrical fan snapped, stomping her feet impatiently.

"Ok, ok! You two can go search for Bubble and Ice Cube- good luck on finding them!"

It was once again, unusual- with The footsteps soon pouring back into the city. Doors began to swing open, evidence was beginning to gather- and recovering was on its way.

It had been months.
But they had broken out of it.

The cursed prison that held them behind a metal wall for ages.

It required an incredible amount of strength, ideas and patience- and once the minuscule hole had finally been broken into an escape way, they all felt nothing but joy as sunlight poured into the box for the first time in years.

And as soon as they were out- they quickly got down to business.

Uncover the truth of what really happened here- and, of course, to bring everyone back to life.

This was not their routine- but it was set to be, for the time coming. There was a plethora of new objects in the town- A lollipop and a

taco searched the abandoned houses- coming across a scrapbook, and a empty bottle of yoylelenol that seemed to have collected dust.

A small bundle of grass could be seen skittering around a basketball- climbing onto the top of her head and sitting happily, as she was walking down the street with the wooden block by her side.

A bell swung around the city- filling the atmosphere with a gentle ding every so often. A cloud worked alongside her- taking their eyes to the sky, in search of anything peculiar.

Even a group of boys- consisting of a Pen, a Eraser, and a Snowball- we're roaming around, looking for the place where they would begin their work.

Besides- the quicker they started; the sooner they would be able to repair this broken city, and call it their new home.

"Oh- I think I see Blocky!" Said the Pen, waving towards the figure in the distance. "Hey, Blocky! What are you doing??"

The Block looked up. "Oh- guys!! I think Basketball found GB's little lab- and that science museum! We got a jackpot!"

"Dude, that's great! Now we can fix that recovery center, and bring everyone back to life! Just think- they'll be fucking cool!"

"..Pen, they're going to be traumatized."

"...Good point."

The Block rolled his eyes, soon turning back towards the entrance. "Hey, Basketball! Find anything?"

.....

"Basketball?"

"Blocky- you need to come down here, NOW!"

"What- what is it?!"

The group scrambled down into the abandoned laboratory- only to be met with the Basketball standing beside a recovery center..

..That was nearly complete.

"I thought it would be in a worse state than this- but this is perfect!" The Basketball smiled.

"Huh.. so it looks like we won't take long with repairing this thing, huh? That's a relief.." The Block smiled, patting the machine gently.

"And to that I say, good- after all.. who knows what everyone could find out there." The Pen spoke out, rubbing his head.

And as if it were on cue..

"GUYS..? YOU MIGHT WANT TO COME AND SEE THIS..." A voice shouted from outside- seemingly belonging to a Donut. "CLOUDY AND BELL FOUND SOMETHING- AND SO DID FANNY..!"

"It's a garden.." A Barfbag murmured, walking next to the pastry. Her eyes seemed to be filled with terror, as she slowly rested her head against his shoulder. "But.."

"Shoot- WE'RE ON OUR WAY!" The Eraser shouted, turning towards the two. "Are you both sure you don't need any help?"

"We got this, Eraser! The only help we're gonna need is to keep everyone out of here for a bit.. especially Fanny and Bracelety."

"Suit yourself- and what about the little grass dude? Is he gonna be ok?"

The Basketball then looked up with a smile. "He'll be just fine! Right Grassy?"

As the ball of grass gave them a nod, the Pen and the Eraser said his farewells- yet, they failed to notice that the grass had a hold of a tattered folder- his eyes staring at the papers inside...containing..

"Grassy? Could you pass me the blowtorch, please?" The Basketball looked up, smiling as she saw the figure 'reading' through the pile of documents on a desk. He looked up, the curiosity snapping away as he shut the documents.

"Sure! Grassy's always helpful!"

"That's right little man!" The Block smiled. "Now let's get this recovery center up and running! We have friends to save!"

Log Entry 2,763:

Date: 10-13-XXXX

Evacuation orders have been set into place for everyone in the city. Citizens have been told to gather their things and make their way out- preparing to return within a few months, or more.
But according to my findings, this will not be the case.

The populated Yoyle City must be destroyed. The chemical leak had spread like wildfire after the experiment and creation of The Scarlet. It is believed that they have perished within the explosion- but the fumes that have spread have already caused damage towards innocent civilians. From my research, some seem to be suffering from sleep paralysis as they sleep- some suffer with hallucinations through out the day, and some have even gone on to say that there were voices whispering inside of their heads. The gas could be implanting some sort of illness into the minds of these objects...

Or it could be something that we don't know about.

That scarlet.

But let me make this clear, for anyone reading these reports.

Yoyle City must be abandoned.

It is not safe here- there's something lurking in these atmosphere and it will only do more harm, and good. If someone succumbs to these symptoms.. who knows what sort of monster would be unleashed within the world.

Go.

Get out of here before it's too late.

-Dr. XXXXXX

The End

[Psst- if you're just finishing, Fear Garden 2 is out! Feel free to read it! -ice]

Wowwie-

Ok... yeah I know I said yesterday but BFB 30.... I was sobbing.
I also got the covid vaccine and the Chills are blegfhgshxhhd

But! Hello everyone! I can't believe I actually FINISHED this fic-
I remember I was going to abandon it completely in the beginning but BOOM. I call this a power move 😎

ANYWAYS!! I just wanted to thank you all for reading! The amount of support I've gotten from this fic is absolutely incredible- and the fact that you've all enjoyed this has really carried me through out the years- well, 2 1/2 years now.

I'm so happy i was able to create something that you all enjoyed. But remember that this isn't the end- obviously I have other fics in store, and one day in the future I'll be creating something bigger. It'll be fun 🏃♂

But to all of you? Thank you- even if you've stuck with me since day one, or recently got into the fic- I just wanted to thank you all for the love and support. I hope you all have a rad day; and I'll talk to you guys in the next fic.

Whether it be Supernova, or the Candy Fic... I got some au's in mind. :]

Anyways, have a good day! Thank you all for reading!

-Ice